



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Stanford University Libraries

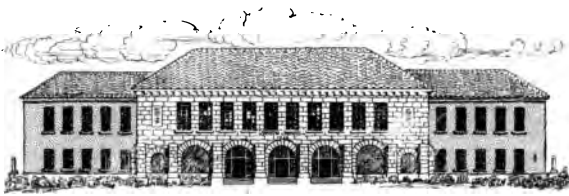


3 6105 04926 4281

GRAMMAR

GARNER

0138



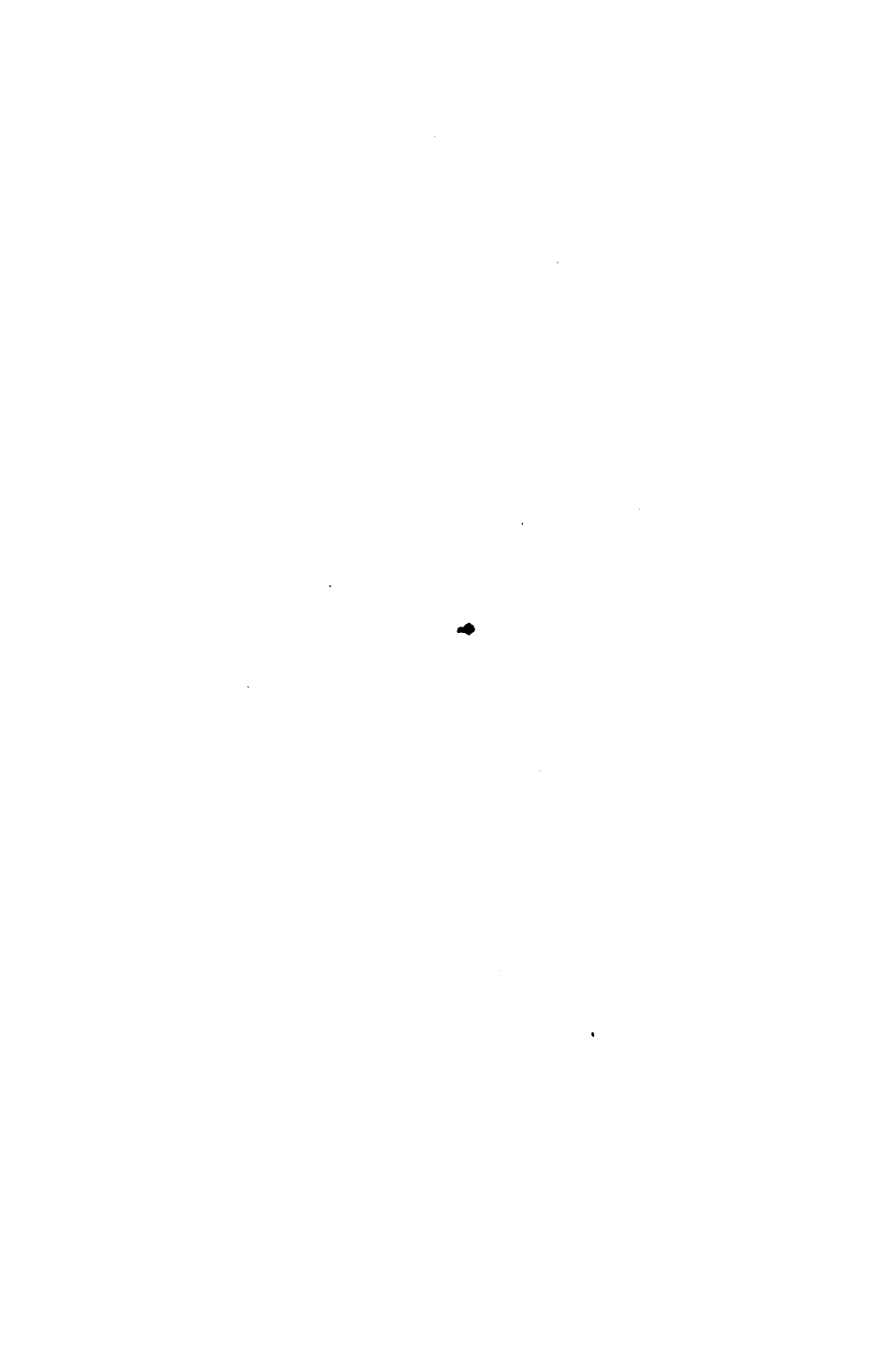
SCHOOL OF EDUCATION
LIBRARY

TEXTBOOK COLLECTION
GIFT OF
THE PUBLISHERS



STANFORD UNIVERSITY
LIBRARIES





A
SPANISH GRAMMAR

*FOR THE USE OF COLLEGES
AND SCHOOLS*

BY

SAMUEL GARNER, PH.D.
RECENTLY PROFESSOR OF MODERN LANGUAGES,
UNITED STATES NAVAL ACADEMY

"El que quiere hablar bien, debe principiar por hablar mal."

NEW YORK ·· CINCINNATI ·· CHICAGO
AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

COPYRIGHT, 1901, BY
SAMUEL GARNER.

ENTERED AT STATIONERS' HALL, LONDON

SPAN. GRAM.

W. P. 2

C



PREFACE

THERE are already extant several excellent grammars for the study of Spanish, but most of them present the subject with such a mass of details that it was thought there was room for a book which should give, in clear and concise outlines, the essential features of the language. Considering the small amount of time devoted to the modern languages in our educational institutions, it is not possible for the student to do more than master the main facts of any language. The minuter details can be acquired only after long years of patient study and observation, and to present them in a book intended for beginners must prove a discouraging and confusing obstacle rather than an aid.

Much objection has been latterly brought against treating the pronunciation of foreign languages from the standpoint of English analogies, but the objectors so far have produced no system sufficiently simple and practical to take the place of such treatment. Of course, nothing will prove a substitute for the living teacher; but even with such aid, the learner must be taught how to make the sounds which differ from those of his native language, and this, in most cases, can only be done by approximation to and comparison with sounds already known. The present writer has found no sufficient reason for attempting any other mode of treatment, and he believes that, by following the directions given, a fairly good Spanish pronunciation will be acquired.

The following method of using this book is suggested :

After a few days spent on the pronunciation, the Spanish exercises being used for practice in reading, the student may be set to work on the lessons assigned at the head of the exercises, page 248. Where it is desired to get to reading connected texts as soon as possible, the translation of the English exercises may be omitted until the Spanish exercises have been completed. After a careful study of these, a short time may be spent on the remaining tenses of the auxiliary and regular verbs ; then the student may pass on to the Spanish reading matter, page 292, and at the same time begin the writing of the English exercises.

If a conversational exercise is desired, the teacher may address to the student a question on each of the sentences of the Spanish exercises. For instance, on the first sentence he might ask : *¿ En cuánto tiempo gira la tierra alrededor del sol ?* The student would answer : *La tierra gira alrededor del sol en un año.* And so for the rest. When the SPANISH READINGS are begun, the same exercise might be continued.

In the syntax only such a general outline as the student will have time to master has been attempted. Anything more than this would prove an incumbrance and beyond the scope of this grammar. The prepositions *d*, *en*, *para*, and *por*, having such a variety of uses, no better plan of treatment could be devised than to give copious examples. A thorough study of these will prove of more utility than any amount of reasoning about them.

In recent years there has been a disposition in some quarters to condemn exercises based on detached sentences, and a demand for connected thought. The present author has never been in sympathy with this movement, *chiefly because* thought that has to be guided in its expres-

sion by the exigencies of the rules of syntax can not but be stilted, and hence no more interesting than detached sentences, and not nearly so useful for syntactical illustrations. While the exercises of this book are mostly of the latter kind, an effort has been made to render the sentences practical and interesting by confining them to common, every-day subjects. It is hoped they will be found an improvement on the usual grammatical exercises.

It is proper to offer some justification for inserting Spanish composition of my own rather than selections from Spanish authors. My reason for this was twofold. First, it seemed desirable to introduce some easy dialogue; but most Spanish dialogue is too difficult for beginners on account of its idiomatic character. Secondly and chiefly, I wished to give a general review of the grammatical principles previously treated, and nothing could be found in a short space suitable for the purpose.

In the making of a grammar, where he has had so many predecessors, an author can lay but little claim to originality, particularly in the accidence, to which necessarily belong features common to all grammars. The most that he can do is to present in his own way such matter as will best contribute to his aims. The sources, both European and American, from which valuable aid has been received, are so numerous that only a general acknowledgment can here be made. At the same time I would say that I have not adopted anything from another without fully substantiating it by my own researches.

The *ESCENAS SOCIALES* contains one or two passages where I have paraphrased some thoughts not my own. Some of the pleasantries will also be recognized as old friends; but they are classical in a way, and it is hoped they will be revitalized by their new setting and dress.

The selections bearing no signature have in most cases been gathered from newspapers. Experience proves that, in the absence of opportunity for social intercourse with the natives, there is no better way of acquiring a practical knowledge of a language than the constant reading of the daily press; and even with such opportunity, it can not be too highly recommended for its helpfulness.

To Mr. Esteban Banchs, a Spanish gentleman of Baltimore, I am indebted for a revision of the Spanish portions of the manuscript. It is believed that the care with which he did the work will be a sufficient guarantee that he missed nothing of importance that needed correction.

Thanks are likewise due to Messrs. Ceballos & Co. of New York for the business letters and forms.

S. G.

CONTENTS

	PAGES
PREFACE	3-6
CONTENTS	7-8
	SECTIONS
I. The Spanish alphabet and pronunciation	1-5
Accentuation	6-9 <i>b</i>
Punctuation and capitals	10
II. The article and the noun	11-23 <i>f</i>
III. Adjectives	24-37
IV. Numerals	38-43
V. Pronouns — personal	44-77
— demonstrative	78-89
— relative	90-98
— interrogative	99-106
— indefinite	107-134
VI. Verbs — auxiliary	135-140
— regular	141-142
Orthographic changes	143-143 <i>d</i>
Formation of tenses	144-145 <i>d</i>
Passive voice	146-148
Reflexive verbs	149-157
Impersonal verbs	158-160
Irregular verbs	161-216
Defective verbs	217-221
Irregular past participles	222-225
Verbal idioms	226-228
List of irregular verbs	229
VII. Adverbs	230-242

	SECTIONS
VIII. Prepositions	243-266
IX. Conjunctions and interjections	267-274
X. Syntax — the definite article	275-277
The indefinite article	278-278 <i>f</i>
Nouns and pronouns	279-285
The adjective	286-293
The verb — agreement	294-300
Tenses of the indicative	301-310
Imperative mood	311
Tenses of the subjunctive	312-320
The infinitive	321-327
The present participle	328
The gerund	329-329 <i>e</i>
The past participle	330-331 <i>c</i>
XI. Forms of address	332-332 <i>m</i>
Spanish abbreviations	333
Epistolary formalities	334-337
XII. Exercises	338-386
XIII. Spanish Readings	387-401
	PAGES
ENGLISH VOCABULARY	347-369
SPANISH VOCABULARY	370-412
INDEX	413-415

I

THE SPANISH ALPHABET

VOWELS

1. Spanish vowels are uttered as clear simple sounds and not, as in English, with a vanish. It is especially difficult to avoid this in final vowels; hence, the greatest care must be taken to stop the vowel sound without changing, in the slightest degree, the position of the vocal organs. Diphthongs and triphthongs are pronounced in one uninterrupted impulse of the voice, each vowel being distinctly heard.

The vowel bearing the syllabic accent in each word is indicated by heavy type.

a.
Strong { *a* varies between *a* in *ah* and *a* in *am*: padre, acta.
 { *e* varies between *a* in *late* and *e* in *where*: dedo, jefe.
 { *o* varies between *o* in *go* and *o* in *loft*: amó, árbol.

Weak { *i* (*y*) as *i* in *fatigue*: mí, rey.
 { *u* as *u* in *rule*: mulo.

b. DIPHTHONGS (of Strong and Weak Vowels)

<i>ai</i> , <i>ay</i> as in <i>baile</i> , <i>ay</i> .	<i>ia</i> as in <i>diario</i> .
<i>au</i> as in <i>aula</i> .	<i>ua</i> as in <i>cuando</i> , <i>guarda</i> .
<i>ei</i> , <i>ey</i> as in <i>veinte</i> , <i>ley</i> .	<i>ie</i> as in <i>miel</i> .
<i>eu</i> as in <i>deuda</i> .	<i>ue</i> as in <i>luego</i> .
<i>oi</i> , <i>oy</i> as in <i>oigo</i> , <i>hoy</i> .	<i>io</i> as in <i>dios</i> .
<i>ou</i> as in <i>bou</i> .	<i>uo</i> as in <i>cuota</i> .

Note that in diphthongs formed of a strong plus a weak vowel, or of a weak plus a strong, the chief stress is on the strong vowel. Where this is not true, the accent is marked: *traigo*, but *traído*.

Also that strong vowels in contact make separate syllables, but only when one of them bears the stress: *poeta*, but *línea*.

c. DIPHTHONGS (of two Weak Vowels)

iu as in *diurno*

ui, uy as in *ruin, muy*.

Note that in diphthongs of two weak vowels the last is stressed, unless the first bears the written accent: *buitre*, but *fluido*, where the diphthong is dissolved by the accent.

Also that in all unaccented final diphthongs neither vowel has any decided stress: *lirio*, *antiguo*.

d. TRIPHTHONGS (of a Weak plus a Strong plus a Weak Vowel)

The stress is on the strong vowel.

iai as in *estudiáis*.

uai, uay as in *amortiguáis, guay*.

iei as in *pronunciéis*.

uei, uey as in *desagüéis, buey*.

CONSONANTS

2. In Spanish nearly all consonants are pronounced much more indistinctly than in English. So much is this the case that many careless speakers allow them to be assimilated or absorbed by contiguous sounds. They are best studied and classified from their relation to the vocal organs.

a. LABIALS (Lip Sounds)

v as in *vivo*.

p as in *pavo*.

f as in *faena*.

m as in *mamá*.

b as in *bebo*.

w as in *Wéber, Windsor*.

NOTE. — Bring the lips lightly together in the middle, but keep them apart in the corners of the mouth. Then pronounce the corresponding English letters. *V* and *f* are the weakest and are

made by the merest contact of the lips; *b*, *p*, and *m* require a little more pressure. *W* occurs only in foreign proper names. In those coming from German, *w* is sounded as *v*, while in English names it is like *u*: *Wéber* = *Véber*; *Windsor* = *Ufndsor*.

b. DENTO-LINGUALS (Tooth-Tongue Sounds)

- c* before *e* and *i* } as *th* in *thin* { *cebo*, *ciencia*.
z in all positions }
ch as *ch* in *church*: *muchacho*.
d as *d* in *did*, but with the vanish of *th* in *the*: *dedo*.
l as *l* in *let*: *lecho*, *alma*.
ll as *li* in *filial*: *bello*, *llamo*.
n as *n* in *bone*: *uno*, *mente*.
ñ before hard *g* and *c* as *n* in *ring*: *tengo*, *blanco*.
ñ (*n* with the *tilde*) as *ni* in *union*: *niño*.
t as *t* in *ten*: *todo*, *entonces*.

Note that these Spanish sounds are produced by placing the tip of the tongue against the lower edge of the upper front teeth, while the position of the tongue in English is just where the gums join the upper teeth.*

c. ASPIRATES

- g* before *e* and *i* } as *h* in *hat* { *agente*, *gime*.
j in all positions }

NOTE. — Set the vocal organs for *a* in *hat*; then expel the breath lightly as if clearing the throat. It is much more strongly aspirated than our English *h*.

h is silent in all positions: *ahora*, *hablar*.

d. GUTTURALS (Throat Sounds)

- c* { before *a*, *o*, *u*, and }
 { before a consonant } as *c* in *cat* { *cabo*, *codo*, *cuando*, *acción*.
qu before *e*, *i* }
k in all positions }

* Except, however, *n* before hard *g* and *c*, which is a tongue-palate sound.

g { before a, o, u, and }
 { before a consonant } as g in go { gato, gota, guapo, grito.
 gu before e, i } { sigue, gufa.

NOTE. — When the *u* of *gue* and *gui* is pronounced, it receives the diaeresis : antigüedad, lingüística.

e. LIQUIDS (trills)

r is slightly trilled :	pero, leer.
r initial or after l, n, s is	rana, rosa, malrotar,
strongly trilled :	honra, israelita.
rr strongly trilled :	perro, tierra.

NOTE. — The finals *ar, er, ir, or, ur* are pronounced with a short, clear trill : *fiar, comer, vivir, olor, tahur*. Observe also that the Spanish *r* is made with the tongue vibrating against the gums just back of the upper teeth, *never in the throat*.

f. s is always *s* in *base* : *casa, sastre*.

x is a double consonant and is generally equivalent to *ks, k* very slightly pronounced : *examen*.

y is a consonant only when initial or between two vowels and is *y* in *yes* : *yeso, cayó*.

3. Dialectic and other peculiarities. In some parts of Spain and generally in Spanish America certain consonants are interchanged with others and certain others are suppressed. This is not uncommon even with well-educated people.

Vowels coming into contact with each other in the same sentence are merged into a single sound : *¿Qué está haciendo?* *What is he doing?* *De esta manera, in this way;* *¿Cómo está usted?* *How are you?* This is done by all *classes*, and the learner should adopt it at once.

4. As to the consonants :

b interchanges with *v*, and *vice versa*, as *bibo* and *bivo* for *vivo*, *vevo* and *bevo* for *bebo*.

c (before *e* and *i*) is pronounced as *s*: *coser* for *cocer*.

c and **p** before *t* are assimilated: *perpetto* for *perfecto*, *ratto* for *rapto* (both *t*'s being sounded).

d final and between two vowels is absorbed: *verdá* for *verdad*, *naa* for *nada*, *vivío* for *vivido*, *dao* for *dado*.

g is absorbed before *u*: *aua* for *agua*.

n final is pronounced as though followed by *g*: *Don(g)* *Juan(g)*.

ll as *y* (consonant): *cabayo* for *caballo*, and as English *j*: *llorar*.

x loses its *k*-element, becoming *s*: *espresar* for *expresar*.

s is dropped, especially when final and before consonants: *pue* for *pues*. ¿Cómo *etá* *uté*? for ¿Cómo *está* *usted*? *La mima cosas* for *las mismas cosas*.

y is pronounced as English *j*: *yo*, *yese*.

z is substituted for *s*, and *vice versa*: ¿Cómo *eztá* *ozté*? for ¿Cómo *está* *usted*? = *How are you?* *Casar* for *cazar*, *to hunt*.

NOTE.—The above are some of the more common peculiarities, which are frequently heard even on the lips of fairly well-educated people, and the student who expects to talk with native Spaniards should learn them in order to save himself much perplexity.

SYLLABICATION

5. The question of syllabication is very important, as on it depends a good pronunciation. A single consonant and the letters *ch*, *ll*, and *rr* go with the following vowel: *mo-ti-vo*, *mu-cha-cho*, *ba-ta-lla*, *ba-rro*.

a. Two or more consonants between vowels are separable: *al-ma*, *cons-tan-te*; but *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *p*, followed by *l* or *r*, combine with the following vowel: *li-bro*, *pu-drir*, *i-gle-sia*. *T* and *r* combine, but *t* and *l* are separated: *a-troz*, *a-trás*; but *at-leta*, *At-lante*.

b. Compound vowels may not be separated : bue-no, tie-ne ; but ba-ñl.

c. The prefixes *des*, *ab*, *sub* are excepted from the above rules, when they are felt as prefixes : des-acordar, ab-rogar, sub-arriendo ; but su-bir, a-bundar.

ACCENTUATION

6. In words of two or more syllables, one syllable is enunciated with greater emphasis than the others. This is called the tonic or syllabic accent, and the pause on this syllable is longer and more decided than in English. It is hard to acquire, and persistent practice is very necessary.

7. Words ending in *y* or a consonant, except *s* or *n*, have the stress on the ultima or final syllable : animal, sencillez, Echegaray.

8. Words ending in a vowel or in *n* or *s* are accented on the penult or syllable before the last : padre, joven, lunes.

9. All words not falling under these two rules must bear the written accent on the stressed syllable : rincón, jóvenes, alférez, además.

a. Note that when the terminations *ia*, *io*, *ie*, *ua*, *ue*, *uo* form separate syllables, the accent must be marked : astronomía, navío, envíe, continúa, continúe, continúo ; but astucia, serio, serie, antigua, pingüe, exiguo. Also that all interrogative and many other words bear the written accent to distinguish them graphically from others of the same form but different meaning, while some again have it for no particular reason : cómo (*how?*), como (*as*), tú (*thou*), tu (*thy*), and é (*and*), á (*to*).

b. Note further that all syllables preceding and following the tonic syllable are evenly pronounced, there being scarcely any *secondary accent in Spanish* : tipográfico, jurisdicción. From this

must be excepted many compounds whose component parts are felt to be separate words: *jurisconsulto, sobremanera, salvaguardia*. Here belong all adverbs compounded of an adjective and the noun *mente* (manner): *solamente, medianamente*. But even in this case, as in all others, great care must be taken not to slight the unaccented syllables. These must be distinctly and evenly uttered. Above all, don't drawl the final vowels, making them into diphthongs like: *āhū, ey-ū, ē-ū, ō-ō-ū, oo-ū*.

PUNCTUATION AND CAPITALS

10. Spanish punctuation varies but slightly from the English. The only differences that need be noted here are that the points ! and ? are placed respectively at the beginning (inverted ¡ ¿) as well as at the end of exclamatory and interrogative sentences, and that where we use a dash (—) to indicate an interrupted sentence, Spaniards use suspension points (. . .).

a. In the use of initial letters, the chief unlikeness is that the pronoun *I* (*yo*), except when beginning a sentence, the names of months and days, proper adjectives, both as adjectives (*la lengua española, the Spanish language*) and as nouns (*los españoles, the Spaniards*), are written with small initials. Uniformity in this respect is not, however, always observed.

II

THE ARTICLE AND THE NOUN

11. The definite article has three forms in the singular and two in the plural: —

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
<i>Masculine,</i>	el,	los.
<i>Feminine,</i>	la,	las.
<i>Neuter,</i>	lo,	(wanting).

a. When the prepositions *de* and *á* are used before *el*, the two are contracted into one word: *del* (*of the*), *al* (*to the*). This contraction does not, however, take place before a title with the article: *El autor de El Barómetro, the author of* (the play called) *The Barometer*; *Una carta á El Avisador, A letter to The Advertiser* (newspaper).

b. Before feminine singular nouns of two or more syllables beginning with tonic *a* or *ha*, *el* takes the place of *la* for euphony: *el ave, the bird*; *el haba, the bean*. But not in the case of adjectives or proper names: *la alta torre, the high tower*; *la Ángela*, *la Álvarez*.

12. Indefinite article.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
<i>Masculine,</i>	un(o) }	unos }
<i>Feminine,</i>	una }	unas }
	<i>a, an.</i>	<i>some, a few,</i> <i>several.</i>

a. At the present day the usage has become pretty well established to use *un* before the nouns of the above category (**11 b**). Hence: *un águila, an eagle*; *un hacha, an ax*. But before *an*

adjective, neither the masculine nor the feminine is abbreviated : un libro, *a book*; uno bueno, *a good one*; un ave, *a bird*; una buena, *a good one*.

DECLENSION

13. Nouns have no case endings ; they vary only to indicate the plural. Strictly speaking, therefore, they can not be said to be declined ; but it is found convenient to make a declension by means of prepositions.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
<i>Nom.</i>	el hombre, <i>the man</i> .	los hombres, <i>the men</i> .
<i>Gen.</i>	del hombre, <i>of the man</i> , <i>the man's</i> .	de los hombres, <i>of the men</i> , <i>the men's</i> .
<i>Dat.</i>	al hombre, <i>to the man</i> .	á los hombres, <i>to the men</i> .
<i>Acc.</i>	el or al hombre, <i>the man</i> .	los or á los hombres, <i>the men</i> .

a. The declensions with the other articles, definite and indefinite, are made in the same way, save that there are no contractions.

NOTE.—The form of the accusative with *á* is, in general, used when a noun, representing a person or other animal, is the object of a transitive verb. In other cases the preposition is usually omitted : —

El maestro castiga *al* discípulo, *The teacher punishes the pupil*.

El muchacho pega *á* los perros, *The boy beats the dogs*.

Leo el libro, la carta, *I read the book, the letter*.

NUMBER

14. Nouns ending in an unaccented vowel (except *y*), or in *é, ó, ú*, and *papá, mamá, sofá*, take *s* in the plural : —

SINGULAR	PLURAL
la casa, <i>the house</i> .	las casas, <i>the houses</i> .
la mano, <i>the hand</i> .	las manos, <i>the hands</i> .
el pie, <i>the foot</i> .	los pies, <i>the feet</i> .

el corsé, <i>the corset.</i>	los corsés, <i>the corsets.</i>
el rondó, <i>the rondeau.</i>	los rondós, <i>the rondeaux.</i>
la tribu, <i>the tribe.</i>	las tribus, <i>the tribes.</i>
el tisú, <i>the tissue.</i>	los tisús, <i>the tissues.</i>

NOTE. — But some authors add *es* to nouns in *ó* or *ú*: rondoes, tisúes. This is the teaching of the Spanish Academy.

15. Nouns terminating in *y*, in any consonant, or in *t* or *d* (except the three above named) and all the letters of the alphabet, add *es*: —

SINGULAR	PLURAL
el rey, <i>the king.</i>	los reyes, <i>the kings.</i>
el rincón, <i>the corner.</i>	los rincones, <i>the corners.</i>
la flor, <i>the flower.</i>	las flores, <i>the flowers.</i>
el rubí, <i>the ruby.</i>	los rubíes, <i>the rubies.</i>
el bajá, <i>the pacha.</i>	los bajaes, <i>the pachas.</i>
la o, <i>the o.</i>	las oes, <i>the o's.</i>
la be, <i>the b.</i>	las bees, <i>the b's.</i>

a. *Z* final becomes *c* before the plural ending *es*: El pez, *the fish*, los peces, *the fish(es)*; la cruz, *the cross*, las cruces, *the crosses*.

b. The unaccented finals *-is*, *-es*, and proper names in *ez*, *es*, and *és*, and most other proper names, have the same form in the plural: —

la crisis, <i>the crisis.</i>	las crisis, <i>the crises.</i>
la tesis, <i>the thesis.</i>	las tesis, <i>the theses.</i>
el lunes, <i>Monday.</i>	los lunes, <i>Mondays.</i>

And so: Los Sánchez, los González, los Cervantes, los Valdés, los Robespierre, los Danton, los Marat.

NOTE. — Proper names, when used with the force of common nouns, may take the plural: los Castelares, *i.e.* the great orators like *Castelar*.

- c.* Lord and milord lose *d* in the plural : lores, milores.
d. The tonic accent of carácter and régimen is shifted to the following syllable : caracteres, regímenes.
e. When any noun, not accented on the last syllable, receives *es*, the tonic vowel must be marked in the plural. On the other hand, a noun having the written accent on its final vowel rejects the accent in the plural, unless this vowel is weak (*i, u*) :—

el joven, <i>the young man.</i>	los jóvenes, <i>the young men.</i>
la nación, <i>the nation.</i>	las naciones, <i>the nations.</i>
el bajá, <i>the pacha.</i>	los bajaes, <i>the pachas.</i>
el jabalí, <i>the wild boar.</i>	los jabalíes, <i>the wild boars.</i>

16. Compound nouns are pluralized in accordance with the above rules, the last part of the compound generally taking the plural ending :—

la salvaguardia, <i>the safeguard.</i>	las salvaguardias, <i>the safeguards.</i>
el cortaplumas, <i>the penknife.</i>	los cortaplumas, <i>the penknives.</i>
el ferrocarril, <i>the railroad.</i>	los ferrocarriles, <i>the railroads.</i>

17. Finally, certain nouns are used only in the plural :—

los calzoncillos, <i>the drawers.</i>	los víveres, <i>the provisions.</i>
las nupcias, <i>the nuptials.</i>	las enaguas, <i>the upper skirt.</i>

a. Here should be noted also certain masculine nouns which, in addition to their regular plural meaning, frequently indicate both sexes of pairs naturally associated ; as, los padres, *the fathers, or the father and mother, the parents.* And so :—

los reyes, <i>the king and queen.</i>	amos, <i>master and mistress.</i>
los tíos, <i>the uncle and aunt.</i>	esposos, <i>husband and wife.</i>
los parientes, <i>the kinsmen (both sexes).</i>	duques, <i>duke and duchess.</i>
los hermanos, <i>the brothers and sisters.</i>	hijos, <i>sons and daughters.</i>
	abuelos, <i>grand parents, ancestors.</i>

GENDER

18. Natural gender. — Most nouns indicating living beings are masculine or feminine according to sex: —

el hombre, <i>the man.</i>	la mujer, <i>the woman.</i>
el padre, <i>the father.</i>	la madre, <i>the mother.</i>
el hijo, <i>the son.</i>	la hija, <i>the daughter.</i>
el tío, <i>the uncle.</i>	la tía, <i>the aunt.</i>
el caballo, <i>the horse.</i>	la yegua, <i>the mare.</i>
el toro, <i>the bull.</i>	la vaca, <i>the cow.</i>
el gallo, <i>the cock.</i>	la gallina, <i>the hen.</i>

NOTE. — It is well to learn all nouns of this kind in pairs, as they are more easily remembered thus.

19. Grammatical gender. — All nouns having no natural gender are, by a kind of grammatical fiction, treated as either masculine or feminine. The gender of such nouns can only be learned by observation. The best aid to this is to attach the proper article to each noun when learned. The student should fix in his mind the general rule that *o* is a masculine and *a* a feminine termination. Hence: —

a. Excepting *la mano*, *hand*, *la nao*, *ship*, *la seo*, *cathedral church*, nouns in *o* final are masculine: —

el vino, <i>wine.</i>	siglo, <i>century.</i>	deseo, <i>desire.</i>
el vaso, <i>glass (vessel).</i>	año, <i>year.</i>	fuego, <i>fire.</i>
el vicio, <i>vice.</i>	tiempo, <i>time.</i>	patio, <i>yard, court.</i>
el vidrio, <i>glass.</i>	verano, <i>summer.</i>	espacio, <i>space.</i>
el estado, <i>state.</i>	viento, <i>wind.</i>	encanto, <i>charm.</i>

b. A large majority of nouns ending in *a* are feminine. Observe particularly the terminal part, in heavy type, as being characteristically feminine: —

la pereza, <i>laziness.</i>	afrenta, <i>affront.</i>	gracia, <i>grace.</i>
la fortuna, <i>fortune.</i>	comida, <i>dinner.</i>	doctrina, <i>doctrine.</i>

la abeja, <i>bee</i> .	llanura, <i>evenness</i> .	disputa, <i>dispute</i> .
la lechuga, <i>lettuce</i> .	línea, <i>line</i> .	empresa, <i>undertaking</i> .
la arrogancia, <i>arrogance</i> .	alegría, <i>joy</i> .	entrada, <i>entrance</i> .
la diferencia, <i>difference</i> .	derrota, <i>course</i> .	escalera, <i>stairs</i> .
la alianza, <i>alliance</i> .	descarga, <i>discharge</i> .	escena, <i>scene</i> .
la prensa, <i>press</i> .	fábula, <i>fable</i> .	estufa, <i>stove</i> .
la envidia, <i>envy</i> .	fatiga, <i>fatigue</i> .	excusa, <i>excuse</i> .
la divisa, <i>device</i> .	entrega, <i>delivery</i> .	flotilla, <i>flotilla</i> .

NOTE.—The exceptions under this heading are chiefly words having the final syllable *ma* :—

el tema, <i>theme</i> .	problema, <i>problem</i> .	idioma, <i>language</i> .
el drama, <i>drama</i> .	sistema, <i>system</i> .	dilema, <i>dilemma</i> .
el poema, <i>poem</i> .	clima, <i>climate</i> .	enigma, <i>enigma</i> .

Exceptions : la diadema, *diadem* ; la rima, *rime*.

c. Many nouns ending in consonants are masculine ; but the exceptions are too numerous to make a rule of any practical value. All phrases and parts of speech used as nouns, and generally the names of ships, are **masculine** : el sí, *the consent (yes)* ; el por qué, *the why* ; los vivos, *the hurrahs* ; el comer, *the eating* ; El Reina Regente, El Vizcaya, El Oquendo, El Plutón.

d. **Feminine** are the letters of the alphabet and all nouns ending in *ión*, *tad*, *dad*, *tud*, *umbre*, *ie*, and abstract nouns in *ez* :—

la pasión, <i>passion</i> .	mitad, <i>half</i> .	virtud, <i>virtue</i> .
la nación, <i>nation</i> .	libertad, <i>liberty</i> .	esclavitud, <i>slavery</i> .
la creación, <i>creation</i> .	edad, <i>age</i> .	serie, <i>series</i> .
la estación, <i>season</i> .	bondad, <i>goodness</i> .	especie, <i>species</i> .
la muchedumbre, <i>crowd</i> .	vejez, <i>old age</i> .	sencillez, <i>simplicity</i> .

FORMATION OF FEMININE NOUNS

20. The feminine of nouns denoting living beings is expressed either by changing the ending of the masculine, by a different word, or by using macho, *male*, or hembra, *female*.

a. The ending *o* becomes *a* : —

el abuelo, <i>the grandfather.</i>	la abuela, <i>the grandmother.</i>
el hijo, <i>the son.</i>	la hija, <i>the daughter.</i>
el hermano, <i>the brother.</i>	la hermana, <i>the sister.</i>
el tío, <i>the uncle.</i>	la tía, <i>the aunt.</i>
el primo, <i>the cousin.</i>	la prima, <i>the cousin (fem.).</i>
el sobrino, <i>the nephew.</i>	la sobrina, <i>niece.</i>
el viudo, <i>the widower.</i>	la viuda, <i>the widow.</i>

b. Most nouns ending in a consonant add *a* : —

el patrón, <i>the patron.</i>	la patrona, <i>the patroness.</i>
el león, <i>the lion.</i>	la leona, <i>the lioness.</i>
el traidor, <i>the traitor.</i>	la traidora, <i>the traitress.</i>
el lector, <i>the reader.</i>	la lectora, <i>the reader (fem.).</i>
el marqués, <i>the marquis.</i>	la marquesa, <i>the marchioness.</i>
el inglés <i>the Englishman.</i>	la inglesa, <i>the Englishwoman.</i>
el señor, <i>the gentleman.</i>	la señora, <i>the lady.</i>
el capitán, <i>the captain.</i>	la capitana, <i>the captain's wife.</i>
el dios, <i>the god.</i>	la diosa, <i>the goddess.</i>

c. The same form for both genders : —

el, la compatriota, <i>the compatriot.</i>	el, la mártir, <i>the martyr.</i>
el ángel, <i>the angel (11, b).</i>	el, la reo, <i>the criminal.</i>
el, la homicida, <i>the homicide.</i>	el, la testigo, <i>the witness.</i>

d. The following are some of the many that can not be arranged under any regular rule : —

el actor, <i>the actor.</i>	la actriz, <i>the actress.</i>
el barón, <i>the baron.</i>	la baronesa, <i>the baroness.</i>
el conde, <i>the count.</i>	la condesa, <i>the countess.</i>
el poeta, <i>the poet.</i>	la poetisa, <i>the poetess.</i>
el sastre, <i>the tailor.</i>	la sastra, <i>tailoress, or tailor's wife.</i>
el rey, <i>the king.</i>	la reina, <i>the queen.</i>
el héroe, <i>the hero.</i>	la heroína, <i>the heroine.</i>
el príncipe, <i>the prince.</i>	la princesa, <i>the princess.</i>
el pariente, <i>the relative.</i>	la parienta, <i>the relative (fem.).</i>

e. The feminine is expressed by a different word : —

el hombre, <i>the man.</i>	la mujer, <i>the woman.</i>
el toro, <i>the bull.</i>	la vaca, <i>the cow.</i>
el caballo, <i>the horse.</i>	la yegua, <i>the mare.</i>

f. Lastly the names of most insects and small animals have but one form for both genders : —

el águila, <i>the eagle.</i>	la hormiga, <i>the ant.</i>
el ratón, <i>the mouse.</i>	la mosca, <i>the fly.</i>
el gorrión, <i>the sparrow.</i>	la pulga, <i>the flea.</i>
el ruiseñor, <i>the nightingale.</i>	la trucha, <i>the trout.</i>
la codorniz, <i>the quail.</i>	la perdiz, <i>the partridge.</i>

NOTE. — When it is necessary to distinguish sex in these words, *macho* or *hembra* is used ; *i.e.* la hembra del gorrión *or* el gorrión hembra, *the hen sparrow.*

QUALIFYING SUFFIXES

21. Spanish is very rich in qualifying suffixes. They abound in satirical, humorous, popular, domestic, and familiar language and are joined to nouns, adjectives, participles, adverbs, and even sometimes to gerunds, to express various shades of meaning which are usually rendered in English by adjectives and adverbs. It is very difficult for an English-speaking person to employ them freely without making ludicrous mistakes, and he should avoid them whenever he is not perfectly sure that he is on safe ground. This he can always do by the use of qualifying words.

The feminines are made in the same way as for other nouns.

AUGMENTATIVES

22. *On* and *eton* are simply augmentative : —

hombre, <i>man.</i>	hombrón, <i>big man.</i>
mujer, <i>woman.</i>	mujerona, <i>big woman.</i>
mozo, <i>lad.</i>	mocetón, <i>big fellow.</i>

a. Azo and ada express largeness with the concomitant idea of ungainliness; but more commonly these endings mean a blow or thrust with, or the contents of the thing implied in the noun to which they are attached: —

librazo, *large ungainly book, or blow with a book.*
 bocaza, *large, wide mouth; bocada, mouthful.*
 cucharazo, *blow with a spoon; cucharada, spoonful.*
 asnazo, *big jackass; big brutal fellow.*
 fusilazo, *blow with a gun, gunshot, report of a gun.*
 puñalada, *thrust with a dagger; sudden shock of pain.*
 cañonazo, *large cannon, shot, report of a cannon.*

b. Acho, ucho, ote give an idea of ridicule, disdain, depreciation: —

populacho, *the rabble; vinacho, bad wine.*
 animalucho, *ugly, hideous animal, vile beast.*
 casucha, *shanty, hut; poor old house.*
 amigote, *old cranky friend; librote, bad old book.*

c. Arrón, ejón, erón, achón, gón, astro are augmentative, pejorative, depreciative: —

nubarrón, *great black cloud.*
 ventarrón, *violent wind storm.*
 callejón, *alley, side street; pedrejón, large loose stone.*
 caserón, *large house in a bad condition.*
 poblachón, *large town with houses huddled together.*
 narigón, *large long nose; raigón, stump, snag.*
 politicastro, *unscrupulous wire puller; peanut politician.*

DIMINUTIVES AND CARITATIVES

23. The forms of these are much more numerous than those of the augmentatives and are applied both to common and proper nouns. The idea of smallness is not always present.

a. Ito, cito, ecito express smallness, affection, commiseration, good-natured irony, etc. : —

hijito, (*dear*) *little son*.
 Juanito, *Johnnie*.
 pobrecito, *poor fellow*.
 jovencito, *stripling*.
 primito, *little cousin* (m.).

hijita, (*dear*) *little daughter*.
 Juanita, *Jennie*.
 mujercita, (*dear*) *little woman*.
 florecita, (*pretty*) *little flower*.
 primita, *little cousin* (f.).

b. Ico, cico, ecico have about the same meaning as the above (*a*), but their use is local and dialectic rather than general : —

perrico, *little dog*.
 jovencico, *youngster*.
 Juanico, *Jack, Johnnie*.

ovecico, *small egg*.
 avecica (f.), *little bird*.
 manecica (f.), *little hand*.

c. Illo, cillo, ecillo, in addition to diminutiveness, frequently add a waggish, arch, pejorative, or commiserative turn to the word : —

Luisillo, (*arch*) *little Lou*.
 amorcillo, *flirtation*.
 viejecillo, *poor old man*.

loquilla, *silly little girl*.
 mujercilla, *dawdling woman*.
 manecilla, *small hand, index*.

d. Uelo, zuelo, esuelo, ichuelo, achuelo, are diminutive, and besides express lowness, vileness, pettiness, roguish banter, etc. : —

hijuelo, *young child or son*.
 reyezuelo, *petty king*.
 portichuelo, *narrow entrance*.

jovenzuelo, *vile youth*.
 portezuela, *small door*.
 riachuelo, *rivulet*.

e. Other suffixes of similar import are etc, cete, ejo, in, ino : —

mocete, *small boy*.
 lugarete, *small town*.
 espadín, *small short sword*.

pobreta, *poor girl*.
 animalejo, *animalcule*.
 palomino, *young pigeon*.

f. Finally, it should be noted that many words have some of the above endings without being augmentative or diminutive : —

buñuelo, *bun, fritter*.
 tornillo, *screw*.
 calzoncillos, *drawers*.
 chaqueta, *jacket, coat*.
 mallorquín, *Majorcan*.

pañuelo, *handkerchief*.
 mantequilla, *butter*.
 ladrillo, *brick*.
 anzuelo, *fishhook*.
 cascarón, *eggshell, vault*.

III

ADJECTIVES,

24. Spanish adjectives usually change their forms to agree in gender and number with the nouns they qualify. The terminations are about the same as those of nouns, and the modifications they undergo follow the same general rules. The augmentative and diminutive suffixes are the same likewise and are modified similarly.

POSITIVE DEGREE

TWO TERMINATIONS

a. Adjectives ending in *o, etc, ote*, change the final vowel to *a* to form the feminine : —

blanco, blanca, *white*.

negro, negra, *black*.

rojo, roja, *red*.

amarillo, amarilla, *yellow*.

regordete, -a, *fat and plump*.

grandote, -a, *rather big*.

blancos, blancas.

negros, negras.

rojos, rojas.

amarillos, amarillas.

regordetes, regordetas.

grandotes, grandotas.

b. Those ending in *an, on, in, or* (except comparatives in *or*) and proper adjectives in *és* add *a*, rejecting the written accent of the masculine : —

holgazán, -a, *lazy*.

alemán, -a, *German*.

burlón, -a, *roguish*.

chiquitín, -a, *wee*.

holgazanes, holgazanas.

alemanes, alemanas.

burlones, burlonas.

chiquitines, chiquitinas.

traidor, -a, <i>traitorous</i> .	traidores, traidoras.
emprendedor, -a, <i>enterprising</i> .	emprendedores, emprendedoras.
francés, -a, <i>French</i> .	franceses, francesas.
inglés, -a, <i>English</i> .	ingleses, inglesas.
escocés, -a, <i>Scotch</i> .	escoceses, escocesas.
portugués, -a, <i>Portuguese</i> .	portugueses, portuguesas.

NOTE.—Ruin, *mean*, *low*, and comparatives in *or* remain unchanged in the singular (see 32, *a*) ; and *español* and *andaluz* take *a* for the feminine.

ONE TERMINATION

c. Adjectives in *a*, *e*, *i*, *l*, *en*, *un*, *r*, *z*, and common adjectives in *és* have but one form for both genders : —

agrícola, <i>agricultural</i> .	agrícolas.
persa, <i>Persian</i> .	persas.
verde, <i>green</i> .	verdes.
grave, <i>grave</i> , <i>weighty</i> .	graves.
carmesí, <i>crimson</i> .	carmesíes.
fiel, <i>faithful</i> ; azul, <i>blue</i> .	fieles, azules.
fácil, <i>easy</i> ; débil, <i>weak</i> .	fáciles, débiles.
joven, <i>young</i> ; común, <i>common</i> .	jóvenes, comunes.
impar, <i>odd</i> ; familiar, <i>familiar</i> .	impares, familiares.
cortés, <i>polite</i> ; gris, <i>gray</i> .	cortesés, grises.
capaz, <i>capacious</i> , <i>fit</i> .	capaces.
feliz, <i>happy</i> .	felices (15, <i>a</i>).

APOCOPATION

25. The following adjectives drop final *o*, when they stand immediately before a masculine noun : —

alguno, <i>some</i> , <i>any</i> .	ninguno, <i>no</i> , <i>not any</i> .
bueno, <i>good</i> ; malo, <i>bad</i> .	primero, <i>first</i> .
postrero, <i>latter</i> , <i>last</i> .	tercero, <i>third</i> .

Ex. Ningún hombre, el primer tren (*train*) ; but : ninguno de mis amigos (*my friends*).

a. Before feminine nouns beginning with tonic *a* and *ha* (see 12 *a*), good usage also allows the apocopation of the above adjectives: algún águila, *some eagle*; and some authors even drop the feminine *a* before all nouns.

b. Santo, *saint*, loses its syllable *to* before the names of most of the saints: San Pablo, San Pedro, San Juan. Except: Santo Tomás (or Santo Tomé), Santo Toribio, Santo Domingo.

Note also Santiago, *St. James* (in one word).

c. Grande, *great*, stands before its noun and may or may not lose its final *de*: gran señor, *great lord* or *gentleman*. When *grande* means *large*, it is placed after the noun: una casa grande, *a large house*.

d. Cualquiera, pl. cualesquiera, *whatever, any*, is treated as grande. It may retain or drop *a* according to its position: —

Cualquier(a) casa (*house*), cualesquer(a) casas: Una casa cualquiera, cualquiera de las casas.

e. Cada, *each, every*, and demás, *other, remaining*, are invariable: Cada seis días, *every six days*; los demás, *the others*; lo demás, *the remainder*.

f. Ambos, *both*, and sendos, *one each, as many*, have no singular.

QUALIFYING SUFFIXES

26. These suffixes having been treated at some length under nouns, it will suffice here to give only a few examples of the adjectives: —

rico (*rich*), ricacho, ricachón, ricazo, ricote.

chico (*small*), chiquito, chiquitito, chiquirritito, chiquillo, chiquitín.

guapo (*elegant, pretty, brave*), guapetón, guapito, guapazo.

rubio (*red, blond*), rubito, rubión.

pobre (*poor*), pobrete, pobretón, pobrecito, pobrecillo, pobre-zuelo, pobrecico.

bueno (*good, nice, neat*), bonito, bonacho, bonachón, bonazo, bonico, bonillo, bonitillo.

NOTE. — Very many adjectives, possibly the majority, rarely, if ever, take the diminutive or augmentative forms; and very few have as many modifications as those just cited.

COMPARATIVE DEGREE

27. The comparative degree is formed by placing *más* (*more*), *menos* (*less*), or *tan* (*as, so*), before the positive and *que* or *de* (*than*), *de lo que* (*than*), or *como* (*as*), *cual* (*as*) before the second term of the comparison.

a. *Más* forms the **comparative of superiority**: *Mi casa es más alta que la de mi amigo, My house is higher than that of my friend.*

b. *Menos* expresses the **comparative of inferiority**: *Este libro es menos interesante que el otro, This book is less interesting than the other one.*

NOTE. — *De* takes the place of *que* before numerals in affirmative sentences, but either *que* or *de* may be used when the sentence is negative in any way: *He estado en París más de diez veces, I have been to Paris more than ten times; Tengo menos de cinco pesos en mi cartera, I have less than five dollars in my pocket-book; but: No tiene más que tres manzanas, He has no more than three apples; No hay menos de seis perros en el jardín, There are no less than six dogs in the garden.*

c. When the second member of the comparison contains a verb different from that of the first, *than* is rendered by *de lo que*: *Es más hermosa de lo que dicen, She is prettier than they say; but when the comparison depends on a noun instead of an adjective, than is translated by del que, de la que, de los que or de las que, according to the gender and number of said noun: Tenía menos deudas de las que pensaba, He had fewer debts than he thought.*

d. *Tan* (a contraction of *tanto*) . . . *como* forms the **comparative of equality**: Esta mercancía es tan barata como aquélla, *This merchandise is as cheap as that*.

NOTE.—*Tan* may be omitted and *cual* may take the place of *como*, the article before the following noun, in the latter case, being dropped: Su tez es como la nieve, *or, cual* nieve, blanca, *Her complexion is as white as snow (white like snow)*.

28. Tanto (*so much, as much, many*) . . . *como* is used when nouns are compared: Compra tantos melocotones como peras, *He buys as many peaches as pears*.

a. But *tanto* . . . *cuanto* is the formula when a different verb is used in the second member: Tenemos tantos dependientes cuantos (or *como*) necesitamos, *We have as many clerks as we need*.

See also 96, Note.

NOTE.—Certain irregular comparatives, for the sake of convenience, will be treated in the following section (see 32).

SUPERLATIVE DEGREE

29. The **relative superlative** is formed by placing the definite article, or one of the possessive adjectives, before the comparative degree. The three degrees may be illustrated by *hermoso*, *pretty*, and *poblado*, *populous*:—

POSITIVE	COMPARATIVE	SUPERLATIVE	PLURAL
hermoso,	más hermoso,	el más hermoso,	los más hermosos,
hermosa,	más hermosa,	la más hermosa,	las más hermosas,
<i>pretty,</i>	<i>prettier,</i>	<i>(the) prettiest,</i>	<i>(the) prettiest.</i>
poblado,	menos poblado,	el menos poblado,	los menos poblados,
poblada,	menos poblada,	la menos poblada,	las menos pobladas,
<i>populous,</i>	<i>less populous,</i>	<i>(the) least populous,</i>	<i>(the) least populous.</i>

a. When the article, or possessive adjective, precedes the noun, and the adjective follows it, the latter usually rejects the article : la nación más adelantada, *the most progressive nation* ; mi amigo más querido, *my dearest friend*.

b. The adjective, used predicatively, rejects the article when there is no comparison and retains it when there is : Ella es más cariñosa cuando está buena, *She is most affectionate when she is well* ; but : Ella es la menos cariñosa de mis hermanas, *She is the least affectionate of my sisters*.

c. When used independently, or when qualifying a noun in apposition, the superlative requires the article : Mi buen tío, el más noble de los hombres, vive en Boston, *My good uncle, the most noble of men, lives in Boston* ; Cánovas del Castillo, estadista español el más célebre, murió debido á un asesinato, crimen el más atroz, *Cánovas del Castillo, a most celebrated Spanish statesman, died by assassination, a most atrocious crime*.

30. The **absolute superlative** indicates a very high degree of the quality of the adjective without any idea of comparison. It is made in one of two ways :—

a. First, by putting before the adjective *muy*, *very*, *bien*, *very*, *well*, *sumamente*, *highly*, or any other adverb which enhances the force of the adjective : *muy dulce*, *very sweet* ; *bien rico*, *very rich* ; *sumamente grato*, *highly pleasing*.

b. Secondly, by affixing to the positive the termination *ísimo* (sometimes *rimo*) : *querido*, *dear*, *queridísimo*, *very dear*.

31. In the formation of the absolute superlative the adjective is subject to the following changes :—

a. A final vowel, or diphthong, is usually dropped : *amplio*, *full*, *amplísimo*, *very full* ; *limpio*, *clean*, *limpísimo*, *very clean*.

Except : *agrio*, *sour*, *agrisísimo* ; *pío*, *pious*, *piísimo* ; *frío*, *cold*, *frísimo*.

b. Final *co*, *go*, *z* become respectively *qu*, *gu*, *c*: rico, *rich*, riquísimo; vago, *restless*, *vague*, vaguísimo; atroz, *atrocious*, atrocísimo.

c. The ending *ble* is changed to *bil*: amable, *amiable*, amabilísimo.

Except feble, *feeble*, endeble, *weak*, and doble, *double*, which are regular (31, *a*): feble, feblísimo, *very feeble*, etc.

d. Tonic *ie* and *ue* revert to *e* and *o*, the primitive Latin vowels: ardiente, *ardent*, ardentísimo; cierto, *certain*, certísimo; nuevo, *new*, novísimo; fuerte, *strong*, fortísimo.

e. The following form their absolute superlative in accordance with their Latin radicals: —

acre, *sour*, acérrimo.

amigo, *friendly*, amícsimo.

antiguo, *ancient*, antiquísimo.

áspero, *harsh*, *rude*, aspérrimo, asperísimo.

benéfico, *beneficent*, beneficentísimo.

benévolo, *kind*, benevolentísimo.

célebre, *noted*, celebrísimo.

cruel, *cruel*, crudelísimo.

fiel, *faithful*, fidelísimo.

íntegro, *candid*, integérrimo.

libre, *free*, libérrimo.

magnífico, *splendid*, magnificentísimo.

misero, *wretched*, misérrimo.

munífico, *liberal*, munificentísimo.

pobre, *poor*, pobrísimo and paupérrimo.

sacro, } *holy*, sacratísimo.
sagrado, }

salubre, *healthy*, salubérrimo.

sabio, *wise*, sapientísimo.

NOTE. — *Fácil* and *difícil* affix either *tsimo* or *imo*.

f. It should be observed that all adjectives do not customarily take this termination. Many ending in *io*, *to*, *i*, *l*, *n*, *r* prefer the form with *muy*.

NOTE. — Occasionally adjectives with the prefix *re* are used in popular language with the force of absolute superlatives: rebueno, *very good*.

IRREGULAR COMPARISONS

32. Besides their regular comparison, a few adjectives have an irregular one based on the Latin.

POSITIVE	COMPARATIVE
bueno, <i>good</i> .	mejor, <i>better</i> .
malo, <i>bad</i> .	peor, <i>worse</i> .
grande, <i>great</i> .	mayor, <i>greater, older</i> .
pequeño, <i>small</i> .	menor, <i>smaller, younger</i> .
mucho, <i>much</i> .	más, <i>more</i> .
poco, <i>little</i> .	menos, <i>less</i> .
SUPER. RELAT.	SUPER. ABSOL.
el mejor, <i>the best</i> .	{ óptimo, } <i>very good</i> .
el peor, <i>the worst</i> .	{ bonísimo, }
el mayor, { <i>greatest,</i> }	pésimo, <i>very bad</i> .
{ <i>oldest</i> . }	máximo, <i>very great</i> .
el menor, { <i>smallest,</i> }	mínimo, <i>very small</i> .
{ <i>youngest</i> . }	
los más (de), <i>the most</i> .	muchísimo, <i>very much</i> .
los menos (de), <i>the fewest</i> .	poquísimo, <i>very few</i> .

a. The comparatives and relative superlatives of the above adjectives, as well as all comparative forms, such as *superior, inferior, interior, exterior*, etc., have but one termination for the masculine and feminine: la mayor parte, *the greater part*; el mejor de mis amigos, *the best of my friends*.

33. Participles used as adjectives undergo all the modifications of the latter: querido, *dear* (from *querer, to love*), más querido, *dearer*, el más querido, *the dearest*, queridísimo, *very dear*.

POSITION OF ADJECTIVES

34. The adjective may stand either before or after the noun it qualifies, but its position is not altogether arbitrary.

While in some instances it depends on the choice of the speaker, in others the harmony of the sentence or usage determines its place.

35. The more common position is **after** the noun, especially when it is desired to attribute to a noun a quality which does not necessarily belong to it. Many adjectives which follow the noun may be ranged under certain headings:—

1st. The names of colors and other qualities appreciable to the senses: un caballo blanco, *a white horse*; una vaca negra, *a black cow*; vino tinto, *red wine*; la fiebre amarilla, *the yellow fever*; una mesa redonda, *a round table*; una superficie llana, *a smooth surface*.

2d. Adjectives derived from proper names: la lengua castellana, *the Castilian language*; las dependencias españolas, *the Spanish dependencies*; la música alemana, *the German music*.

NOTE.— Nouns used as adjectives invariably follow: el proceso Dreyfus, *the Dreyfus case*.

3d. Participial or verbal adjectives: una hija amada, *a beloved daughter*; un edificio cuadrado, *a square edifice*; un deseo ardiente, *an ardent desire*; una herida penetrante, *a deep wound*.

4th. Adjectives modified by adverbs or containing more syllables than the nouns they qualify: un hombre tan bueno, *such a good man*; un tiempo demasiado largo, *too long a time*; una romería sumamente grata, *a highly agreeable pilgrimage*; un discurso kilométrico, *a speech a mile long*; una mujer doctísima, *a very learned woman*.

5th. Two or more adjectives qualifying a noun in the plural: Las lenguas italiana, española y francesa se derivan del latín, *The Italian, Spanish and French languages are derived from the Latin*; los capítulos primero y segundo, *the first and second chapters*.

36. The adjective stands before the noun :—

1st. When it expresses a characteristic quality: la dulce miel, *the sweet honey*; el duro hierro, *the hard iron*.

2d. When used figuratively: una negra acción, *a dark deed*; la dulce y encantadora voz del ruiseñor, *the sweet and enchanting voice of the nightingale*; la meliflua armonía, *the mellifluous harmony*.

3d. For rhetorical effect: ¡Dichosa edad y siglo dichoso aquel! *Happy age and happy century that!* Las claras fuentes y corrientes ríos les ofrecían sabrosas y transparentes aguas, *The clear fountains and running streams offered them delicious and transparent water*.

4th. When expressing quantity: más dinero, *more money*; con toda prisa, *with all speed*; muchas riquezas, *much riches*; tanto ardor, *so much ardor*; demasiado calor, *too much heat*; poco pan, *little bread*; menos oro, *less gold*.

NOTE.—Mero, *mere*, bueno, *good*, malo, *poor*, regularly stand before the noun, but observe: él lado malo ó el lado bueno de la medalla, *the wrong or the right side of the medal*.

37. The meaning of certain adjectives may vary according as they precede or follow, while others may take either position without any appreciable difference in meaning :—

Una mala pluma, *a bad pen*; un hombre malo, *a wicked man*; un gran libro, *a great book*; un libro grande, *a large book*; ciertas palabras, *certain words*; una promesa cierta, *a sure promise*; un pobre poeta, *a poor poet*; un poeta pobre, *a poet without means*; el caballero de la triste figura, *the knight of the rueful countenance*; un asunto triste, *a sad affair*.

NOTE.—The above rules must not be taken as absolute guides. In many, if not the majority of cases, the rhythmical balance of the sentence, more than anything else, determines the position of the adjective.

IV

38.

NUMERALS

CARDINALS		ORDINALS	
Cero,	0		
Uno, -a,	1	Primero,	1st
Dos,	2	Segundo,	2d
Tres,	3	Tercero,	3d
Cuatro,	4	Cuarto,	4th
Cinco,	5	Quinto,	5th
Seis,	6	Sexto (sesto),	6th
Siete,	7	Séptimo (sétimo),	7th
Ocho,	8	Octavo,	8th
Nueve,	9	Noveno (nono),	9th
Diez,	10	Décimo,	10th
Once,	11	Undécimo,	11th
Doce,	12	Duodécimo,	12th
Trece,	13	Décimotercio,	13th
Catorce,	14	Décimocuarto,	14th
Quince,	15	Décimoquinto,	15th
Dieciseis,	16	Décimosexto,	16th
Diecisiete,	17	Décimoséptimo,	17th
Dieciocho,	18	Décimooctavo,	18th
Diecinueve,	19	Décimonono (-noven),	19th
Veinte,	20	Vigésimo,	20th
Veintiuno,	21	Vigésimo primero (primo),	21st
Veintidós,	22	Vigésimo segundo,	22d
Veintitrés,	23	Vigésimo tercero,	23d
Veinticuatro,	24	Vigésimo cuarto,	24th
<i>Veinticinco,</i>	25	Vigésimo quinto,	25th

Veintiseis,	26	Vigésimo sexto,	26th
Veintisiete,	27	Vigésimo séptimo,	27th
Veintiocho,	28	Vigésimo octavo,	28th
Veintinueve,	29	Vigésimo nono,	29th
Treinta,	30	Trigésimo,	30th
Treinta y uno,	31	Trigésimo primo,	31st
Cuarenta,	40	Cuadragésimo,	40th
Cincuenta,	50	Quincuagésimo,	50th
Sesenta,	60	Sexagésimo,	60th
Setenta,	70	Septuagésimo,	70th
Ochenta,	80	Octogésimo,	80th
Noventa,	90	Nonagésimo,	90th
Ciento,	100	Centésimo,	100th
Ciento (y) uno,	101	Centésimo primo,	101st
Ciento (y) dos,	102	Centésimo segundo,	102d
Doscientos, -as,	200	Ducentésimo,	200th
Trescientos, -as,	300	Trecentésimo,	300th
Cuatrocientos, -as,	400	Cuadragentésimo,	400th
Quinientos, -as,	500	Quingentésimo,	500th
Seiscientos, -as,	600	Sexcentésimo,	600th
Setecientos, -as,	700	Septengentésimo,	700th
Ochocientos, -as,	800	Octogentésimo,	800th
Novcientos, -as,	900	Nonagentésimo,	900th
Mil,	1000	Milésimo,	1000th
Dos mil,	2000	Dosmilésimo,	2000th
Cien mil,	100,000	Cien milésimo,	100,000th
Doscientos, -as mil,	200,000	Doscientos milésimo,	200,000th
Un millón,	1,000,000	Millonésimo,	1,000,000th
Diez millones,	10,000,000	Diez millonésimo,	10,000,000th
Cien millones,	100,000,000	Cien millonésimo,	100,000,000th

CARDINALS

39. Except *uno*, *ciento*, and the higher numbers, *mil*, *millón*, etc., the cardinals are treated as invariable adjectives.

a. Uno, -a, being the same as the indefinite article, drops *o* when it precedes a noun : un libro, *one book*. When preceded by another number, both *o* and *a* are dropped before nouns : veintiún plumas, *21 pens*; treinta y un manzanas, *31 apples*. See also 12, *a*.

b. The numbers 16 to 19 and 21 to 29 are likewise written separately : diez y seis, *veinte y uno*, etc., but custom is fast deciding in favor of the forms given in the list.

c. Ciento is invariable for gender but loses the final *to*, if followed immediately by a noun or adjective : cien ciruelas, *a hundred plums*; cien buenos poemas, *a hundred good poems*. When multiplied or used as a noun, *ciento* takes the plural sign : doscientas aves, *two hundred birds*; unos cientos pesos, *some hundreds of dollars*; cientos de hombres, *hundreds of men*. But *centena* or *centenar* may be used in the latter case.

d. Mil is used as an invariable adjective : mil hombres, dos mil mujeres, or as synonymous with *millar* : miles de *or* millares de soldados, *thousands of soldiers*.

e. Millón is a noun : un millón de gracias, *a million thanks* (a Spaniard's exaggerated way of saying : many thanks); dos millones de duros, *two million dollars*.

f. After 1000, numbers are expressed by thousand(s) plus hundred(s) : mil doscientos caballos, *1200 horses*; tres mil quinientos habitantes, *3500 inhabitants*.

g. The conjunction *y* (and) is usually placed between the last two numbers, when the last number is one of the units from 1 to 9, inclusive : mil ochocientos noventa y nueve, *1899*; but even in this case *y* may be omitted : ciento seis ciudades, *106 cities*.

ORDINALS

40. The ordinals are grammatically treated as adjectives and vary for gender and number. They usually stand *after*, but may stand *before*, the noun : lección primera, *the first lesson*; la décimocuarta fila, *the 14th file*.

a. For the apocopation of *primero* and *tercero*, see 25.

b. The Spanish ordinals are little used beyond *vigésimo*, 20th, and not always up to that point. The cardinals take their place, because shorter, and when so used are always placed after the noun: *página veintiuna*, *page twenty-one*; *el día dos de mayo*, *the second day of May*.

c. To distinguish rulers, when there has been more than one of the same name, the ordinals are used up to *décimo* and generally the cardinals thereafter: *Carlos segundo*, *Felipe cuarto*, *Luis catorce*.

d. In numbering the days of the month *primero* is used for the first, but the cardinal numbers for all the rest: *el primero de marzo*, *March 1st*; *á doce de abril*, *on the 12th of April*.

e. The ordinals may be abbreviated in writing or printing, as follows: 1^o, 3^a, 10^{os}, 20^{as}, etc.

FRACTIONS

41. With the exception of $\frac{1}{2}$ to tenths, which generally correspond to the English method of formation, Spanish fractions have special forms.

La mitad }	$\frac{1}{2}$	Un quinto	$\frac{1}{5}$
Un medio }		Un sexto	$\frac{1}{6}$
Uno y medio }	$1\frac{1}{2}$	Un séptimo	$\frac{1}{7}$
Una y media }		Un octavo (ochavo)	$\frac{1}{8}$
Un tercio	$\frac{1}{3}$	Un noveno	$\frac{1}{9}$
Un cuarto	$\frac{1}{4}$	Un décimo	$\frac{1}{10}$

a. From *décimo* on, *avo* is added to the ordinals: —

Un onzavo	$\frac{1}{11}$	cinco cincuentavos	$\frac{5}{50}$
Un trezavo	$\frac{1}{13}$	tres setentavos	$\frac{3}{70}$
Dos quinzavos	$\frac{2}{15}$	doce noventavos	$\frac{12}{90}$
Un diecisieteavo	$\frac{1}{17}$	dos centavos }	$\frac{2}{100}$
Tres veintiunavos	$\frac{3}{21}$	dos centésimos }	$\frac{2}{100}$
Siete treintavos	$\frac{7}{30}$	quince milésimos	$\frac{15}{1000}$

b. As in English, fractions may be expressed by *parte*, *part*: la cuarta parte, *the 4th part*; la décimoquinta parte, *the 15th part*.

COLLECTIVES

42. Collectives generally express approximate numbers; as, una decena, *about ten*. Other forms are:—

un par, *a pair, couple*.

una docena, *a dozen*.

una quincena, *fifteen*.

una veintena, *twenty*.

una treintena, *thirty*.

una cuarentena, *forty*.

una centena, *a hundred*.

una gruesa, *a gross*.

NOTE.— Approximate number may be expressed by adding *poco más ó menos*, *cosa de*, *unos* or *á eso de*: cincuenta días, *poco más ó menos, about 50 days*; cosa de veinte pesos, *a matter of 20 dollars*; unos doscientos soldados, *some two hundred soldiers*; á eso de las cuatro, *towards 4 o'clock*.

MULTIPLICATIVES

43. These are formed on the cardinals by means of a suffix, meaning to fold:—

simple, *single, simple*.

doble, duplo, -a, *double*.

triple, triplice, triplo, -a, *triple*.

cuádruplo, -a, cuádruple, *quadruple*.

quíntuplo, -a, *fivefold*.

séxtuplo, -a, *sixfold*.

décuplo, -a, *tenfold*.

céntuplo, -a, *a hundredfold*.

NOTE.— There are also participial forms such as *duplicado*, *triplicado*, etc., from *duplicar*, *triplicar*, etc., *to double*, *to triple*.

V

PRONOUNS

PERSONAL

44. SUBJECT	OBJECT OF VERB	OBJECT OF PREPOSITION
Yo, <i>I</i> ,	me, <i>me, to me</i> ,	mi, <i>me</i> .
Tú, <i>thou</i> ,	te, <i>thee, to thee</i> ,	tí, <i>thee</i> .
Usted, <i>you</i> ,	le (<i>m.</i>), la (<i>f.</i>), <i>you, to you</i> ,	usted, <i>you</i> .
Él, <i>he, it</i> ,	lo, le, <i>him, to him, it</i> ,	él, <i>him, it</i> .
Ella, <i>she, it</i> ,	la, le, <i>her, to her, it</i> ,	ella, <i>her, it</i> .
Ello, <i>it</i> ,	lo, le, <i>it, to it, so</i> ,	ello, <i>it</i> .
	se (<i>reflexive</i>),	sí (<i>reflexive</i>).
Nosotros, -as } Nos }	we, nos, us, to us,	nosotros, -as } nos }
Vosotros, -as } Vos }		vosotros, -as } vos }
Ustedes, <i>you</i> ,	les (<i>m.</i>), las (<i>f.</i>), <i>you, to you</i> ,	ustedes, <i>you</i> .
Ellos, (<i>m.</i>), <i>they</i> ,	los, les, <i>them, to them</i> ,	ellos, <i>them</i> .
Ellas, (<i>f.</i>), <i>they</i> ,	las, les, <i>them, to them</i> ,	ellas, <i>them</i> .
	se (<i>reflexive</i>),	sí (<i>reflexive</i>).

NOTE. — *Se* and *si* mean : *himself, herself, itself, yourself, yourselves, themselves*.

45. *Yo* occasionally occurs after a preposition in connection with another pronoun : *con usted y yo, with you and me*.

46. *Nos* for *nosotros, -as*, is employed in official language somewhat like our editorial "we."

47. *Tú* is the pronoun of familiar address and is used in the family, between intimate friends and relatives, in poetry, and in speaking to little children and domestic animals.

48. *Vos* is always singular though it governs its verb in the second person plural. It is more respectful and deferential than *tú*, and is employed as an intermediary between the familiar *tú* and the formal *usted*.

49. *Vosotros* (fem. *vosotras*) is used as the plural of *tú* and *vos*, and also in addressing public assemblies by persons who are actually, or by implication, on intimate terms with their hearers.

50. *Usted*, *you* (pl. *ustedes*, contracted from *vuestra merced*, *your grace*, *vuestras mercedes*, *your graces*) is the common form of polite address and is the one which the foreigner should always use for *you*, except when speaking to little children and animals. Owing to their etymology the verbs agreeing with *usted* and *ustedes* will be in the third person. They are abbreviated to *V.* or *Vd.* and *VV.* or *Vds.*

51. *Se*, *sí*, are the reflexive forms of the third person and of *usted* and *ustedes* for all genders and numbers, while for the first and second persons the forms in the second column are used as reflexives:—

yo me engaño, <i>I deceive myself.</i>	nosotros, -as, nos engañamos, <i>we</i> , etc.
tú te engañas, <i>thou deceivest</i> , etc.	vosotros, -as, os engañáis, <i>you</i> , etc.
usted se engaña, <i>you deceive</i> , etc.	ustedes se engañan, <i>you</i> , etc.
él se engaña, <i>he deceives</i> , etc.	ellos (<i>m.</i>) se engaña, <i>they</i> , etc.
ella se engaña, <i>she deceives</i> , etc.	ellas (<i>f.</i>) se engañan, <i>they</i> , etc.

52. The forms in the second column (44) are also employed as the object of the verb, both direct and indirect. The latter has all the force of a *dative* case and is variously translated by *to, for, from*, etc., while at times it is merely expletive and is left untranslated. Pleonastically the prepositional forms are constantly used along with the verb forms for purposes of clearness or emphasis. *He gives me a book* is *él me da un libro* or *á mí me da un libro*, or again: *él me da un libro á mí*. Other examples: *Digo á usted* or *le digo á usted, I tell you*. *Te quita la pluma*, or *te quita á tí la pluma, He takes the pen from thee*.

53. *Self* is expressed by adding *mismo, -a, -os, -as* (less frequently *propio*) to the subject or prepositional forms:—

yo mismo,	usted mismo,	mí misma.
tú misma,	ustedes mismas,	tí mismo.
él mismo,	vosotros mismos,	tí misma.
ella misma,	ellos mismos,	sí mismos.

Sí mismo, oneself, yourself, himself, herself, itself, etc.

54. The pronouns must agree with the nouns to which they refer in gender and number: ¿Tiene V. mi pluma? *Sí, la tengo, Have you my pen? Yes, I have it*; ¿Dónde están mis zapatos?—*Los veo en el rincón, Where are my shoes? I see them in the corner.*

55. *Ello, lo*, the neuters, are used to represent nouns not named or specified, as a circumstance, a thought, or sentence, and also with *ser, estar*, to be, as predicating the truth or falsity of a statement made or a question asked: ¿Es usted su sobrino?—*Lo soy, Are you his nephew? I am (it)*; ¿Está él contento?—*Si no lo estuviera, lo diría, Is he satisfied? If he were not (it), he would say so (it)*. *No lo es, It is not so.*

NOTE.—But when the English *it* refers back to the subject of the sentence, *lo* is always omitted: ¿Es usted?—Sí, yo soy, *Is it you? Yes, it is I* (lit. *I am*). ¿Quién es?—Él es, mi hermano, *Who is it? It is he, my brother*.

56. *Le, lo, la, los, las* are likewise used as indefinite pronouns in the sense of *some, one, any, such*: Es un pillo, si los hubiera, *He is a rascal, if there ever was one*. ¿Hay tinta en el tintero?—La hay, *Is there any ink in the inkstand? There is (some)*. Encontrará V. manzanas sobre la mesa, si las quiere, *You will find apples on the table, if you desire any*.

57. The prepositions *de* and *á* do not now, as with the article, make contractions with any of the personal pronouns. Hence: Hablo de él, de ella, de ello, *I speak of him, of her, of it*; Le pregunto á él, *I ask him*.

NOTE.—Formerly *de* was contracted with the pronouns, making *dél, della, dello, dellos, dellas*, and they are so pronounced at the present day but are always written separately.

58. *Mí, tí, sí*, when used with *con*, with, are lengthened into *migo, tigo, sigo* and become *conmigo, contigo, consigo*, written as one word.

POSITION OF THE PRONOUNS

59. The subject pronouns regularly stand **before** the verb in declarative, and **after** it in interrogative, sentences; but the order may be reversed for rhetorical effect. The subject pronouns are, however, for the most part, omitted when not emphatic or when the context or the personal ending of the verb shows clearly enough the subject:—

Yo quiero á mis amigos, *I love my friends.*

Eso lo digo yo, *That say I.*

¿ Sale usted á paseo ? or ¿ Usted sale á paseo ? *Are you going out to walk ?*

NOTE.— *Usted* may be omitted, but its constant use is considered more polite. A disagreeable repetition of it, however, should be avoided.

60. Pronouns which are the objects of a verb are suffixed to and form one word with the verb, whenever the latter is in the affirmative imperative, in the gerund or in the infinitive, or in the present subjunctive used affirmatively as an imperative. They always precede the negative imperative, however : —

Dígame V. lo que quiera.	Tell me whatever you will.
Dádmelo, si gustáis.	Give it to me, if you please.
Voy á decirle por qué.	I am going to tell you why.
Y saludándome partió.	And saluting me he went away.
Hablémosle en seguida.	Let us speak to him at once.
Muy bien ; díganmelo.	Very well ; let them tell me so.
No me lo dé V. ; no lo quiero.	Don't give it to me ; I don't want it.

NOTE.— Exceptions to the above rule may occur when the gerund and infinitive depend on a preceding verb, in which case their objects may be transferred to this verb : —

Lo estoy haciendo.	I am doing it.
No lo quiero aceptar.	I don't wish to accept it.
No me vuelvas á hablar.	Don't speak to me again.

a. In other cases than those above named the objective pronoun may precede or follow the verb in simple, and the auxiliary in compound, tenses. But when it follows, it is always treated as an *enclitic*, *i.e.* is attached to the verb as its final syllable.

Yo le doy un peso.	I give him a dollar.
Tú me das cuatro peras.	Thou givest me four pears.
V. le escribe una carta.	You write him a letter.
No me hable V. ahora.	Don't speak to me now.

But—

Dejóme en seguida y fué á casa.	He left me immediately, and went home.
Salióle á buscar, pero no le halló.	He went out to look for him, but did not find him.

NOTE.—The pronoun is appended to the past participle when the auxiliary is omitted :—

Ya le había visto y díchole que viniera.	He had already seen him and told him he should come.
--	--

61. All the rules for the position of one objective pronoun apply equally when the verb is accompanied by more than one. When this occurs, the pronouns stand as follows with reference to each other. The full-faced type indicates the indirect object (dative):—

Me <i>le, lo, la, les, los, las.</i>	Nos <i>le, lo, la, les, los, las.</i>
Te <i>le, lo, la, les, los, las.</i>	Os <i>le, lo, la, les, los, las.</i>
Se <i>le, lo, la, les, los, las.</i>	Se <i>le, lo, la, les, los, las.</i>

a. From the above it appears that the indirect object always stands before the direct when the latter is in the third person :—

Mi padre me lo dice.	My father tells it to me.
Tu tío te los ha dado.	Thy uncle has given them to thee.
Su madre se las pide.	Her mother asks them of her.
Díganoslo, si le gusta.	Tell it to us, if you please.
Viene á pedíroslos.	He comes to ask them of you.
Se las dan á ustedes.	They give them to you (pl.).

NOTE.—The *se* in the above examples must not be mistaken for the reflexive. It is a euphonic substitute for *le*, *les*, and *las*. Whenever two pronouns beginning with *l* come together, the first is changed to *se*. Hence *le lo*, *les los*, *las lo*, etc., become *se lo*, *se los*, *se lo*, etc.

b. When the reflexive *se* is used with other pronouns, it stands first, and the following pronoun will be the indirect object (dative). Such combinations are generally a substitute for the passive voice.

Se me, se te, se le ; se le . . . á usted.

Se nos, se os, se les ; se les . . . á ustedes.

No se me da un higo que venga ó no.	I care not a fig whether he comes or not.
Se le compra una naranja.	An orange is bought for him.
Se te pide una limosna.	An alms is asked of thee.
Á mis amigos se les preguntó si vendrían.	My friends were asked whether they would come.
Se les ofrece una copa de agua fresca.	A glass of cool water is offered you (pl.).

62. The prepositional forms of the pronouns, when used for direct or indirect object, or after neuter verbs of motion, may stand either before or after the verb:—

Á él no le quiere nadie.	No one likes him.
Se lo daré á usted y no á ella.	I will give it to you, and not to her.
¿ Lo destina V. á él ó á mí ?	Do you intend it for him or for me ?
Á usted.	For you.
Vino á mí y me lo reveló todo.	He came to me and revealed to me all.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES

63. Possessive adjectives are designated as *prepositive* and *postpositive*, because the former always precede, and the latter *always follow*, the noun.

PREPOSITIVE			POSTPOSITIVE		
SING.	PLUR.		SING.	PLUR.	
mi	mis	<i>my</i>	mío, -a	míos, -as	
tu	tus	<i>thy</i>	tuyo, -a	tuyos, -as	
su	sus	<i>{ his, her, its, } your, one's }</i>	suyo, -a	suyos, -as	
nuestro, -a	nuestros, -as	<i>our</i>	nuestro, -a	nuestros, -as	
vuestro, -a	vuestros, -as	<i>your</i>	vuestro, -a	vuestros, -as	
su	sus	<i>their, your</i>	suyo, -a	suyos, -as	

64. The most of the above forms vary for gender and number, but they agree with the gender and number of the person or thing possessed, and not, as in English, with the possessor; so that *su casa* may mean *his, her, its, one's, your, or their house*, according to its grammatical connection.

Mi bota, mis botas.
 Tu media, tus medias.
 Su cenojil, sus cenojiles.
 Nuestro sacabotas.
 Vuestras camisas.
 Sus vestidos de usted.

My boot, my boots.
 Thy stocking, thy stockings.
 His garter, his garters.
 Our bootjack.
 Your shirts.
 Your clothes.

65. It has been shown (64) that *su* may have any one of six meanings. When it becomes necessary to specify the ownership more clearly, it is done by adding the requisite personal pronoun preceded by *de*. So we have such combinations as:—

Su <i>or</i> el cortaplumas de él.	His penknife.
Su <i>or</i> la cara de ella.	Her face.
Su <i>or</i> el abrigo de usted.	Your overcoat.
Sus <i>or</i> los impermeables de ellos.	Their raincoats.
Sus levitas de ustedes.	Your frock-coats.

NOTE.— Both forms may be used, as in the last example.

66. *Own* is rendered by *propio*: —

Mis propios parientes.	My own relatives.
Tu propio parentesco.	Thy own relationship.
Sus propios cuñados.	His own brothers-in-law.
Su propio suegro.	Her own father-in-law.

67. The postpositive forms take the place of the prepositive in direct address, when the noun is not qualified by an adjective, and in the conventional letter headings, also when the noun is used in a kind of partitive sense: —

Muy señor mío, muy señores nuestros, etc.	My dear sir, (our) dear sirs, etc.
Padre nuestro que estás en los cielos.	Our Father who art in heaven.
Hijita mía, ven acá.	My (dear) little daughter, come here.
Un discípulo mío quiere verme.	A pupil of mine wishes to see me.

Observe, however, the address of a subordinate to his superior: —

Sí, mi general; no, mi amo.	Yes, general; no, master.
-----------------------------	---------------------------

68. But when an adjective accompanies the noun, the possessive may stand either before or after: —

Mi estimado amigo.	} My esteemed friend.
Apreciable amigo mío.	

69. When the noun is not in direct address, one of the articles usually precedes it, if the possessive follows it; but there are certain conventional expressions which omit the article: —

El hermano mío que murió.
Un conocido suyo llegó ayer.

The brother of mine who died.
An acquaintance of his arrived
yesterday.

But —

De parte tuya, suya.
Á fe mía, tuya.
Á casa nuestra.
Á pesar mío.
Á costa suya.

On thy, his part.
On my, thy faith.
To our house.
In spite of me.
At his expense.

70. Contrast or emphasis is sometimes aimed at by placing the possessive after the noun; but for the most part the position is a mere matter of taste. Emphasis may, however, be very effectively secured by using the demonstrative: —

Este tu hermano muerto era, y This thy brother was dead and
revivió. (revived) is alive again.

71. In speaking of the parts of the body, its faculties and clothing, possession, under certain circumstances, is expressed by putting the article before the thing possessed and the indirect personal pronoun corresponding to the possessor before the verb; but frequently the article alone suffices: —

Me limpio las uñas.
Me ha cortado la mano.
Le duelen los dientes.
La bala le llevó la cabeza.
Le pidió la mano.
Perdió la vida en un naufragio.
Tengo en la mano una pluma-
fontana.
Está en mangas de camisa.
Murió sin recobrar los sentidos.

I clean my nails.
He has cut my hand.
His teeth ache.
The ball knocked off his head.
He asked for her hand.
He lost his life in a shipwreck.
I have in my hand a fountain-
pen.
He is in his shirt sleeves.
He died without recovering his
senses.

72. But there are many instances where the above construction can not be used and where recourse must be had to the possessives : —

Mi sombrero está en casa del sombrero.	My hat is at the hatter's.
El perrito duerme sobre mis ro- dillas.	The little dog sleeps on my knees.
En torno de su boca jugaba una sonrisa encantadora.	Around her mouth played an enchanted smile.
El día del gozo de su corazón.	The day of rejoicing of his heart.

NOTE. — The usage with *clothing* and the *faculties* is not constant, as we may say : —

El salteador de caminos le quitó su <i>or</i> la capa.	The highwayman took away from him his cloak.
Se quitó su propia vida.	He took his own life.

Note also the conventional *el colega*, my, our, colleague, etc.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

73. Possessive pronouns are so called, because they stand for or in place of the omitted noun. They are formed by means of the definite article and the postpositive possessive adjectives.

MASCULINE	FEMININE	NEUTER
el mío, los míos,	la mía, las mías,	lo mío, <i>mine.</i>
el tuyo, los tuyos,	la tuya, las tuyas,	lo tuyo, <i>thine.</i>
el suyo, los suyos,	la suya, las suyas,	lo suyo, <i>his, hers,</i> <i>its, yours, theirs.</i>
el nuestro, los nuestros,	la nuestra, las nuestras,	lo nuestro, <i>ours.</i>
el vuestro, los vuestros,	la vuestra, las vuestras,	lo vuestro, <i>yours.</i>
el suyo, los suyos,	la suya, las suyas,	lo suyo, <i>his, hers,</i> <i>yours, theirs.</i>

See 66.

74. The prepositions *de* and *á* contract with *el*, making *del* and *al*, but remain unchanged with the remaining articles :—

Tu bote y el mío.	Thy boat and mine.
Tiene nuestro dinero y el suyo.	He has our money and his (own).
El color de su pelo y el del mío es negro.	The color of his hair and mine is black.
Habló á tu tío y al mío.	He spoke to thy uncle and to mine.

75. As in the case of the possessive adjectives (see 64 and 65), confusion may arise in regard to the meaning of the third personal singular and plural forms. This is avoided, when necessary, in the same way as in the case of the possessive adjectives or by the use of *el de*, *la de*, *los de*, *las de*, that, those of :—

Este lápiz es suyo <i>or</i> de ella.	This pencil is hers.
Hé aquí mi pañuelo y el suyo <i>or</i> el de usted.	Here is my handkerchief and yours.
Mis vestidos y los de ustedes.	My clothes and yours.

76. With the verb *ser*, to be, the article is omitted in expressing simple possession and retained to mark a contrast or emphasis :—

Tuyo es el reino, y el poder, y la gloria.	Thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory.
El anillo es mío.	The ring is mine.
Este reloj (pr. reló) es el mío y ése es el tuyo.	This watch is mine and that is thine.

77. The masculine plural and the neuter are used absolutely as substantives :—

La ley de lo mío y de lo tuyo.	The law of mine and thine (meum and tuum).
El enemigo atacó á los nuestros á eso de las dos.	The enemy attacked our (sol- diers) about 2 o'clock.
¡ Expresiones á los suyos !	My regards to your folks !

DEMONSTRATIVES

78. These may, for convenience, be called demonstratives of the first person (*este, estos*, etc.), because indicating proximity to the speaker; demonstratives of the second person (*ese, esos*, etc.), proximity to the person addressed; and demonstratives of the third person (*aquel, -la, aquellos*, etc.), distance from both. The adjectives, which stand before the nouns, are:—

	MAS.	FEM.	NEUT.		
<i>First</i>	{ este,	esta,	esto,	<i>this,</i>	} near me, us.
<i>person</i>	{ estos,	estas,	(wanting)	<i>these,</i>	
<i>Second</i>	{ ese,	esa,	eso,	<i>that,</i>	} near you.
<i>person</i>	{ esos,	esas,	—	<i>those,</i>	
<i>Third</i>	{ aquel,	aquella,	aquello,	<i>that,</i>	} distant from both.
<i>person</i>	{ aquellos,	aquellas,	—	<i>those,</i>	
<i>Pro-</i>	{ el,	la,	lo,	<i>that,</i>	
<i>nouns</i>	{ los,	las,	—	<i>those.</i>	

79. *Otro*, other, is joined to the above, making such combinations as:—

Estotro, -a (-os, -as),	<i>this other, these others.</i>
Esotro, -a (-os, -as),	<i>that other, those others.</i>
Aquel otro, aquella otra,	<i>that other.</i>
Aquellos otros, aquellas otras,	<i>those others.</i>

But these may be written separately: *este otro, estos otros*, etc.

80. The prepositions *de* and *á* contract only with *el*: *del, al*. *De* formerly made one word with the other forms

beginning with *e*: *deste, dese*, and they are so pronounced at the present day but are always written separately.

81. For emphasis the demonstrative adjectives are sometimes placed after the noun, but the latter is then always preceded by the definite article:—

La ventana esta.

This window (here).

La época aquella.

That (remote) epoch.

82. *Ese*, like the English *that*, may be used to express contempt:—

¡ Ese hombre un rival mío !

That man a rival of mine !

¡ Ese caballo llevarse el primer premio !

That horse carry off the first prize !

83. *Aquel*, when used of the past, applies, in general, to time remote from the present, while *ese* fixes the period within the more recent personal experience of the speaker and his auditors:—

Dichosa edad y siglos dichosos
aquellos á quien los antiguos
pusieron nombre de dorados.

— *Don Quijote*.

Esos días no se asemejan en nada
á aquellos dichosos de nuestra
juventud.

Happy age and happy cen-
turies those, to which the
ancients gave the name of
golden.

Those days resemble in no way
those happy ones of our
youth.

84. In a correspondence *en esta* and *en esa* are used elliptically for *en esta ciudad*, in this city (where I am), and *en esa*, in that city (where you are).

85. *Esto, eso* and *aquello* are used only as pronouns and represent a thought, statement, or circumstance; also an object, but one not specifically named or easily recogniz-

able at sight; otherwise, the demonstrative must agree grammatically with the name of the object specified:—

Esto no me agrada de ningún modo. This does not please me in any way.

Aquello no me importa. That does not concern me.

Esto es vidrio, eso es madera, pero aquello es piedra. This is glass, that (near you) is wood, but that (yonder) is stone.

But—

Esta es la carta de mi tío. This is the letter of my uncle.

Ese es un libro que hallé. That is a book which I found.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS

86. The same forms are used for the pronouns as for the adjectives, but they are distinguished from the latter by the written accent: *éste, ése, aquél*, etc., usually, but not always, rendered in English by: *this one, that one, the one* (that one) *yonder*; in the plural: *these, those*:—

Esta casa es la mía, ésa es de usted, y aquélla es de mi padre político. This house is mine, that one is yours, and the one yonder is my father-in-law's.

87. When two persons or things have already been mentioned and it is desired to contrast them by an additional statement, *éste* means the latter, and *aquél*, the former:—

Isabel y Cristina han sido reinas de España; ésta es ahora reina regente, y aquélla es ex-reina y vive en París. Isabella and Cristina have been queens of Spain; the latter is now queen regent, and the former is ex-queen and lives in Paris.

NOTE.—But the order of *éste* and *aquél* may be reversed, and *primero* may take the place of *aquél*, and *último* that of *éste*.

88. In the expression: *mi periódico y el de mi amigo*, *my newspaper and that of my friend*, *el* is not, in any proper sense, a demonstrative, but the article agreeing with *periódico* understood; but as *that* and *those* conveniently translate *el* and its variations, they may be called demonstratives. Their functions are as follows:—

1st. To represent a noun already expressed:—

Esta mi finca linda con la del gobernador.	This estate of mine is contiguous to (that of) the governor('s).
Estos barcos y los del enemigo son blindados.	These ships and those of the enemy are ironclad.
Entre los muertos por la fiebre.	Amongst those killed by the fever.

2d. To serve as antecedent to the relative *que*:—

El que no sabe eso no sabe nada.	He who does not know that does not know anything.
Al que está contento basta poco.	Little suffices for him who is contented.
Los que no admiten la inmortalidad del alma son pocos.	Those (they) who do not admit the immortality of the soul are few.

NOTE.—We may also say: *aquel que*, *aquellos que*, etc.

3d. To represent a noun omitted in the second term of a comparison:—

Ahora tengo menos dinero del que tuve no há mucho tiempo.	Now I have less money than (that which) I had not long ago.
Tuvo que pagar por su hijo más deudas de las que pensaba.	He had to pay more debts for his son than (those which) he thought.

89. The neuter *lo* is used,1st. Pronominally in the sense of *the matter, the affair*:—

Lo del oro y de la plata.	The question of gold and silver.
Lo de Dreyfus.	The Dreyfus affair.
Lo del Maine es de lo más serio.	That matter of the Maine is of the most serious kind.

2d. To form adverbial phrases of manner:—

Lo representa á lo vivo.	He represents it in a life-like manner.
Á lo Victor Hugo.	In the style of Victor Hugo.

3d. As the antecedent to the neuter relative *que*, which, making *lo que*, that which, what. It can not be omitted as *that* in English:—

Lo que usted dice es verdad.	What you say is true.
De lo que me alegro mucho.	At which I rejoice greatly.

4th. In a comparison where two degrees of quality of the same subject are compared:—

Es más bonita de lo que yo pensaba.	She is prettier than (that which) I thought.
-------------------------------------	--

5th. As an adverb of quantity in the sense of *how, how much*, etc.:—

¡ Lo que es el no tener nada que hacer !	How nice it is not to have anything to do !
Usted no sabe lo buena que es Sor Luisa.	You don't know how kind Sister Louise is.
¡ Lo que cuesta al mundo la ignorancia !	That is just what ignorance costs the world !
¡ Si él supiera lo que le quiero !	If he (only) knew how much I love him !

RELATIVE PRONOUNS

90. Relative pronouns are so called, because they *relate* to nouns already mentioned or implied, which are termed their *antecedents*.

que, { *who, which, that.*
 quien, quienes, }
 el cual, los cuales, *f.* la cual, las cuales, } *who, which.*
 el que, los que, *f.* la que, las que, }
 cuyo, cuyos, *f.* cuya, cuyas, *which, of which, whose.*
 tal . . . cual, *such . . . as.*
 tanto . . . cuanto, *as much, so much, many . . . as.*
 lo cual, *which, lo que, that which, what.*

NOTE. — *El*, in the above forms, being the article, is contracted with *de* and *á* into *del* and *al*. There are no other contractions.

91. *Que* is used for all genders and numbers and for both persons and things but not for persons when the relative is governed by a preposition:—

El hombre que corre.	The man who runs.
La mujer que viene.	The woman who comes.
La ciudad que es grande.	The city which is large.
Las casas que son altas.	The houses which are high.
Los hombres que aman.	The men whom they love.
La iglesia á que voy.	The church to which I go.
Las plumas de que hablo.	The pens of which I speak.

NOTE. — The relative in English, when the object of a verb, may be omitted, but in Spanish it must always be expressed: *el libro que leo, the book I am reading.*

92. *Quien* (pl. *quienes*) may be used,

1st. As a nominative, when both the principal and relative clause may be turned into independent clauses connected by *and*:—

Vino á mi casa un hombre, *quien* me lo dijo. There came to my house a man who told it to me.

Vino un hombre á mi casa y me lo dijo. A man came to my house and told it to me.

But —

¿Vive el hombre *que* no sea egoísta poco más ó menos? Is the man living who is not more or less selfish?

2d. When the relative refers to a person and is governed by a preposition : —

Es aquel hombre á *quien* debo 25 pesos. It is that man to whom I owe 25 dollars.

Aquí están las mujeres de *quienes* hablé. Here are the women of whom I spoke.

3d. In a compound sense embracing both antecedent and relative : —

Quien se bate y huye, vivirá para batirse otra vez. He who fights and runs will live to fight again.

No faltan quienes afirman lo contrario. There are not wanting those who affirm the contrary.

4th. In a partitive sense, meaning *some*, being marked in this case with the written accent : —

De repente se escondieron, *quiénes* bajo la mesa, *quiénes* detrás de la puerta. Suddenly they hid themselves, some under the table, some behind the door.

NOTE. — *Cuál* may also be used in this last sense, and it, as well as *quién*, may be either singular or plural.

93. *Quien*, though usually singular, is found as a relative to a plural antecedent : —

Los héroes á *quien* celebramos. The heroes whom we honor.
Los siete sabios á *quien* venera la Grecia. The seven wise men whom Greece venerates.

NOTE.—The grammars say that *quien* is no longer used of things, but the two following sentences are found as part of the text of the last edition of the *Gramática de la Real Academia Española*:—

La partícula <i>que</i> no se pospone nunca al nombre ó verbo á <i>quien</i> rige.	The particle <i>que</i> is never placed after the noun or verb which it governs.
Hay también nombres á <i>quienes</i> el uso ha dado ya verdadera significación de	There are also nouns to which usage has given the decided signification of

94. *El que* and *el cual*, used of both persons and things, enable the speaker to avoid a disagreeable repetition of other forms of the relative and likewise, by means of their inflection, to secure greater precision when the relative is separated from its antecedent:—

El Oquendo que salió del puerto y del que depende el éxito de la empresa.	The Oquendo, which went out of port and on which depends the success of the undertaking.
La pluma de mi hermano, la cual está en la mesa.	My brother's pen, which is on the table.
Mi tía dió dos tertulias en su quinta, á las cuales me convidó.	My aunt gave at her country seat two evening parties, to which she invited me.

95. *Cuyo*, whose, of which, agrees in gender and number with the noun by which it is limited:—

Aquel hombre cuyo nombre es sinónimo de honradez.	That man whose name is a synonym for integrity.
Los griegos cuyas arquitectura y escultura aun hoy quedan sin <i>rivales</i> .	The Greeks, whose architecture and sculpture remain even to-day without rivals.

96. *Tal . . . cual* and *tanto . . . cuanto*, as correlatives, find their place here : —

Tal es su conducta cual era de esperar.	His conduct is such as was to be expected.
Tendrá V. tantos honores cuantos quiera.	You will have as many honors as you may desire.

NOTE. — *Tanto* is frequently omitted, and *cuanto*, or *todo cuanto*, includes both antecedent and relative : —

Tenemos cuantos discípulos deseamos.	We have as many pupils as we desire.
Todo cuanto posee no bastará.	All that he owns will not suffice.

See also 28 and 28, a.

97. *Lo cual* and *lo que* never relate to a personal noun but represent a previous assertion or situation : —

Declaró que moriría antes, lo cual causó gran rumor en la sala.	He declared he would die first, which created a great stir in the hall.
Estamos rodeados por los sitiadores, lo que es muy peligroso.	We are surrounded by the besiegers, which is very dangerous.

98. *Donde*, like its English synonym, *where*, frequently takes the place of a relative governed by a preposition : —

La ciudad donde vivimos.	The city where (in which) we live.
El teatro á donde vamos.	The theatre to which we are going.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

- 99.** Quién, quiénes, *who?* qué, *what?* *what (a)?*
 Cuyo, cuyos, f. cuya, cuyas, } *whose?*
 De quién, pl. de quiénes, }

Cuál, pl. cuáles, *which? what?*

Qué tal, qué tales, *what kind of? how?*

Cuánto, pl. cuántos, *how much? how many?*

Qué tanto, *how, how much?*

NOTE. — Observe that the chief difference between the relatives and interrogatives is the written accent of the latter.

100. *Quién* is used only of persons:—

¿ Quién se lo ha dicho á V. ?	Who told it to you ?
¿ Quiénes son aquellos forasteros ?	Who are those strangers ?
¿ Sabe V. con quién vino ?	Do you know with whom he came ?

101. *Qué* is invariable and is used both as pronoun and adjective and for both numbers and genders:—

¿ Qué come usted ?	What are you eating ?
¿ Qué libros compró V. ?	What books did you buy ?
¿ Qué pluma quiere V. ?	What pen do you want ?
¿ Qué es geografía ?	What is geography ?

NOTE. — *Qué*, like *lo que* (see 89, 5th), is used in exclamatory sentences in the sense of *how, what, what a*:—

¡ Qué feliz soy yo !	How happy I am !
¡ Qué buen tiempo !	What fine weather !
¡ Qué casa más bonita !	What a most beautiful house !

REMARK. — When the noun is followed by an adjective, the latter may be strengthened by *tan*:—

¡ Qué asunto tan molesto !	What a (so) troublesome affair !
----------------------------	----------------------------------

102. *De quién* and *cuyo* are synonymous, except that the latter is limited by the noun and the former not. As an interrogative, *cuyo* is less frequently used than *de quién*:—

¿De quién es esta casa ?	}	Whose house is this ?
¿Cúya es esta casa ?		
¿Cúya casa es esta ?		
¿De cúyos poemas habla usted ?		Of whose poems do you speak ?

NOTE.—The answer must always correspond syntactically to the question. In replying to the above questions, we might say :—

Es de mi tío ; es mía.	It is my uncle's ; it is mine.
De los de Cadalso.	Of Cadalso's.

103. *Cuál* (pl. *cuáles*) seeks information about individuals of a class or number of persons or things specified, either actually or by implication. Consequently it is usually followed either by *de*, expressed or understood, or by the verb *to be*. It is also used adjectively:—

¿Cuál de los dos perros es de usted ?	Which of the two dogs is yours ?
¿Cuál es la hora de la siesta ?	What is the hour of the mid-day nap ?
¿Cuáles son sus primos ?	Which are his cousins ?
¿Cuál poesía prefiere usted ?	Whose poetry do you prefer ?
¿Qué poesía prefiere usted ?	What (kind of) poetry do you prefer ?
¿Cuál es la gramática ?	Which is the grammar ?
¿Qué es gramática ?	What is grammar ?
Dígame cuáles son.	Tell me which (ones) they are.

104. *Qué tal* is used adjectively and adverbially, as well as pronominally:—

¿Qué tal tiempo hace ?	What kind of weather is it ?
¿Qué tales son las muestras ?	What kind of samples are they ?
¿Qué tal sigue usted ?	How are you getting along ? (How are you ?)

105. *Cuánto* varies for gender and number and is used adjectively and pronominally. As an adverb, it is abbreviated to *cuán* before an adjective or adverb:—

¿Cuánto dinero perdió usted ?	How much money did you lose ?
¿Cuántos caballos compró él ?	How many horses did he buy ?
¿Cuánto costó á V. esa máquina ?	How much did that machine
— No recuerdo cuánto.	cost you ? I don't remem-
	ber how much.
¡ Cuán dichosa es ella !	How fortunate she is !
¡ Cuán airadamente se condujo !	How angrily he conducted
	himself !

106. *Qué tanto* is similar to *cuánto* in all its uses and variations and loses the final *to* under the same circumstances:—

¿Qué tanto se diferencia del otro ?	How much does it differ from
	the other one ?
¿Qué tantas deudas tiene ?	How many debts has he ?
Usted ignora qué tan airosa es	You don't know how graceful
la anciana.	the old lady is.

See also 101, Remark.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

107. Indefinite pronouns are so called because of their indeterminate or impersonal meaning. Being pronouns, strictly so called, they can not qualify nouns:—

alguien, <i>somebody</i> .	fulano, }	<i>such, such and</i>
algo, <i>something, somewhat</i> .	mengano, }	<i>such a one,</i>
cosa, <i>something, anything</i> .	zutano, }	<i>so and so.</i>
cada uno, }	nadie, <i>nobody, no one.</i>	
cada cual, }	quienquiera, <i>whoever.</i>	
nada, <i>nothing</i> .	uno, <i>one.</i>	

108. *Alguien*, somebody, is applied only to persons and can not be qualified or limited by an adjective or dependent genitive : —

Alguien llama ; vaya á abrir.	Somebody is knocking ; go open the door.
Es alguien que pide limosna.	It is some one who asks alms.

109. *Algo* and *cosa*, or *alguna cosa*, something, anything, differ but slightly in their use. *Algo* is used adverbially, and *cosa de* in the sense of *something like, about*. When *algo* is qualified by an adjective, it may be connected with it by means of the preposition *de* : —

Si quiere algo bueno.	If he desires something good.
¿Sabe V. algo de nuevo ?	Do you know anything new ?
Eso es cosa que hay que averiguar.	That is something which has to be investigated.
Mi madre está algo indisputa.	My mother is somewhat indisposed.
Creo que costará cosa de veinte duros.	I think it will cost something like twenty dollars.

110. *Cada uno* and *cada cual*, every one, each one, differ only in that the former varies for the feminine, but neither can be used in the plural : —

Cada uno tiene su manera de matar pulgas.	Every one has his own way to (kill fleas) do things.
Cada cual es digno de su salario.	Each one is worthy of his hire.
Cada una de las niñas dió su blanca.	Each one of the little girls gave her mite.

111. *Nada, ninguna cosa*, nothing, not anything, have these meanings only when standing alone or before the

word they modify. When the verb is accompanied by *no*, they have a positive meaning. This is true of other Spanish negatives. In fact, their corresponding positive forms, except *alguno*, can not be used in a negative sentence. Even with *alguno* the noun must be expressed. The adjective with *nada* may be preceded by *de*:—

Contestó que nada sabía más.	He replied that he knew nothing more.
No tiene nada de invidiable una vida sin contrastes.	A life without contrasts has nothing enviable.
¿Qué ha vendido usted?—Nada.	What have you sold?—Nothing.
Este pacto no obliga en modo alguno á Rusia.	This compact does not oblige Russia in any way.
Han llegado noticias nada favorables al gobierno.	News not at all favorable to the government has arrived.

a. Nada, in the sense of *anything*, is used in sentences where the negation is merely implied. This occurs particularly after *sin (que)*, *antes (que)*, after comparatives, and after certain verbs, such as *negar*, to deny, *rehusar*, to refuse, *guardarse*, to beware, etc., and when a negative answer is expected to a question:—

Salió sin responder nada.	He went out without replying in any way.
Antes que hubo oído nada que yo decía.	Before he had heard anything I was saying.
Es más gustoso que nada que ha sido exhibido.	It is more enjoyable than anything that has been exhibited.
Negarle nada sería inútil.	To deny him anything would be useless.
¿Quién hubiera imaginado nada tan disparatado?	Who could have imagined anything so silly?

b. Nada and *en nada*, as more emphatic, take the place of the simple negative *no*, when desirable : —

Nada me gustan sus modales.	His manners don't please me at all.
Todo eso en nada altera su fría indiferencia.	All that does not change in any way his cool indifference.

112. *Fulano* (or *fulano de tal*), *zutano* and *mengano* serve to designate persons whose names are either unknown or intentionally suppressed. They generally occur in the order given, according as one, two, or more persons are intended. The forms vary for gender, but have no plural : —

Fulano (de tal) me lo ha dicho.	So-and-so told it to me.
He oído decir que Don Fulano se casó ayer con la Señorita Zutana.	I have heard that Mr. So-and-so married Miss So-and-so yesterday.
¿Piensa V. que yo crea todo lo que me dicen fulano, zutano y mengano?	Do you think that I believe everything that Tom, Dick and Harry tell me?

NOTE. — A fourth form, *perengano*, -a, is sometimes heard, and in Spanish America *parencejo* is very common.

113. *Nadie*, nobody, differs but slightly in its syntax from *nada* (see **111** and **111**, *a*). It is invariable in form and applicable only to persons. Like *alguien*, its opposite, it can not be limited by *de* and a following noun : —

Nadie lo sabe mejor que él.	No one knows it better than he.
No encuentro á nadie que pueda hacerlo.	I do not find any one who is able to do it.
¿Quién quiere ayudarme? — Nadie.	Who is willing to aid me? Nobody.

a. See 111, a for analogous constructions with *nada* : —

Se fué antes de hablar á nadie.	He went away before speaking to any one.
Me lo dió sin que yo tuviera que pedirlo á nadie.	He gave it to me without my having to ask any one for it.
Vende sus géneros á precios más bajos que nadie.	He sells his goods at lower prices than any one.
Es la casa más bonita que nadie pueda imaginarse.	It is the prettiest house that one can imagine.
¿Yo rehusar nada á nadie?	I refuse anybody anything?
¿Quién pudiera amar á nadie más que yo á ella?	Who could love any one more than I do her?

114. *Quienquiera*, whoever, any one soever, applies to persons only and is rarely used in the plural, *quienesquiera*, or in the shortened form, *quienquier* : —

Quienquiera que lo diga, se equivoca.	Whoever says so is mistaken.
Á quienquiera que vea V., dígale que venga.	Whomsoever you see, tell him to come.

NOTE. — For *quien* used indefinitely, see 92, 3d.

115. *Uno, una*, one, is more personal than the corresponding words in other languages (Germ. *man*, Fr. *on*), and is consequently not so much used, other expressions taking its place. In the present restricted sense it has no plural : —

Cuando uno no tiene nada que hacer, ¿cómo se puede ser feliz?	When one has nothing to do, how is it possible to be happy?
Y entonces una se acalora y pierde la cabeza.	And then one gets hot and loses her head.

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES

116. The indefinite adjectives differ syntactically from the pronouns in that, while they may be used as pronouns, they also exercise all the functions of true adjectives, agreeing in gender and number with the nouns they limit.

Ajeno, *another's, other people's.*

Alguno, *some, some one.*

Ambos, *both.*

Cada, *each, every.*

Cierto, *a certain, certain.*

Cualquiera, *whichever, whatever.*

Cuanto, *as much, as many.*

Mismo, *same, self.*

Mucho, *much, many.*

Ninguno, *none, no, no one.*

Otro, *other, another.*

Poco, *little, few.*

Sendos, *one each, as many.*

Tal, *such, such a.*

Tamaño, *as much, great.*

Todo, *all, every.*

Uno y otro, *both.*

Único, solo, *only, alone.*

117. *Ajeno* is an adjective indicating *what belongs to another, foreign to* (to = *de or á*):—

No codiciarás los bienes ajenos.

Á menudo los asuntos ajenos nos interesan más que los nuestros propios.

Ajeno al asunto.

Eso es ajeno de la cuestión que discutimos.

No tendrás dioses ajenos delante de mí.

Por causas ajenas á mi voluntad.

Thou shalt not covet other people's goods.

Often other people's affairs interest us more than our own.

Foreign to the subject.

That is foreign to the question we are discussing.

Thou shalt have none other gods but me.

For reasons foreign to my wish.

118. *Alguno*, as a pronoun, has the same meaning as *alguien* (see 108), but unlike *alguien* may be limited by a

following noun preceded by *de*. As an adjective it means *some, a few* and, in this sense, may be replaced in the plural by *unos* or *unos cuantos* : —

¿ Ha llegado alguno?	Has any one arrived?
Algunas de sus palabras no llegaron á mí.	Some of his words did not reach me.
¿ Tiene V. algunos lápices?—Sí, unos cuantos.	Have you any pencils? Yes, a few.

See also 111.

119. *Ambos, -as*, both, have as substitutes *los dos, entrambos, ambos á dos* and *entrambos á dos* : —

Apoyó ambos codos en la mesa.	He rested both elbows on the table.
Ambas á dos la sacaron del agua.	Between the two they pulled her out of the water.

120. *Cada*, each, every, is an adjective of one termination. Like its English equivalents it can be used in the plural only before numbers : —

Cada mes me envía mi padre veinte pesos.	Every month my father sends me twenty dollars.
Cada diez años se hace el censo en los Estados Unidos.	Every ten years the census is taken in the United States.
Cada oveja con su pareja.	Every Jack has his Jill.

121. *Cierto, -a*, a certain, pl. *ciertos, -as*, certain, has this meaning of indefiniteness only when it precedes the noun. Standing after the noun or after the verb *to be*, it means *sure, reliable*. In the former sense it is never preceded by the indefinite article, but the latter may take its place : —

Cierto amigo mío viene á verme ciertos días de cada semana.	A certain friend of mine comes to see me certain days each week.
Plantó un hombre una viña. See 37.	A certain man planted a vine- yard.

122. *Cualquiera*, pl. *cualesquiera*, whatever, any soever, has but one termination for gender. It loses its final *a* when immediately before the noun it limits. The full form may stand after the noun, but only in the singular:—

Cualquier comida es mejor que ninguna.	Any dinner whatsoever is better than none.
Un libro cualquiera me bastará.	Any book soever will suffice me.
Cualesquiera de los libros que V. halle, envíemelos.	Whichever of the books you may find, send them to me.

123. *Cuanto* and *todo cuanto*, as much, many, all that, vary throughout for gender and number. For examples see 28, *a*, and 96, Note.

124. *Mismo*, self, same, very, has a superlative *mismísimo*, the very same. When preceded by the indefinite article, *mismo* means *similar*:—

Raras veces en dos idiomas distintos tienen las mismas palabras el mismo significado.	Rarely in two different languages do the same words have the same meaning.
Los mismos amigos del preso admiten su delito.	The very friends of the prisoner admit his guilt.
Cometió otra vez el mismísimo crimen.	He committed again the very same crime.
Tienen que hacer un mismo deber.	They have a similar duty to perform.
Á mí me ha dicho lo mismo.	He told me the same thing.

NOTE. — For *mismo* meaning *self*, see examples under 53.

125. *Mucho*, much, many, is rarely modified by *muy*, very, but has the superlative *muchísimo*, very much, many.

Mucho ruido y pocas nueces.	Much ado about nothing (lit. much noise and few nuts).
El despotismo de los pocos sobre los muchos.	The despotism of the few over the many.
Tengo mucho que hacer.	I have much to do.
Me relató muchísimos ejemplos de su caridad.	He related to me a great many instances of her charity.

126. *Ninguno*, nobody, no one, none, no, like all other Spanish negatives, has a positive meaning, unless it is the second member of a comparison, stands before the verb, or the verb is negated by *no* or some other word. For an explanation and illustrations of this principle, see **111**, **111, a**, and **113**:—

No entiende ninguna palabra.	He does not understand a word.
Ningunos de mis amigos han venido.	None of my friends have come.
Un libro cualquiera es mejor que ningún libro.	Any book is better than no book.
El hombre huye el ser esclavo de ninguno y concluye por ser esclavo de sí mismo.	Man shuns becoming a slave of any one and ends by becoming a slave of himself.
Arribó al puerto sin ningún accidente.	She [the ship] arrived at the port without any accident.

See **25**.

a. *Alguno que otro* is possibly a little more indefinite than the simple *alguno*:—

Lo haré alguno que otro día.	I shall do it some day or other.
Por supuesto vendrán algunas que otras.	Of course, some or others (of them) will come.

127. *Otro*, another, other, differs from the English, in that it does not take the indefinite article *uno* : —

Comió dos manzanas y se le dió otra.	He ate two apples and another was given him.
Otros tiempos, otras costumbres.	Other times, other manners.
No vino el primer día, el otro sí.	He did not come the first day, the other (day) he did.

a. Los, las, lo demás may take the place of *los otros*, etc., in the sense of *the rest, the remainder* : —

Los demás carecen de todo valor.	The rest are lacking in value of any kind.
Déme V. lo demás.	Give me the remainder of it.

NOTE. — The article may be omitted, and *demás* is then equivalent to *otros* : —

Guérin y demás corifeos del anti-semitismo.	Guérin and other leaders of anti-semitism.
---	--

b. Otro tanto, just as much, as much again, pl. *otros tantos*, just as many, as many more : —

Eso no le basta ; necesitará otro tanto.	That is not enough for him ; he will need as much more.
Compraremos otros tantos mañana.	We shall buy as many more to-morrow.

128. *Poco*, little, few, has a superlative *poquísimo*, a very little, few, but may also be modified by *muy*, very : —

Lo poco que recibo me satisface.	The little that I receive satisfies me.
Muchos son llamados, mas pocos escogidos.	Many are called, but few are chosen.
Hay muy poca diferencia.	There is very little difference.
Las poquísimas veces que lo he visto.	The very few times I have seen him.

Déle V. un poco de pan y carne.	Give him a little bread and meat.
Canta un poco ; canta poco.	She sings a little ; she sings but little.

129. *Sendos, -as*, one each, as many, is used only in the plural : —

Entraron cinco jóvenes llevando del brazo á sendas jóvenes.	There came in five young men each having on his arm a young lady.
---	---

130. *Tal*, pl. *tales*, such a, such : —

Tal cosa jamás me hubiera ocurrido.	Such a thing never would have occurred to me.
Tales son sus pretensiones que las rechazo todas.	Such are his claims that I reject them all.
No son tales como se me han prometido.	They are not such as were promised me.
Tal me parece difícil.	Such a thing seems to me difficult.

a. Tal, when preceded by the definite article, may be variously rendered by *this, the said, in question*, frequently with an added idea of satire or contempt : —

Sólo sabía de la tal carta por los periódicos.	He only knew of the so-called letter by the newspapers.
Y el tal Sancho quería ser gobernador de una isla.	And the said Sancho wished to be governor of an island.

NOTE. — *Tal* alone sometimes conveys the same meaning : —

Repuso ella furiosa que no era tal mujer.	Furious she replied that she was not that kind of a woman.
Salió á luz la parte que tomó tal espía en el asunto.	The part which this rascally spy took in the affair came to light.

b. Tal, when preceded by the indefinite article, means *one, a certain*:—

Se prendió fuego á la casa de un tal Martin.	Fire broke out in the house of one Martin.
---	---

c. Tal, joined to its correlative *cual*, sometimes expresses a comparison, but at other times no such idea is implied:—

El éxito de la empresa ha sido tal cual deseaba.	The success of the undertaking has been such as he desired.
Tal cual vez no viene.	Sometimes he does not come.
Tal cual carga de pan.	A few loads of bread.
Tal para cual.	A Roland for an Oliver (Tit for tat).

131. *Tamaño*, as great, so great:—

Tamaña resultaría la empresa de hacer frente á las fuerzas de Francia.	The attempt to face the forces of France would be just as great.
--	--

132. *Todo, -a, -os, -as*, may, for the most part, be treated under two general headings:—

1st. It stands alone unlimited by such words as the definite article or the demonstrative or possessive adjectives, whenever the idea is an indefinite or general concept:—

Todo buen ciudadano lo siente.	Every good citizen regrets it.
En todo caso es muy impro- bable.	In any case it is very improb- able.
Hay intrigas de todo género.	There are all kinds of intrigues.
Todo libro que instruye es buen libro.	Every instructive book is a good book.
Todos piensan como yo.	All think as I do.
Géneros de todas clases y á todos precios. -	Goods of all kinds and at all prices.
El león comió todo un carnero.	The lion ate a whole sheep.

2d. *Todo* is followed by a word limiting its application to a specific concept : —

Quedé en Europa todo el año.	I remained in Europe the whole year.
Pasó conmigo toda la semana.	He passed with me the whole week.
Hé aquí todos mis libros.	Here are all my books.
Salgo á paseo todos los días.	I go out to walk every day.
Da una lección de música todos los viernes.	She takes a music lesson every Friday.
Todo el mundo.	Everybody.

NOTE. — In the plural, *whole* or *entire* is never expressed by *todo*, but by *entero*. In the singular either may be used : —

Pasa horas enteras asomada á la ventana.	She passes whole hours looking out of the window.
El día entero <i>or</i> todo el día.	The entire day.

a. The neuter *todo*, except as an adverb, can not stand alone in a sentence, but requires an appositive (generally *lo*) always to be expressed : —

Me lo ha dicho todo.	He has told me all.
Todo lo que digo es verdad.	All I say is true.

133. *Uno*, *-a*, and *otro*, *-a*, with their plurals, are used as distributives in various combinations : —

Uno y otro lo hacen.	Both of them do so.
Ni uno ni otro lo dicen.	Neither of them says so.
El uno dice que sí, el otro que no.	The one says yes, the other no.
Uno ú otro ; unos ú otros.	Either of the two ; either of the two sets.

134. Único, solo. The general distinction is that *único* refers to individuals, where there are no more of their kind, while *solo* means *alone, solitary, without company* :—

Mi hijo único está solo en la casa.	My only son is alone in the house.
-------------------------------------	------------------------------------

Vivir honrado y morir lamentado, estos son sus únicos deseos.	To live honored and to die lamented, these are his only desires.
---	--

Es el único de su especie.	It is the only one of its kind.
----------------------------	---------------------------------

VI

VERBS

135. The Spanish language has all the moods and tenses of the English and some which English does not have. This comes chiefly from the fact that we have almost wholly abandoned the use of the subjunctive. The multiplicity of forms of the Spanish conjugation may seem a little discouraging to the learner at first, but he will soon find that they are very easily acquired, when once he has mastered certain mnemonic rules for the derivation of the various moods and tenses. These will be given when we come to the conjugation of the regular verbs.

a. The English meanings of the Spanish moods and tenses can be given only approximately in the paradigms. This is especially true of the subjunctive, owing, as has already been said, to the almost total lack of this mood in our language. The particular form of the English verb to be used, in translating any given Spanish verb, will depend on the context of the latter and its syntactical relations. Canto, for instance, means *I sing, I do sing, I am singing*; Cantaba, *I sang, I was singing, I did sing, or I used to sing*; No creo que venga, *I don't think he will come*; Es posible que venga, *It is possible he may come*; No es posible que venga, *It is not possible that he will come*, etc. The translation given in the paradigms, therefore, must be considered as only one of several that the verb might have according to its connection.

b. As the pronouns *yo, I, tú, thou, él, he, ella, she, noso-*

tros, -as, we, vosotros, -as, you, ellos, m., they, ellas, f., they, are usually omitted, except where emphasis or clearness requires them to be expressed, they are only given in the present tenses. They can be easily supplied with the other tenses when needed. On the other hand, *usted* (V.), you and pl. *ustedes* (VV.), you, being so commonly used will be given.

c. There are two verbs *to have, haber* and *tener*, and two verbs *to be, ser* and *estar*. Their differences will be explained later.

AUXILIARY VERBS

SIMPLE TENSES

136.

Infinitive Mood

<i>To have</i>		<i>To be</i>	
Haber	tener	Ser	estar
Gerund			
<i>Having</i>		<i>Being</i>	
Habiendo	teniendo	Siendo	estando
Past Participle			
<i>Had</i>		<i>Been</i>	
Habido	tenido	Sido	estado

Indicative Mood

PRESENT

<i>I have, thou hast, etc.</i>		<i>I am, thou art, etc.</i>	
1. yo he	tengo	soy	estoy
2. tú has	tienes	eres	estás
2. usted ha	V. tiene	V. es	V. está
3. él, ella ha	tiene	es	está
1. nosotros hemos	tenemos	somos	estamos
(habemos)			
2. vosotros habéis	tenéis	sois	estáis
2. ustedes han	VV. tienen	VV. son	VV. están
3. ellos, -as han	tienen	son	están

IMPERFECT

I had, was having, etc.

1. había	tenía
2. habías	tenías
2. V. había	V. tenía
3. había	tenía
1. habíamos	teníamos
2. habíais	teníais
2. VV. habían	VV. tenían
3. habían	tenían

I was, used to be, etc.

era	estaba
eras	estabas
V. era	V. estaba
era	estaba
éramos	estábamos
erais	estabais
VV. eran	VV. estaban
eran	estaban

PRETERIT

I had

1. hube	tuve
2. hubiste	tuviste
2. V. hubo	V. tuvo
3. hubo	tuvo
1. hubimos	tuvimos
2. hubisteis	tuvisteis
2. VV. hubieron	VV. tuvieron
3. hubieron	tuvieron

I was

fuí	estuve
fuiste	estuviste
V. fué	V. estuvo
fué	estuvo
fuimos	estuvimos
fuisteis	estuvisteis
VV. fueron	VV. estuvieron
fueron	estuvieron

FUTURE

I shall (will) have

1. habré	tendré
2. habrás	tendrás
2. V. habrá	V. tendrá
3. habrá	tendrá
1. habremos	tendremos
2. habréis	tendréis
2. VV. habrán	VV. tendrán
3. habrán	tendrán

I shall (will) be

seré	estaré
serás	estarás
V. será	V. estará
será	estará
seremos	estaremos
seréis	estaréis
VV. serán	VV. estarán
serán	estarán

CONDITIONAL

<i>I would (should) have</i>		<i>I would (should) be</i>	
1. habría	tendría	sería	estaría
2. habrías	tendrías	serías	estarías
2. V. habría	V. tendría	V. sería	V. estaría
3. habría	tendría	sería	estaría
1. habríamos	tendríamos	seríamos	estaríamos
2. habríais	tendríais	seríais	estaríais
2. VV. habrían	VV. tendrían	VV. serían	VV. estarían
3. habrían	tendrían	serían	estarían

Imperative Mood

<i>Let me have, etc.</i>		<i>Let me be, etc.</i>	
1. let me have	(tenga yo) ¹	(sea)	(esté)
2. have (thou)	ten tú	sé	está
2. have (thou) not	no tengas	no seas	no estés
2. have (you)	tenga V.	sea V.	esté V.
3. let him have	tenga él	sea él	esté él
1. let us have	tengamos	seamos	estemos
2. have ye	tened	sed	estad
2. have ye not	no tengáis	no seáis	no estéis
2. have (you)	tengan VV.	sean VV.	estén VV.
3. let them have	tengan	sean	estén

NOTE. — The imperative of *haber* is : *he tú, haya él, V., hayamos, habed, hayan ellos, VV.*, but it hardly can be said to be in use. See also 150, NOTE.

¹ Of the first person singular of the imperative of Spanish verbs it should be stated that it occurs very seldom, and being the same as the first person of the subjunctive, it need not be given as a special form. It is used in general statements not addressed to any one as a command, as : —

Ande yo caliente y ríase la gente.

Let me be (go) warm, and people may laugh.

Conserve yo la vida y muera mi enemigo.

Let me preserve my life and let my enemy die.

Subjunctive Mood**PRESENT**

<i>I may have</i>		<i>I may be</i>	
1. haya	tenga	sea	esté
2. hayas	tengas	seas	estés
2. V. haya	V. tenga	V. sea	V. esté
3. haya	tenga	sea	esté
1. hayamos	tengamos	seamos	estemos
2. hayáis	tengáis	seáis	estéis
2. VV. hayan	VV. tengan	VV. sean	VV. estén
3. hayan	tengan	sean	estén

IMPERFECT. — FIRST FORM

<i>I would have</i>		<i>I would be</i>	
1. hubiera	tuviera	fuera	estuviera
2. hubieras	tuvieras	fueras	estuvieras
2. V. hubiera	V. tuviera	V. fuera	V. estuviera
3. hubiera	tuviera	fuera	estuviera
1. hubiéramos	tuviéramos	fuéramos	estuviéramos
2. hubierais	tuvierais	fuerais	estuvierais
2. VV. hubieran	VV. tuvieran	VV. fueran	VV. estuvieran
3. hubieran	tuvieran	fueran	estuvieran

IMPERFECT. — SECOND FORM

<i>I should have</i>		<i>I should be</i>	
1. hubiese	tuviese	fuese	estuviese
2. hubieses	tuvieses	fueses	estuvieses
2. V. hubiese	V. tuviese	V. fuese	V. estuviese
3. hubiese	tuviese	fuese	estuviese
1. hubiésemos	tuviésemos	fuésemos	estuviésemos
2. hubieseis	tuvieseis	fueseis	estuvieseis
2. VV. hubiesen	VV. tuviesen	VV. fuesen	VV. estuviesen
3. hubiesen	tuviesen	fuesen	estuviesen

FUTURE

I shall have

1. hubiere	tuviere
2. hubieres	tuvieres
2. V. hubiere	V. tuviere
3. hubiere	tuviere
1. hubiéremos	tuviéremos
2. hubiereis	tuviereis
2. VV. hubieren	tuvieren
3. hubieren	tuvieren

I shall be

fuere	estuviere.
fueres	estuvieres
V. fuere	V. estuviere
fuere	estuviere
fuéremos	estuviéremos
fuereis	estuviereis
VV. fueren	VV. estuvieren
fueren	estuvieren

COMPOUND TENSES

Infinitive

To have had

haber	{ habido
	{ tenido

To have been

haber	{ sido
	{ estado

Gerund

Having had

habiendo	{ habido
	{ tenido

Having been

habiendo	{ sido
	{ estado

Indicative

REMARK. — As the compound tenses are formed by adding the past participle of the respective verbs to the simple tenses of *haber*, only the first person singular of each compound tense will be here given. The learner can turn back and get the others for himself.

PERFECT

I have had

he	{ habido
	{ tenido

I have been

he	{ sido
	{ estado

PLUPERFECT

I had had

había	{ habido
	{ tenido

I had been

había	{ sido
	{ estado

PAST ANTERIOR

*When I had had*cuando hube { habido
 { tenido*When I had been*cuando hube { sido
 { estado

FUTURE PERFECT

*I shall have had*habré { habido
 { tenido*I shall have been*habré { sido
 { estado

CONDITIONAL PERFECT

*I might (would) have had*habría { habido
 { tenido*I might (would) have been*habría { sido
 { estado

Subjunctive

PERFECT

*I may have had*haya { habido
 { tenido*I may have been*haya { sido
 { estado

PLUPERFECT. — FIRST FORM

*I might have had*hubiera { habido
 { tenido*I might have been*hubiera { sido
 { estado

PLUPERFECT. — SECOND FORM

*I might have had*hubiese { habido
 { tenido*I might have been*hubiese { sido
 { estado

FUTURE PERFECT

*I shall (should) have had*hubiere { habido
 { tenido*I shall (should) have been*hubiere { sido
 { estado

NOTE. — Verbs are made negative by placing *no*, or some other negative, before them (see 237), and interrogative by inverting the order of the subject and predicate as in English : —

Creo que no vendrá.	I believe he will not come.
¿ Ha llegado mi hermano ?	Has my brother arrived ?
Nunca lo aceptaré yo.	I will never accept it.
No se le ocurre jamás.	It never occurs to him.

USES OF *haber*, *tener*, *ser*, *estar*

137. The principal office of *haber* is that of an auxiliary to form the compound tenses of other verbs, as illustrated above. The participle in such compounds never changes its form. Other uses are : —

a. As an independent verb, followed by *de* and an infinitive, to express *futurity*, *duty*, *obligation* : —

He de escribir una carta.	I have to write a letter.
Hemos de salir esta mañana.	We are to go out this morning.
Habría de ser muy docto.	He must have been very learned.
Habrá de cantar.	He will have to sing.

b. The third person singular throughout all moods and tenses is used as an impersonal verb,

i. In expressions of time and some others : —

Sí, le vi no há mucho tiempo.	Yes, I saw him not long ago.
¿ Cuánto há que vino aquí ?	How long ago is it since he came here ?
Há lugar de creerlo.	There is reason for believing so.
Há menester más brazos.	More hands are needed.

2. With *que* and an infinitive, to imply a general idea of *necessity* or *obligation*. In this and the following impersonal uses, *y* (there) is added to the present indicative, making *hay*:—

Eso es lo que hay que notar.	That is what has to be noted.
Habr� que tener presente.	It will be necessary to keep in mind.

3. In the sense of *there is, there are*:—

Hay cientos de hombres en la calle.	There are hundreds of men in the street.
Habr� bastante tiempo.	There would be time enough.

4. In speaking of distances:—

� Cu�nto hay de aqu� � Boston?	How far is it from here to Boston?
Hay m�s de treinta millas.	It is more than thirty miles.

c. While *haber* is no longer used with the general meaning of *to hold, to possess*, there are certain relics of its former use:—

Consejo habido, anunciamos nuestra pol�tica.	A council having been held, we announced our policy.
Nuestro pobre amigo (� que Dios haya !)	Our poor friend (whom may God have !)
All� se las haya.	Let him look to that.

d. In the exclamations *  aqu * (here is, are), *  all * (there is, are), *  ah * (there is, are), the grammars usually treat * * as part of *haber*. *Diez*, however, derives it from *vide* (= *ve* = *fe* = *he*). This would seem to be probable from the analogous French words, *voici, voil *:—

H� aqu� mi libro ; t�melo.	Here is my book ; take it.
H�me aqu� ; h�le ah�.	Here I am ; there he is.
H�los all� que vienen.	There they are, coming.

138. *Tener*, to hold, to possess, to have, has the following uses:—

1. In its primary meaning:—

Tengo una pluma en la mano.	I hold a pen in my hand.
V. tendrá mañana cuanto quiera.	You will have to-morrow as much as you will want.
No tuvo éxito alguno.	He did not have any success.

2. Idiomatically with certain nouns, where we should use the verb *to be* and the adjective:—

Tener hambre, to have hunger, hence, to be hungry.

" <i>sed</i> ,	"	thirst,	"	"	thirsty.
" <i>miedo</i> ,	"	fear,	"	"	afraid.
" <i>sueño</i> ,	"	sleep,	"	"	sleepy.
" <i>frio</i> ,	"	cold,	"	"	cold.
" <i>calor</i> ,	"	heat,	"	"	warm.
" <i>vergüenza</i> ,	"	shame,	"	"	ashamed.
" <i>razón</i> ,	"	reason,	"	"	right.

No tener razón, not to have reason, hence, to be wrong.

3. With *que* and an infinitive to express *duty* or *obligation*:—

Tengo que estudiar mi lección.	I have to study my lesson.
Tuvo que volver á casa.	He had to return home.

NOTE.—*Que*, however, in such connections, frequently means *something*, *anything*:—

¿Tiene V. qué comer?—No, no	Have you anything to eat?
tengo (nada) qué comer.	—No, I have nothing to eat.

4. As an auxiliary to form the compound tenses of transitive verbs, especially in cases where we should put the participle after the object. Unlike *haber*, the participle agrees with the object in gender and number:—

Tengo escritas dos cartas.	I have two letters written.
Tiene cumplido su deber.	He has done his duty.

But—

He escrito dos cartas.	I have written two letters.
------------------------	-----------------------------

NOTE.—*Llevar*, to carry, and *dejar*, to leave (and some others), are also used as auxiliaries, the past participle, as in the case of *tener*, agreeing with the object:—

Lleva acabada su tarea.	He has finished his task.
Dejaron dicho que vendrian esta mañana.	They left word they would come this morning.

139. *Ser* predicates in the subject what is *permanent, characteristic, essential*, while *estar*, from the Latin *stare* (to stand), indicates *position, state, condition*, what is *transitory, changeable*, etc. A few sentences will help to make the distinction clear:—

La casa está en la colina.	The house is on the hill.
La casa es alta.	The house is high.
El hierro está caliente.	The iron is hot.
El hierro es duro.	Iron is hard.
La sopa es buena.	The soup is good.
La sopa está fría.	The soup is cold.
Mi hermano es listo.	My brother is clever.
Mi hermano está listo.	My brother is ready.
Juan está malo.	John is (in a bad way) sick.
Juan es malo.	John is wicked, bad.

a. De following *estar* indicates occupation, *para*, readiness, and *por*, futurity:—

El soldado está de servicio.	The soldier is on duty.
Estoy para irme.	I am ready to go.
Está por hacer.	It is yet to be done.

NOTE.—See 146, 147, and 148.

140. It has been seen (135, *a*) that the Spanish verb may be turned into English by one of several forms, *canto* meaning: I sing, I do sing, or I am singing. This latter, the progressive form, may be expressed by *estar* and the gerund:—

Ella está cantando una balada.	She is singing a ballad.
Estuvieron combatiendo toda la noche.	They were fighting the whole night.
Estaré entonces cruzando la mar.	I shall then be crossing the sea.

a. **Venir**, to come, and **seguir**, to follow, to continue, are used somewhat in the same way:—

Todo lo que vengo diciendo es verdad.	All that I have been saying is true.
Hace diez años que viene trabajando en mi casa.	It is now ten years that he has been working in my house.
Sigo aún buscando mi libro.	I am still looking for my book.

See 215, *a*.

REGULAR VERBS

141. There are three conjugations of regular verbs. The infinitive of the first conjugation ends in **-ar**, as **amar**, to love; that of the second, in **-er**, as **temer**, to fear; and that of the third, in **-ir**, as **vivir**, to live.

When learning a verb, fix in the mind the following parts, which will serve as a mnemonic key to the whole conjugation:—

1. The first person singular of the present indicative.
2. The present infinitive.
3. The first person singular and third person plural of the preterit.
4. The past participle.

142. <i>P. Ind.</i> amo,	<i>Inf.</i> amar,	<i>Pret.</i> amé,	<i>P. Part.</i> amado.
“ temo,	“ temer,	“ temí,	“ temido.
“ vivo,	“ vivir,	“ viví,	“ vivido.

Gerunds: amando, temiendo, viviendo.

SIMPLE TENSES

Indicative Mood

PRESENT

FIRST CONJUGATION	SECOND CONJUGATION	THIRD CONJUGATION
<i>I love, thou lovest, etc.</i>	<i>I fear, thou fearest, etc.</i>	<i>I live, thou livest, etc.</i>
yo am-o	tem-o	viv-o
tú am-as	tem-es	viv-es
usted am-a	V. tem-e	V. viv-e
él am-a	tem-e	viv-e
nosotros am-amos	tem-emos	viv-imos
vosotros am-áis	tem-éis	viv-ís
ustedes am-an	VV. tem-en	VV. viv-en
ellos am-an	tem-en	viv-en

IMPERFECT

I loved, feared, lived; was loving, fearing, living; used to love, fear, live (135, a)

am-aba	tem-ía	viv-ía
am-abas	tem-ías	viv-ías
V. am-aba	V. tem-ía	V. viv-ía
am-aba	tem-ía	viv-ía
am-ábamos	tem-íamos	viv-íamos
am-abais	tem-íais	viv-íais
VV. am-aban	VV. tem-ían	VV. viv-ían
am-aban	tem-ían	viv-ían

<i>P. Ind.</i> I love,	<i>Inf.</i> to love,	<i>Pret.</i> I loved,	<i>P. Part.</i> loved.
“ I fear,	“ to fear,	“ I feared,	“ feared.
“ I live,	“ to live,	“ I lived,	“ lived.

Gerunds: loving, fearing, living.

Imperative Mood

FIRST CONJUGATION	SECOND CONJUGATION	THIRD CONJUGATION
<i>Let me love, etc.</i>	<i>Let me fear, etc.</i>	<i>Let me live, etc.</i>
am-e yo	tem-a yo	viv-a yo
am-a tú	tem-e tú	viv-e tú
no am-es *	no tem-as *	no viv-as *
am-e V., él	tem-a V., él	viv-a V., él
am-emos '	tem-amos	viv-amos
am-ad	tem-ed	viv-id
no am-éis *	no tem-áis *	no viv-áis *
am-en VV., ellos	tem-an VV., ellos	viv-an VV., ellos

Subjunctive Mood

PRESENT

<i>I may love</i>	<i>I may fear</i>	<i>I may live</i>
am-e	tem-a	viv-a
am-es	tem-as	viv-as
V. am-e	V. tem-a	V. viv-a
am-e	tem-a	viv-a
am-emos	tem-amos	viv-amos
am-éis	tem-áis	viv-áis
VV. am-en	VV. tem-an	VV. viv-an
am-en	tem-an	viv-an

* See 150, Note.

PRETERIT

I loved

am-é
 am-aste
 V. am-ó
 am-ó
 am-amos
 am-asteis
 VV. ama-ron
 ama-ron

I feared

tem-í
 tem-iste
 V. tem-ió
 tem-ió
 tem-imos
 tem-isteis
 VV. temie-ron
 temie-ron

I lived

viv-í
 viv-iste
 V. viv-ió
 viv-ió
 viv-imos
 viv-isteis
 VV. vivie-ron
 vivie-ron

FUTURE

I shall (will) love

amar-é
 amar-ás
 V. amar-á
 amar-á
 amar-emos
 amar-éis
 VV. amar-án
 amar-án

I shall (will) fear

temer-é
 temer-ás
 V. temer-á
 temer-á
 temer-emos
 temer-éis
 VV. temer-án
 temer-án

I shall (will) live

vivir-é
 vivir-ás
 V. vivir-á
 vivir-á
 vivir-emos
 vivir-éis
 VV. vivir-án
 vivir-án

CONDITIONAL

*I would (should)
love*

amar-ía
 amar-ías
 V. amar-ía
 amar-ía
 amar-íamos
 amar-íais
 VV. amar-ían
 amar-ían

*I would (should)
fear*

temer-ía
 temer-ías
 V. temer-ía
 temer-ía
 temer-íamos
 temer-íais
 VV. temer-ían
 temer-ían

*I would (should)
live*

vivir-ía
 vivir-ías
 V. vivir-ía
 vivir-ía
 vivir-íamos
 vivir-íais
 VV. vivir-ían
 vivir-ían

IMPERFECT — FIRST FORM

<i>I should (would)</i> <i>love</i>	<i>I should (would)</i> <i>fear</i>	<i>I should (would)</i> <i>live</i>
ama-ra	temie-ra	vivie-ra
ama-ras	temie-ras	vivie-ras
V. ama-ra	V. temie-ra	V. vivie-ra
ama-ra	temie-ra	vivie-ra
amá-ramos	temié-ramos	vivié-ramos
ama-raís	temie-raís	vivie-raís
VV. ama-ran	VV. temie-ran	VV. vivie-ran
ama-ran	temie-ran	vivie-ran

IMPERFECT — SECOND FORM

<i>I should (would)</i> <i>love</i>	<i>I should (would)</i> <i>fear</i>	<i>I should (would)</i> <i>live</i>
ama-se	temie-se	vivie-se
amá-ses	temie-ses	vivie-ses
V. ama-se	V. temie-se	V. vivie-se
ama-se	temie-se	vivie-se
amá-semos	temié-semos	vivié-semos
ama-seís	temie-seís	vivie-seís
VV. ama-sen	VV. temie-sen	VV. vivie-sen
ama-sen	temie-sen	vivie-sen

FUTURE

<i>I shall love</i>	<i>I shall fear</i>	<i>I shall live</i>
ama-re	temie-re	vivie-re
ama-res	temie-res	vivie-res
V. ama-re	V. temie-re	V. vivie-re
ama-re	temie-re	vivie-re
amá-remos	temié-remos	vivié-remos
ama-reís	temie-reís	vivie-reís
VV. ama-ren	VV. temie-ren	VV. vivie-ren
ama-ren	temie-ren	vivie-ren

COMPOUND TENSES

Infinitive

haber amado — temido — vivido

*to have loved — feared — lived***Gerund**

habiendo amado — temido — vivido

*having loved — feared — lived***Indicative****PERFECT***I have loved*

he amado

I have feared

he temido

I have lived

he vivido

PLUPERFECT*I had loved*

había amado

I had feared

había temido

I had lived

había vivido

PAST ANTERIOR*I had loved*

hube amado

I had feared

hube temido

I had lived

hube vivido

FUTURE PERFECT*I shall (will) have
loved*

habré amado

*I shall (will) have
feared*

habré temido

*I shall (will) have
lived*

habré vivido

COMPOUND TENSES

Subjunctive

PERFECT

<i>I may have loved</i>	<i>I may have feared</i>	<i>I may have lived</i>
haya amado	haya temido	haya vivido

PLUPERFECT—FIRST FORM

<i>I had (should have) loved</i>	<i>I had (should have) feared</i>	<i>I had (should have) lived</i>
hubiera amado	hubiera temido	hubiera vivido

PLUPERFECT—SECOND FORM

<i>I had (should have) loved</i>	<i>I had (should have) feared</i>	<i>I had (should have) lived</i>
hubiese amado	hubiese temido	hubiese vivido

FUTURE PERFECT

<i>I should (shall) have loved</i>	<i>I should (shall) have feared</i>	<i>I should (shall) have lived</i>
hubiere amado	hubiere temido	hubiere vivido

CONDITIONAL PERFECT

<i>I would (should) have loved</i>	<i>I would (should) have feared</i>	<i>I would (should) have lived</i>
habría amado	habría temido	habría vivido

ORTHOGRAPHIC CHANGES

143. In the conjugation of some regular, as well as irregular, verbs, it is necessary, before certain terminations, to change the final letters of the stem before adding the personal endings. The Spanish method of spelling requires this, in order to preserve, throughout the conjugation, the consonantal sound which immediately precedes the infinitive ending. All such verbs may be reduced to the following ten classes. Verbs whose infinitives terminate —

- | | |
|--|---------------------------------|
| 1. in <i>car</i> change <i>c</i> to <i>qu</i> | } before <i>e</i> . |
| 2. in <i>gar</i> insert <i>u</i> | |
| 3. in <i>guar</i> change <i>u</i> to <i>ü</i> | |
| 4. in <i>zar</i> " <i>z</i> to <i>c</i> | |
| 5. in <i>cer</i> preceded by a consonant change <i>c</i> to <i>z</i> | } before <i>a</i> or <i>o</i> . |
| 6. in <i>cir</i> " " " " <i>c</i> to <i>z</i> | |
| 7. in <i>ger</i> change <i>g</i> to <i>j</i> | |
| 8. in <i>gir</i> " <i>g</i> to <i>j</i> | |
| 9. in <i>quir</i> " <i>qu</i> to <i>c</i> | |
| 10. in <i>guir</i> drop <i>u</i> | |

These changes can only occur in the first person singular of the present indicative and preterit, in the present subjunctive, and in the imperative.

EXAMPLES

Tocar, *touch*: Pres. Sub. toque, toques, etc. Pret. toqué, tocaste, etc.

Pagar, *pay*: Pres. Sub. pague, pagues, etc. Pret. pagué, pagaste, etc.

Averiguar, *investigate*: Pres. Sub. averigüe, averigües, etc. Pret. averigüé, averiguaste, etc.

Forzar, *force*: Pres. Sub. fuerce, fuerces, etc. Pret. forcé, forzaste, etc.

Vencer, *conquer*: Pres. Ind. venzo, vences, etc. Pres. Sub. venza, venzas, etc.

Resarcir, *compensate*: Pres. Ind. resarzo, resarces, etc. Pres. Sub. resarza, resarzas, etc.

Coger, *gather*: Pres. Ind. cojo, coges, etc. Pres. Sub. coja, cojas, etc.

Dirigir, *direct*: Pres. Ind. dirijo, diriges, etc. Pres. Sub. dirija, dirijas, etc.

Delinquir, *transgress*: Pres. Ind. delinco, delinques, etc. Pres. Sub. delinca, delincas, etc.

Distinguir, *distinguish*: Pres. Ind. distingo, distingues, etc. Pres. Sub. distinga, distingas, etc.

a. Verbs in *-cer* and *-cir* (5 and 6), when these endings are preceded by a vowel, insert *z* before *c*, when *c* comes before *a* or *o*:—

Conozco, *conocer*, conocí, conocido, *to know*.

Pres. Ind. **conozc**-o, conoces, conoce, conocemos, conocéis, conocen.

Pres. Sub. **conozc**-a, conozcas, conozca, conozcamos, conozcáis, conozcan.

Imperat. (**conozc**-a) conoce, conozca, conozcamos, conoced, conozcan.

Luzco, *lucir*, lucí, lucido, *to shine, display*.

Pres. Ind. **luzc**-o, luces, luce, lucimos, lucís, lucen.

Pres. Sub. **luzc**-a, luzcas, luzca, luzcamos, luzcáis, luzcan.

Imperat. (**luzc**-a), luce, luzca, luzcamos, lucid, luzcan.

Except *decir*, *-ducir*, and *hacer* and their compounds, all of which are provided for elsewhere, the verbs of the above class are regular in their other tenses.

Except also *mecer*, *to rock*, *empecer*, *to injure*, *cocer*, *to boil*, *to bake*, and *escocer*, *to smart*, which follow class 5, above.

b. There is a considerable number of verbs in *iar* and *uar*, which receive the tonic accent on the *i* and *u* before all one-syllable endings. This accent must then be

marked: e.g. *guío*, I guide, *continúa*, he continues, *telegrafian*, they telegraph, etc. But as there are many exceptions, these verbs have to be learned by practice.

c. When preceded by *j*, *ll*, *ñ*, the diphthongs *ie* and *ió*, of verb-endings, lose the *i*:—

Decir, to say: pret. 3d. pl *dijeron* (not *dijieron*).

Imp. Sub. 1. *dijera*, 2. *dijese*, fut. sub. *dijere*.

Bullir, to boil: gerund *bullendo* (not *bulliendo*).

Pret. *bulló*, *bulleron* (not *bullió*, *bullieron*).

Imp. Sub. 1. *bullera*, 2. *bullese*, fut. sub. *bullere*.

Bruñir, to burnish: gerund *bruñendo* (not *bruñiendo*).

Pret. *bruñó*, *bruñeron* (not *bruñió*, *bruñieron*).

Imp. Sub. 1. *bruñera*, 2. *bruñese*, fut. sub. *bruñere*.

d. It is a principle of the Spanish vowel-system that *i*, at the beginning of a word and followed by a vowel, or in the middle of a word between two vowels, unless in this case it bears the syllabic accent, is changed to *y* as in *year*, i.e. is consonantized. It will be particularly helpful to remember this in conjugating Spanish verbs:—

Ir, to go: gerund *yendo* (not *iendo*).

Leer, to read: gerund *leyendo* (not *leiendo*).

Pret. *leyó*, *leyeron* (not *leió*, *leieron*).

Imp. Sub. 1. *leyera*, 2. *leyese*, fut. sub. *leyere*.

Huir, to flee: gerund *huyendo* (not *huiendo*).

Pret. *huyó*, *huyeron* (not *huíó*, *huieron*).

Imp. Sub. 1. *huyera*, 2. *huyese*, fut. sub. *huyere*.

MEMORY-AIDS TO LEARNING THE CONJUGATIONS

144. A comparison of the second and third conjugations shows that the terminations of the third are the same as those of the second, except in the first and second persons plural of the present indicative and in the second person

plural of the imperative. These have been printed in heavy type to attract attention.

145. The following synopsis will show that it is possible, by a small effort of memory, to grasp the whole machinery of the Spanish verb-system. This scheme, once thoroughly mastered, will greatly aid in learning both the regular and irregular verbs, as the exceptions are confined to certain irregular verbs of such frequent use that they are soon acquired. The parts in parenthesis are to be dropped, leaving the stem, which is to be added to the various endings that follow.

FORMATION OF TENSES

a. The present indicative, first person sing. forms:—

The pres. subj.	{	am -(o) — am -e, es, e, emos, éis, en.
		tem -(o) — tem -a, as, a, amos, áis, an.
		viv -(o) — viv -a, as, a, amos, áis, an.

Six exceptions.

b. The infinitive forms:—

1. Gerund	{	am -(ar) — am -ando.
		tem -(er) — tem -iendo.
		viv -(ir) — viv -iendo.

Twenty-three exceptions.

2. P. Part.	{	am -(ar) — am -ado.
		tem -(er) — tem -ido.
		viv -(ir) — viv -ido.

About a dozen exceptions.

3. Imp. Ind.	{	am -(ar) — am -aba, abas, aba, ábamos, abais, aban.
		tem -(ar) — tem -ía, ías, ía, íamos, íais, ían.
		viv -(ir) — viv -ía, ías, ía, íamos, ías, ían.

Only three exceptions: *ser*, *era*, *ver*, *veía*, *ir*, *iba*.

4. Fut. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amar-}\acute{e}, \acute{a}s, \acute{a}, \text{emos}, \acute{e}s, \acute{a}n. \\ \text{temer-}\acute{e}, \acute{a}s, \acute{a}, \text{emos}, \acute{e}s, \acute{a}n. \\ \text{vivir-}\acute{e}, \acute{a}s, \acute{a}, \text{emos}, \acute{e}s, \acute{a}n. \end{array} \right.$
5. Cond. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amar-}i\acute{a}, i\acute{a}s, i\acute{a}, i\acute{a}mos, i\acute{a}s, i\acute{a}n. \\ \text{temer-}i\acute{a}, i\acute{a}s, i\acute{a}, i\acute{a}mos, i\acute{a}s, i\acute{a}n. \\ \text{vivir-}i\acute{a}, i\acute{a}s, i\acute{a}, i\acute{a}mos, i\acute{a}s, i\acute{a}n. \end{array} \right.$

Twelve exceptions for the future and conditional.

Observe that the endings for all three conjugations are the same.*

6. Imperative 2d sing. and pl. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{am-}(\text{ar}) \text{—} \text{am-}a, \text{am-}ad. \\ \text{tem-}(\text{er}) \text{—} \text{tem-}e, \text{tem-}ed. \\ \text{viv-}(\text{ir}) \text{—} \text{viv-}e, \text{viv-}id. \end{array} \right.$

Twelve exceptions for the 2d sing. The other parts of the imperative are identical with the corresponding persons of the present subjunctive.

c. The preterit third person plural forms the imperfect subjunctive, first and second forms, and the future subjunctive:—

(amé)

- ama-(ron) $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ama-}ra, ras, ra, \text{amá-}ramos, \text{ama-}rais, ran. \\ \text{ama-}se, ses, se, \text{amá-}semos, \text{ama-}seis, sen. \\ \text{ama-}re, res, re, \text{amá-}remos, \text{ama-}reis, ren. \end{array} \right.$

*This comes from the fact that the future and conditional are, strictly speaking, compound tenses, being formed from the infinitive and the present and imperfect indicative of *haber*: *he*, *has*, *ha*, etc., and *había*, *habías*, *había*, etc., contracted to *hía*, *hías*, *hía*, etc., the *h* being finally dropped when the two words were run together. In the older books the parts will be found separated:—

Contarle he de dónde la risa procedió. I shall tell you from whence the
 — *Lazarillo de Tormes*. laugh proceeded.
 Responderles hía yo, etc. I would reply to them, etc.

— *Don Quijote*.

(temi)		
temie-(ron)	{	temie-ra, ras, ra, temié-ramos, temie-raís, ran. temie-se, ses, se, temié-semos, temie-seís, sen. temie-re, res, re, temié-remos, temie-reís, ren.
(vivi)		
vivie-(ron)	{	vivie-ra, ras, ra, vivié-ramos, vivie-raís, ran. vivie-se, ses, se, vivié-semos, vivie-seís, sen. vivie-re, res, re, vivié-remos, vivie-reís, ren.

Note that the terminations of these three tenses in all three conjugations are the same throughout. The third person plural is taken as a stem, because it is the only form which furnishes no exceptions either for regular or irregular verbs.

d. The past participle, with the simple tenses of *haber*, forms all the compound tenses:—

<i>Perf.</i>	he	} amado, temido, vivido.
<i>Plup.</i>	había	
<i>P. Ant.</i>	hube	
<i>F. Perf.</i>	habré	
<i>Con. Perf.</i>	habría	
<i>Perf. Sub.</i>	haya	
1. <i>Plup. Sub.</i>	hubiera	
2. <i>Plup. Sub.</i>	hubiese	
<i>F. Perf. Sub.</i>	hubiere	

NOTE.—While *haber* is the usual auxiliary for both transitive and intransitive verbs, *ser* is occasionally found with some verbs of motion:—

"Mi amado era ya ido, ya había pasado."	My beloved was already gone, had already passed.
"Diez y seis días eran pasados cuando volví á Madrid por última vez."	Sixteen days had passed when I returned to Madrid for the last time.
" Son venidos á tan extremo infortunio que han perdido ya la defensa que aun á los animales brutos es otorgado."	They have come to such extreme misery that they have already lost the shelter which is accorded even to beasts.

PASSIVE VOICE

146. Active transitive verbs, as in English, admit of a passive voice, which is formed by means of the verb *ser*, in all its moods and tenses, and the past participle of the verb to be conjugated. This past participle, but not the past participle of *ser*, agrees in gender and number with the subject. As *ser* has already been conjugated and is supposed to be known by this time, it is not deemed necessary to give the full conjugation of all the tenses.

Infinitive: ser amado, a, os, as, *to be loved*.

Gerund: siendo amado, a, os, as, *being loved*.

SIMPLE TENSES

Indicative

PRESENT

I am, thou art, etc., loved

soy amado, a
eres amado, a
V. es amado, a
él es amado
ella es amada
somos amados, as
sois amados, as
VV. son amados, as
ellos son amados
ellas son amadas

Imperative

Let me be, be thou, etc., loved

sea yo amado, a
sé tú amado, a
no seas amado, a
sea V. amado, a
sea él, ella, amado, a
seamos amados, as
sed amados, as
no seáis amados, as
sean VV. amados, as
sean ellos, ellas, amados, as

Subjunctive

IMPERFECT

I was loved

era amado, a

PRESENT

I may be loved

sea amado, a

PRETERIT

I was loved
fui amado, a

FUTURE

I shall (will) be loved
seré amado, a

CONDITIONAL

I should (would) be loved
sería amado, a

IMPERFECT — FIRST FORM

I should (would) be loved
fuera amado, a

IMPERFECT — SECOND FORM

I should (would) be loved
fuese amado, a

FUTURE

I shall (will) be loved
fuere amado, a

COMPOUND TENSES

Infinitive: haber sido amado, a, os, as, *to have been loved*.

Gerund: habiendo sido amado, a, os, as, *having been loved*.

Indicative

PERFECT

I have been loved
he sido amado, a

PLUPERFECT

I had been loved
había sido amado, a

PAST ANTERIOR

I had been loved
hube sido amado, a

FUTURE PERFECT

I shall have been loved
habré sido amado, a

Subjunctive

PERFECT

I may have been loved
haya sido amado, a

PLUPERFECT — FIRST FORM

I should (would) have been loved
hubiera sido amado, a

PLUPERFECT — SECOND FORM

I should (would) have been loved
hubiese sido amado, a

FUTURE PERFECT

I shall have been loved
hubiere sido amado, a

CONDITIONAL PERFECT

I should (would) have been loved
habría sido amado, a

PASSIVE CONSTRUCTIONS

147. While the passive is a well-recognized principle of Spanish grammar, its use is extremely restricted as compared with the English passive. As a substitute we may employ the active and say, for instance, *Mis padres me aman*, *My parents love me*, instead of *Yo soy amado de mis padres*, *I am loved by my parents*. Another and more common substitute is the reflexive verb, which will be treated further on. See **154** and following sections.

By is rendered by **por**, if the action is an outward, visible one, and preferably by **de**, although **por** may be used, when the action of the verb concerns the faculties of the mind and heart, as, *to love, hate, fear, esteem, honor*, etc.:—

El perro es conducido por el muchacho. The dog is led by the boy.

El discípulo ha sido castigado por el maestro. The pupil has been punished by the teacher.

El mundo fué hecho por Dios. The world was made by God.

Ella era amada de todos por su bondad. She was loved by all for her goodness.

V. es estimado de (por) todo el mundo. You are esteemed by everybody.

148. When *andar*, *ir*, to go, and *quedar*, to remain, are substituted for *ser*, they not infrequently imply a continuous, permanent, or definite action, while *estar* (see **139**) expresses a state, condition, etc.:—

Ande yo caliente, y ríase la gente. Let me be (go) warm, and people may laugh.

Todo va envuelto con cuidado. Everything is (goes) carefully wrapped up.

Ahora quedo satisfecho. Now I am satisfied.

Quedóse concluido el asunto. The affair was definitely settled.

Está agitada el agua.

The water is agitated.

Mi hermana está casada en Nueva
York.

My sister is married (and lives)
in New York.

NOTE — A few other verbs are similarly constructed, such as : *continuar*, to continue, *hallarse* (*encontrarse*), to find oneself, *verse*, to see oneself, *sentirse*, to feel.

REFLEXIVE VERBS

149. Generally speaking, a reflexive verb may be said to be one whose action is turned or reflected back upon a pronoun which represents the same person or thing as the subject. This pronoun may be either the direct or indirect object; but the verb need not necessarily be transitive to admit of the reflexive form. In fact, this species of expression is so very common in Spanish, that almost any verb, whatever its nature, may be conjugated reflexively. Aside from the addition of the reflexive pronouns, the conjugation differs in no way from other verbs, and the conjugation of a model verb, through all moods and tenses, will not be requisite. The reflexive nature of the verb will not always appear in the English rendering. For instance: *Me alabo*, *I praise myself*, *Se lisonjea*, *He flatters himself*; but *Me marchó*, *I am going (away)*, *Nos levantamos*, *We rise*.

a. Note the suppression, in the imperative, of the *s* of the first person plural, and the *d* of the second person plural, when the pronoun is attached to the end of the verb: *portémonos* for *portemosnos*, let us behave ourselves, and *portaos* for *portados*, behave yourselves. The only exception is *idos* from *irse*, to go away.

REMARK. — The accent has to be marked in verbs of the 3d conjugation: *vestíos*, dress yourselves.

150.

MODEL VERB

Infinitive : portarse, to behave oneself.

Gerund : portándose, behaving oneself.

Indicative — PRESENT

I behave myself, etc.

me porto
te portas
V. se porta
se porta
nos portamos
os portáis
VV. se portan
se portan

Subjunctive — PRESENT

I may behave myself, etc.

me porte
te portes
V. se porte
se porte
nos portemos
os portéis
VV. se porten
se porten

Imperative*a. Affirmative*

pórtate, behave (thou)
pórtese V., behave (you)
pórtese, let him behave
portémonos, let us behave

portaos, behave (ye)
pórtense VV., behave (you)
pórtense, let them behave

Negative

no te portes, behave (thou) not
no se porte V., behave not
no se porte, let him not behave
no nos portemos, let us not be-
have
no os portéis, behave (ye) not
no se porten VV., behave not
no se porten, let them not be-
have

Note that, in the affirmative, the reflexive pronouns follow and are attached to the verb, while, in the negative, they precede ; also that the negative forms of the 2d person singular and plural (familiar address) differ from the affirmative. This is true of the imperative of all verbs, that is, the affirmative forms can not be used with a negative ; but the corresponding persons of the present subjunctive must be substituted therefor.

See 59 to 63 for full explanation of the position of all pronouns.

SYNOPSIS OF OTHER FORMS

<i>b.</i> Indicative	Subjunctive
<i>Imp.</i> me portaba	<i>Imp. 1.</i> me portara
<i>Pret.</i> me porté	<i>Imp. 2.</i> me portase
<i>Fut.</i> me portaré	<i>Fut.</i> me portare
<i>Cond.</i> me portaría	<i>Perf.</i> me haya portado
<i>Perf.</i> me he portado	<i>Plup. 1.</i> me hubiera portado
<i>Plup.</i> me había portado	<i>Plup. 2.</i> me hubiese portado
<i>P. Ant.</i> me hube portado	<i>Fut. Perf.</i> me hubiere portado
<i>Fut. Perf.</i> me habré portado	<i>Cond. Perf.</i> me habría portado
<i>Inf.</i> haberse portado	<i>Gerund.</i> habiéndose portado

151. Emphasis is secured for the reflexive pronoun by using the corresponding prepositional forms of the pronoun and *mismo* or *propio* (see 52 and 53): —

Me felicito á mí mismo.	I congratulate myself.
V. se engaña á sí mismo.	You deceive yourself.
Ella se figura á sí misma.	She imagines (to herself).
Nos armamos á nosotros mismos.	We arm ourselves.
VV. se lisonjean á sí mismas.	You flatter yourselves.

a. This form of construction is, of course, only possible, where the reflexive verb is, of itself, transitive, and hence capable of case-government. Should this not be so, *mismo* must go with the subject-pronoun: —

Me voy yo mismo.	I am going away myself.
Marchémonos nosotros mismos.	Let's be off ourselves.
Ella misma se arrepiente.	She herself repents.

RECIPROCAL VERBS

152. Certain reflexive verbs represent two or more persons, or things, as mutually acting upon each other. In

such cases, instead of *mismos*, *el uno . . . el otro* or *uno . . . otro* may be used for emphasis, the first of the pair being syntactically nominative, the second, governed by a preposition : —

Nos felicitamos el uno al otro.	We congratulate each other.
VV. se acercan los unos á los otros.	You approach one another.
Se aman unas á otras.	They love one another.
Se chancan los unos con los otros.	They joke with one another.
Se ríen el uno del otro.	They laugh at each other.
El hombre y la mujer se ayudan el uno al otro.	Man and woman are mutually helpful to each other.

OTHER REFLEXIVE CONSTRUCTIONS

153. An occasional reflexive construction occurs, in which the agent is represented by a pronoun in the dative case and the verb is conjugated reflexively in the third person : —

Se le creyó todo perdido.	He (they) thought he had lost everything.
Se me ha olvidado el libro.	I have forgotten the book.
Se les figura que V. no vendrá.	They imagine you will not come.

154. When serving as a substitute for the passive, the reflexive may be employed —

a. To avoid a direct personal construction : —

Se me ha enterado ya.	They have already told me.
No se le imputa tal cosa.	We do not attribute to him any such thing.
Se nos engaña.	They <i>or</i> you are deceiving us.
Se me pidió una limosna.	Some one asked alms of me.
<i>Se me concede más tiempo.</i>	I am granted more time.

b. On signs and in public notices and other general statements : —

Se componen zapatos en seguida.	Shoes mended while you wait.
Aquí se habla español.	Spanish spoken here.
No se regatea en nuestra casa.	You don't have to drive bargains in our house (we have but one price).
En aquella fonda se come bien.	In that hotel they keep a good table.

c. As a true passive in speaking of things and of such actions as animate beings can not perform for themselves : —

Esa novela se escribió por Juan Valera.	That novel was written by Juan Valera.
Eso se cree de todo el mundo.	That is believed by everybody.
La ropa sucia se debe lavar en casa.	Dirty linen ought to be washed at home.
Se venden caballos á precios baratísimos.	Horses sold at very low prices.

NOTE. — But whenever a wrong meaning would ensue, the verb must be conjugated impersonally and the subject represented by a pronoun or noun in the dative, usually by both, when the noun is necessarily expressed : —

Á Juan se le preguntó.	John was asked.
Al caballo se le arrojará al agua.	The horse will be thrown into the water.
Se les mató en el acto.	They were killed at once.
No se les puede creer.	They can not be believed.
But —	
Juan se preguntó.	John asked himself.
El caballo se arrojará al agua.	The horse will throw himself into the water.
Se mataron en el acto.	They killed each other at once.
No se pueden creer.	They can not believe each other.

155. There is a certain use of the reflexive pronoun, which is evidently an echo of the Latin dative of advantage and disadvantage:—

Me lo bebí todo.	I drank it all (to myself).
Se come las uvas con gran sabor.	He eats the grapes with much relish.
Se los tragaron uno á uno.	They swallowed them down one by one.
Me hallé una buena colocación.	I found me a good position.

156. Intransitive verbs used impersonally take the reflexive pronoun to limit their meaning. From this has doubtless come the custom of applying the reflexive to such verbs conjugated personally:—

Se vive bien en esta ciudad.	Living is pleasant in this city.
Por aquí se va á la entrada.	This is the way to the entrance.
No se entra por esta puerta.	No entrance allowed by this door.
Estémonos bajo el toldo.	Let's stand under the awning.
"Érase un hombre á una nariz pegado."	"There was (once) a man attached to a nose."
Me quedaré aquí por dos días.	I shall remain here for two days.

157. While the use or omission of the reflexive with some intransitive verbs makes no appreciable difference in meaning, with others it does. Such are:—

<i>Ir, to go.</i>	<i>Irse, to go away.</i>
<i>Marchar, to march.</i>	<i>Marcharse, to go away.</i>
<i>Venir, to come.</i>	<i>Venirse, to come along.</i>
<i>Volar, to fly.</i>	<i>Volarse, to fly away.</i>
<i>Dormir, to sleep.</i>	<i>Dormirse, to go to sleep.</i>
<i>Morir, to die.</i>	<i>Morirse, to be dying.</i>

IMPERSONAL VERBS

158. Strictly defined, an impersonal verb should be one which has no personal agent, but this definition must not be taken too literally. Where not susceptible of a personal construction, these verbs are confined to the infinitive, the gerund, and the third person singular of the various moods and tenses. The most generally impersonal are those which indicate the workings of the laws of nature, but even in their case, *Dios*, God, and some few other words are, at times, employed as personal subjects. The most common of this class only will be here given :—

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Pres. Ind.</i>	<i>Pres. Sub.</i>
Alborear, <i>to dawn.</i>	alborea.	alboree.
Amanecer, <i>to dawn.</i>	amanece.	amanezca.
Anochecer, <i>to become night.</i>	anochece.	anochezca.
Escampar, <i>to stop raining.</i>	escampa.	escampe.
Granizar, <i>to hail.</i>	graniza.	granice.
Helar, <i>to freeze.</i>	hiela.	hiele.
Deshelar, <i>to thaw.</i>	deshiela.	deshiele.
Llover, <i>to rain.</i>	llueve.	llueva.
Lloviznar, <i>to drizzle.</i>	llovizna.	llovizne.
Negar, <i>to snow.</i>	nieva.	nieve.
Tronar, <i>to thunder.</i>	trueno.	truene.
Relampaguear, <i>to lighten.</i>	relampaguea.	relampaguee.

a. The other tenses of the above are all regular and follow the conjugations indicated by their respective infinitive endings. *Amanecer* and *anochecer* are used personally in the sense of *to arrive at dawn* and *to arrive at nightfall*:—

Amanecí en Madrid y anochecí en Segovia.	I arrived in Madrid at dawn and in Segovia at nightfall.
Amanecerán mejores días.	Better days will dawn.

b. Hacer, to do, to make (conjugated in 197), is used impersonally in numerous combinations in speaking of the weather and time : —

Hace calor, frío.	It is hot, cold.
Hacía buen, mal tiempo.	It was good, bad weather.
Hizo viento, sol, luna.	It was windy, the sun shone, there was moonlight.
Hará fresco en la sombra.	It will be cool in the shade.
Hace un año, dos meses, ocho días, un siglo.	A year, two months, eight days, a century ago.

See 137, *b*, for *haber* used impersonally.

159. The following are used both personally and impersonally but, from their nature, usually in the third person : —

Acaecer,	} <i>to happen,</i> <i>take place.</i>	Constar, <i>to be evident.</i>
Acontecer,		Convenir, <i>to suit, be proper.</i>
Sucedér,		Importar, <i>to concern, be important.</i>
Bastar, <i>to suffice.</i>		Parecer, <i>to seem, appear.</i>

160. There are numerous other expressions which occur impersonally. Some of the more important will be seen in the following : —

Más vale tarde que nunca.	It is better late than never.
Más valdría <i>or</i> mejor sería que viniera.	It would be better that he came.
Es preciso, necesario.	It is necessary.
Es verdad, mentira.	It is true, false.
¿Qué hora es? <i>or</i> ¿qué horas son?	What time, what o'clock is it?
Es la una, son las dos, etc.	It is one o'clock, it is two o'clock, etc.
<i>Se dice, diz, dicen.</i>	It is said, they say.

Note, in the last line, the impersonal use of the third person plural: *dicen*. This construction occurs with other verbs and is exactly analogous to our English indefinite *they say, they think*, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS

161. In the broadest sense, an irregular verb is one whose conjugation does not agree in every particular with one of the three model verbs given in **142**. So defined, there are over eight hundred irregular verbs in Spanish, and if each one had to be learned individually, it would be a formidable task; but it is found that all but about thirty may be arranged in certain classes, in which the variation from the model will be regular and constant. Many of these variations are mere letter-changes made to conform to the Spanish method of spelling. These have been fully explained in **143**, and should now be reviewed and mastered. The rules for the formation of tenses, set forth in **145**, should also be learned.

162. In the development of Spanish words from Latin, it is found that *e* breaks up into *ie* and *o* into *ue* whenever the tonic (syllabic) accent falls on these letters: —

LATIN	SPANISH
<i>Dens</i> (<i>dentis</i>), tooth.	<i>diente</i> .
<i>Certus</i> , certain.	<i>cierto</i> .
<i>Nego</i> , I deny.	<i>niego</i> .
<i>Fons</i> (<i>fontis</i>), fountain.	<i>f fuente</i> .
<i>Bonus</i> , good.	<i>bueno</i> .
<i>Dormio</i> , I sleep.	<i>duermo</i> .

It is of the highest importance to keep this simple principle in mind when learning Spanish irregular verbs, as the greater number have no other irregularities. It will be

seen that the vowel changes under the influence of the tonic accent, but as soon as this accent shifts to another syllable, the original vowel is restored. This vowel-change is indicated by heavy type, which is also used to call attention to the stems from which the derivative tenses are formed (see 145).

NOTE. — As *usted* and *ustedes* take always the same form as the third person : *usted, él ama, ustedes, ellos aman*, only one form for both will be given in conjugating the irregular verbs.

163. All verbs referrible to any one of the following classes have uniformly the same irregularities that appear in the model-verb of their respective classes, and no others, where none are specified. As the imperative of the first person singular occurs very seldom, and its existence is even denied by some grammarians, it will not be given in the irregular verbs.

CLASS I

164. Pienso, **pensar**, pensé, pensado, *to think*.

Pres. Ind. **piens-o**, piensas, **piensa**, pensamos, pensáis, **piensan**.

Pres. Sub. **piens-e**, pienses, **piense**, pensemos, penséis, **piensen**.

Imperat. **piensa**, piense, pensemos, pensad, piensen.

REGULAR TENSES

Imperf. pensaba, -abas, -aba, pensábamos, pensabais, pensaban.

Fut. **pensar-é**, -ás, -á, pensaremos, pensaréis, pensarán.

Cond. **pensar-ía**, -ías, -ía, pensaríamos, pensaríais, pensarían.

Gerund. pensando.

Pret. pensé, pensaste, pensó, pensamos, pensasteis, **pensa-ron**.

1. *Imp. Sub.* **pensa-ra**, -ras, -ra, pensáramos, pensareis, pensarán.

2. *Imp. Sub.* **pensa-se**, -ses, -se, pensásemos, pensaseis, pensasen.

Fut. Sub. **pensa-re**, -res, -re, pensáremos, pensareis, pensaren.

165. Error, to err, miss, falls under Class I, but is also subject to the orthographic law laid down in **143, d.** Hence:—

Pres. Ind. **yerr-o, yerras, yerra, erramos, erráis, yerran.**

Pres. Sub. **yerr-e, yerres, yerre, erremos, erréis, yerren.**

Imperat. **yerra, yerre, erremos, errad, yerren.**

Other tenses like *pensar* above.

166. Entiendo, entender, entendí, entendido, to understand.

Pres. Ind. **entiend-o, entiendes, entiende, entendemos, -éis, entienden.**

Pres. Sub. **entiend-a, -as, -a, entendamos, entendáis, entiendan.**

Imperat. **entiende, entienda, entendamos, entendad, entiendan.**

REGULAR TENSES

Imperf. **entendía, -ías, -ía, entendíamos, entendíais, entendían.**

Fut. **entender-é, -ás, -á, entenderemos, entenderéis, entenderán.**

Cond. **entender-ía, -ías, -ía, entenderíamos, entenderíais, entenderían.**

Gerund. **entendiendo.**

Pret. **entendí, -iste, -ió, entendimos, entendisteis, entendie-ron.**

1. *Imp. Sub.* **entendie-ra, -ras, -ra, entendiéramos, entenderíais, entenderían.**

2. *Imp. Sub.* **entendie-se, -ses, -se, entendiésemos, entendieseis, entendiesen.**

Fut. Sub. **entendie-re, -res, -re, entendiéremos, entenderíais, entenderían.**

CLASS II

167. Cuento, contar, conté, contado, to count, relate.

Pres. Ind. **cuent-o, cuentas, cuenta, contamos, contáis, cuentan.**

Pres. Sub. **cuent-e, cuentes, cuente, contemos, contéis, cuenten.**

Imperat. **cuenta, cuente, contemos, contad, cuenten.**

REGULAR TENSES

Imperf. contaba, -abas, -aba, contábamos, contabais, contaban.

Fut. contar-é, -ás, -á, contaremos, contaréis, contarán.

Cond. contar-ía, -ías, -ía, contaríamos, contaríais, contarían.

Gerund. contando.

Pret. cont-é, -aste, -ó, contamos, contasteis, **conta**-ron.

1. *Imp. Sub.* conta-ra, -ras, -ra, contáramos, contarais, contarán.

2. *Imp. Sub.* conta-se, -ses, -se, contásemos, contaseis, contasen.

Fut. Sub. conta-re, -res, -re, contáremos, contareis, contaren.

a. When *g* precedes the tonic *o* in verbs of this class, a diæresis must be placed over the *u*, when *o* becomes *ue*. In all other respects they are conjugated like *contar*:—

Degüello, **degollar**, degollé, degollado, *to behead*.

Pres. Ind. degüell-o, -üellas, -üella, degollamos, -áis, degüellan.

Pres. Sub. degüell-e, -es, -e, degollemos, degolléis, degüellen.

Imperat. degüella, -üelle, degollemos, degollad, degüellen.

168. The *u* of **jugar** becomes *ue* analogously to the *o* of *contar*, and *g* changes to *gu* before *e* in accordance with **143, 2.** Hence:—

Juego, **jugar**, jugué, jugado, *to play*.

Pres. Ind. jueg-o, juegas, juega, jugamos, jugáis, juegan.

Pres. Sub. juegu-e, juegues, juegue, juguemos, juguéis, jueguen.

Imperat. juega, juegue, juguemos, jugad, jueguen.

Pret. jugué, jugaste, jugó, jugamos, -asteis, jugaron.

Other tenses like *contar* above.

169. **Desosar**, *to bone*, and **desovar**, *to spawn*, take *h* before *ue*.

Pres. Ind. deshues-o, -as, -a, desosamos, -áis, deshuesan.

Pres. Sub. deshues-e, -es, -e, desosemos, -éis, deshuesen.

Imperat. desues-a, -e, desosemos, desosad, deshuesen.

And so desovar. Other tenses regular.

170. Muerdo, morder, mordí, mordido, to bite.*Pres. Ind.* **muerd-o, -es, -e, mordemos, mordéis, muerden.***Pres. Sub.* **muerd-a, -as, -a, mordamos, mordáis, muerdan.***Imperat.* **muerd-e, muerda, mordamos, mordered, muerdan.**

REGULAR TENSES

Imperf. **mordía, -ías, -ía, mordíamos, mordíais, mordían.***Fut.* **morder-é, -ás, -á, morderemos, morderéis, morderán.***Cond.* **morder-ía, -ías, -ía, morderíamos, morderíais, morderían.***Gerund.* **mordiendo.***Pret.* **mordí, -iste, -ió, mordimos, mordisteis, mordie-ron.****1. Imp. Sub. mordie-ra, -ras, -ra, mordiéramos, mordierais, mordieran.****2. Imp. Sub. mordie-se, -ses, -se, mordiésemos, mordieseis, mordiesen.***Fut. Sub.* **mordie-re, -res, -re, mordiéremos, mordiereis, mordieren.****171. Vuelvo, volver, volví, vuelto, to return.****Absuelvo, absolver, absolví, absuelto, to absolve.****Disuelvo, disolver, disolví, disuelto, to dissolve.****Resuelvo, resolver, resolví, resuelto, to resolve.**

All verbs in **-olver** change their stem-vowels like *morder*, and have the past participle in **-uelto**, but are otherwise regular in their class.

172. Tonic *o* of **oler** changes to *hue*. The addition of this *h* is a device dating from the time when it was necessary to distinguish the initial vowel *u* from the consonant *u* (*v*).

Huelo, oler, olí, olido, to smell.*Pres. Ind.* **hue-lo, hueles, huele, olemos, oléis, huelen.***Pres. Sub.* **huel-a, huelas, huela, olamos, oláis, huelan.***Imperat.* **huele, huela, olamos, oled, huelan.****Olía, oleré, olería, olí, olierá, oliese, oliere.***Gerund.* **oliendo.**

CLASS III

173. Verbs of this class belong exclusively to the third conjugation. They not only break up the tonic vowels *e* and *o* into *ie* and *ue* respectively, but substitute *i* and *u* for them in the first and second persons plural of the subjunctive and first person plural of the imperative as well as in third person singular and plural of the preterit and the tenses derived from the latter.

174. Siento, *sentir*, senti, sentido, *to feel, regret*.

Pres. Ind. sient-o, sientes, siente, sentimos, sentís, sienten.

Pres. Sub. sient-a, sientas, sienta, sintamos, sintáis, sientan.

Imperat. siente, sienta, sintamos, sentid, sientan.

Imperf. sentía, -ías, -ía, sentíamos, sentíais, sentían.

Fut. sentir-é, -ás, -á, sentiremos, sentiréis, sentirán.

Cond. sentir-ía, -ías, -ía, sentiríamos, sentiríais, sentirían.

Pret. senti, -iste, sintió, sentimos, sentisteis, sintie-ron.

1. *Imp. Sub.* sintie-ra, -rás, -ra, sintiéramos, sintierais, sintieran.

2. *Imp. Sub.* sintie-se, -ses, -se, sintiésemos, sintieseis, sintiesen.

Fut. Sub. sintie-re, -res, -re, sintiéremos, sintiereis, sintieren.

Gerund. sintiendo.

175. Erguir, *to straighten up, to strut with pride*, has as a tonic stem either *yerg* or *irg*. Elsewhere it follows the conjugation of *sentir*.

Yergo, }
Irgo, } *erguir*, *erguí*, *erguido*.

Pres. Ind. yerg-o, yergues, -e, } *erguimos*, *erguls* { *yerguen*.
irg-o, irgues, -e, } *erguimos*, *erguls* { *irguen*.

Pres. Sub. yerga, -as, -a, } *irgamos*, *irgáis* { *yergan*.
irga, -as, -a, } *irgamos*, *irgáis* { *irgan*.

Imperat. yergue, yerga, } *irgamos*, *erguid* { *yergan*.
irgue, irga, } *irgamos*, *erguid* { *irgan*.

Pret. *erguí*, -iste, *irguió*, *erguimos*, *erguisteis*, *irguie-ron*.

Sub. 1. *irguie-ra*, 2. *irguie-se*, *Fut. Sub.* *irguie-re*.

Gerund. *irguiendo*.

176. The present stem-vowel of *adquirir*, *to acquire*, and *inquirir*, *to inquire for*, changes to *ie*, when accented, like the *e* of *sentir*, but remains intact elsewhere:—

Adquiero, *adquirir*, *adquirí*, *adquirido*.

Inquiero, *inquirir*, *inquirí*, *inquirido*.

Pres. Ind. *adquier-o*, -es, -e, *adquirimos*, *adquirís*, *adquieren*.

Pres. Sub. *adquier-a*, -as, -a, *adquiramos*, *adquiráis*, *adquieran*.

Imperat. *adquier-e*, -a, *adquiramos*, *adquirid*, *adquieran*.

And so *inquirir*. All other parts regular.

177. *Duermo*, *dormir*, *dormí*, *dormido*, *to sleep*.

Pres. Ind. *duerm-o*, *duermes*, *duerme*, *dormimos*, *dormís*, *duermen*.

Pres. Sub. *duerm-a*, -as, -a, *durmamos*, *durmáis*, *duerman*.

Imperat. *duerm-e*, *duerma*, *durmamos*, *dormid*, *duerman*.

Imperf. *dormía*, -ías, -ía, *dormíamos*, *dormíais*, *dormían*.

Fut. *dormir-é*, -ás, -á, *dormiremos*, *dormiréis*, *dormirán*.

Cond. *dormir-la*, -ías, -ía, *dormiríamos*, *dormiríais*, *dormirían*.

Pret. *dormí*, -iste, *durmió*, *dormimos*, *dormisteis*, *durmie-ron*.

1. *Imp. Sub.* *durmie-ra*, -ras, -ra, *durmiéramos*, -erais, *durmieran*.

2. *Imp. Sub.* *durmie-se*, -ses, -se, *durmiésemos*, -eseis, *durmiesen*.

Fut. Sub. *durmie-re*, -res, -re, *durmiéremos*, -ereis, *durmieren*.

Gerund. *durmiendo*.

178. *Morir*, *to die*, *premorir*, *to die before another*, are conjugated exactly like *dormir* above, but have the past participles *muerto* and *premuerto*.

NOTE.—The past participle *muerto* is also used with an active signification:—

Fué muerto uno de ellos.

One of them was killed.

El policía ha muerto al ladrón.

The policeman has killed the thief.

179. **Pudrir** and **podrir**, *to rot*, has had a double conjugation based on the two infinitives, but, excepting the past participle **podrido**, the Spanish Academy recommends that it be conjugated regularly throughout on *pudrir*.

CLASS IV

180. In the conjugation of verbs of the fourth class the *e* of the infinitive stem, when accented, becomes *i*. This change is likewise extended to the unaccented stem-vowel in the third persons singular and plural of the preterit and to the derivative forms of the latter.

181. **Pido**, **pedir**, **pedí**, **pedido**, *to ask for, beg*.

Pres. Ind. **pid**-o, **pides**, **pide**, **pedimos**, **pedís**, **piden**.

Pres. Sub. **pid**-a, **pidas**, **pida**, **pidamos**, **pidáis**, **pidan**.

Imperat. **pide**, **pida**, **pidamos**, **pedid**, **pidan**.

Imperf. **pedía**, **-ías**, **-ía**, **pedíamos**, **pedíais**, **pedían**.

Fut. **pedir**-é, **-ás**, **-á**, **pediremos**, **pediréis**, **pedirán**.

Cond. **pedir**-ía, **-ías**, **-ía**, **pediríamos**, **pediríais**, **pedirían**.

Pret. **pedí**, **-iste**, **pidió**, **pedimos**, **pedisteis**, **pidie**-ron.

1. *Imp. Sub.* **pidie**-ra, **-ras**, **-ra**, **pidiéramos**, **pidierais**, **pidieran**.

2. *Imp. Sub.* **pidie**-se, **-ses**, **-se**, **pidiésemos**, **-eseis**, **pidiesen**.

Fut. Sub. **pidie**-re, **-res**, **-re**, **pidiéremos**, **-ereis**, **pidieren**.

Gerund. **pidiendo**.

182. Verbs of this class terminating in *-etr* not only change *e*, when accented, to *i*, but also lose this *i* before *ió* and *ie* of the preterit and its derivatives. The written accent is also necessary to separate certain vowels.

Deslío, **desleír**, **desleí**, **desleído**, *to dilute*.

Pres. Ind. **deslí**-o, **deslíes**, **deslíe**, **deslíemos**, **deslíeis**, **deslíen**.

Pres. Sub. **deslí**-a, **-ías**, **-ía**, **deslíamos**, **deslíais**, **deslían**.

Imperat. **deslíe**, **deslí**a, **deslíamos**, **desleíd**, **deslí**an.

Imperf. desleía, desleías, desleía, desleíamos, desleíais, desleían.

Fut. desleir-é, -ás, -á, desleiremos, desleiréis, desleirán.

Cond. desleir-ía, -ías, -ía, desleiríamos, desleiríais, desleirían.

Pret. desleí, desleíste, deslió, desleímos, -ísteis, **deslie**-ron.

1. *Imp. Sub. deslie*-ra, -ras, -ra, desliéramos, -erais, deslieran.

2. *Imp. Sub. deslie*-se, -ses, -se, desliésemos, -ieseis, desliesen.

Fut. Sub. deslie-re, -res, -re, desliéremos, -ereis, deslieren.

Gerund. desliendo.

a. **Reír** is conjugated like *desleír*, but may retain the *i* in the preterit stem and its derivatives, and the following *i* then changes to *y*, according to rule (143, *d*):—

Riyó, ríye-ron, ríyera, ríyese, ríyere, ríyendo, *for* rió, etc.

183. The following have two past participles:—

Freír, to fry,

freído *and* frito.

Refreír, to overfry,

refreído “ refrito.

Sofreír, to underfry,

sofreído “ sofrito.

CLASS V

184. To the fifth class belong all verbs in *-uir* (except *inmiscuirse*, to meddle with) and *-güir*. Their peculiarity is that, except before *i*, they retain, in the present stem, the *i* of the infinitive, and this *i*, falling between two vowels, is consonantized to *y* according to the orthographic law stated in 143, *d*. The diæresis of those in *-güir* is dropped as unnecessary before the consonant *y*.

185. Huyo, **huir**, huí, huido, *to flee, run away.*

Pres. Ind. huy-o, huyes, huye, huimos, huís, huyen.

Pres. Sub. huy-a, -as, -a, huyamos, huyáis, huyan.

Imperat. huye, huya, huyamos, huid, huyan.

Imperf. huía, -ías, -ía, huíamos, huíais, huían.

Fut. huir-é, -ás, -á, huiremos, huiréis, huirán.

Cond. **huir**-la, -las, -la, **huiríamos**, **huiríais**, **huirían**.

Pret. **huí**, -iste, **huyó**, **huimos**, **huisteis**, **huyeron**.

1. *Imp. Sub.* **huye**-ra, -ras, -ra, **huyéramos**, -erais, **huyeran**.

2. *Imp. Sub.* **huye**-se, -ses, -se, **huyésemos**, -eseis, **huyesen**.

Fut. Sub. **huye**-re, -res, -re, **huyéremos**, -ereis, **huyeren**.

Gerund. **huyendo**.

186. **Arguyo**, **argüir**, **argül**, **argüido**, *to argue*.

Pres. Ind. **arguy**-o, **arguyes**, **arguye**, **argüimos**, **argüís**, **arguyen**.

Pres. Sub. **arguy**-a, -as, -a, **arguyamos**, **arguyáis**, **arguyan**.

Imperat. **arguye**, **arguya**, **arguyamos**, **argüid**, **arguyan**.

Imperf. **argüía**, -ías, -ía, **argüíamos**, **argüíais**, **argüían**.

Fut. **argüir**-é, -ás, -á, **argüiremos**, **argüiréis**, **argüirán**.

Cond. **argüir**-la, -las, -la, **argüiríamos**, -lais, **argüirían**.

Pret. **argüí**, -iste, **arguyó**, **argüimos**, **argüisteis**, **arguyeron**.

1. *Imp. Sub.* **arguye**-ra, -ras, -ra, **arguyéramos**, -erais, **arguyeran**.

2. *Imp. Sub.* **arguye**-se, -ses, -se, **arguyésemos**, -eseis, **arguyesen**.

Fut. Sub. **arguye**-re, -res, -re, **arguyéremos**, -ereis, **arguyeren**.

Gerund. **arguyendo**.

UNCLASSABLE IRREGULAR VERBS

187. A few verbs, while having in some tenses certain irregularities in common, vary in others to such an extent that it becomes impossible to make a logical classification. The best that can be done is to group together those that have similarities of tense-formation in order that these may be easily seen and associated in the mind. As the regular endings have been repeated so often, it is not now deemed necessary to give the conjugation of every verb in full.

188. **Ando**, **andar**, **anduve**, **andado**, *to go, walk*.

Pres. Ind. **and**-o, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, **andan**.

Pres. Sub. **and**-e, -es, -e, -emos, -éis, **anden**.

Imperat. and-a, -e, -emos, andad, anden.

Imperf. and-aba, -abas, -aba, -ábamos, -abais, andaban.

Fut. andaré, *Cond.* andaría.

Gerund. andando.

Pret. anduve, anduviste, anduvo, -imos, -isteis, anduvie-ron.

1. *Imp. Sub.* anduvie-ra, -ras, -ra, -éramos, -erais, anduvieran.

2. *Imp. Sub.* anduvie-se, -ses, -se, -ésemos, -eseis, anduviesen.

Fut. Sub. anduvie-re, -res, -re, -éremos, -ereis, anduvieren.

NOTE.—**Andar** is *to go, to walk*, with no definite aim, and hence would be said of animals and things, but is not confined to them. **Ir** is *to go* when the aim or limit is named :—

El barco, mi reloj, el caballo, la	The ship, my watch, the horse,
máquina anda bien.	the engine goes well.

But —

Yo voy á casa, á palacio, á la	I am going home, to the palace,
iglesia, al baile.	to the church, to the ball.

189. Doy, dar, dí, dado, *to give*.

Pres. Ind. d-oy, das, da, damos, dáis, dan.

Pres. Sub. d-é, des, dé, demos, déis, den.

Imperat. da, dé, demos, dad, den.

Imperf. daba, dabas, daba, etc.

Fut. dar-é, *Cond.* dar-la.

Gerund. dando.

Pret. dí, diste, dió, dimos, disteis, die-ron.

Imp. Sub. 1. die-ra, 2. die-se, *Fut. Sub.* die-re.

Idioms with *dar*.

Doy á usted los buenos días.	Good morning to you, <i>or</i> I wish you good day.
------------------------------	---

Dar el pésame.	To condole.
----------------	-------------

Dar á luz.	To publish, bring to light.
------------	-----------------------------

El reloj va á dar las cinco.	The clock is going to strike five.
Dar con alguno.	To fall in with, to meet any one.
La ventana da á la calle.	The window opens on the street.
Da cuerda á su reloj.	He winds up his watch.
Vamos á dar un paseo.	Let's take a walk.
No se me da un higo.	I don't care a fig.
A mí me da lo mismo.	It's all the same to me.
El niño dió á reír.	The child began to laugh.

190. Asgo, asir, así, asido, *to seize*.

Pres. Ind. asg-o, ases, ase, asimos, así, asen.

Pres. Sub. asg-a, asgas, asga, asgamos, asgáis, asgan.

Imperat. ase, asga, asgamos, asid, asgan.

Regular. asta, asir-é, asir-la, asiendo, así, asiera, asiese, asiere.

NOTE.—The irregular forms of *asir* are rarely used.

191. Yazco, yazgo, yago, **yacer**, yací, yacido, *to lie, recline*.

Pres. Ind. yazc-o, yazg-o, yag-o, yaces, -e, yacemos, -éis, yacen.

Pres. Sub. yazc-a, yazg-a, yag-a, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an.

Imperat. yace or yaz tú, yazc-a, etc., yasc-amos, yaced, yazcan, etc.

Regular. yacia, yaceré, yacería, yaciendo, yací, yaciera, yaciese, yaciere.

192. Caigo, caer, caí, caído, *to fall*.

Pres. Ind. caig-o, caes, cae, caemos, caéis, caen.

Pres. Sub. caig-a, caigas, caiga, caigamos, caigáis, caigan.

Imperat. cae, caiga, caigamos, caed, caigan.

Imperf. caía, caías, caía, caíamos, caíais, caían.

Fut. caeré, caerás, etc., *Cond. caería*, caerías, etc.

Pret. caí, caíste, cayó, caímos, caísteis, *caye-ron*.

Imp. Sub. 1. cayera, 2. cayese, *Fut. Sub. cayeré*.

Gerund. cayendo.

Idioms with *caer*.

Ya caigo en ello.	Now I have it (understand it).
Las ventanas caen al río.	The windows overlook the river.
Se cayó en la cuenta de que . . .	It was discovered that . . .
Ese traje le cae á usted bien.	That suit becomes you very well.
Caf malo (enfermo) en Madrid.	I fell sick in Madrid.
Este color cae bien con este otro.	This color matches this other one very well.
Al caer el sol.	At sunset.
Estoy cayéndome de sueño.	I am ready to drop with sleep.

193. Traigo, traer, traje, traído, *to bring*.

<i>Pres. Ind.</i> traigo-o, traes, trae, traemos, traéis, traen.
<i>Pres. Sub.</i> traiga-a, traigas, traiga, traigamos, traigáis, traigan.
<i>Imperat.</i> trae, traiga, traigamos, traed, traigan.
<i>Imperf.</i> traía, traías, traía, traíamos, traíais, traían.
<i>Fut.</i> traeré, traerás, etc., <i>Cond.</i> traería, traerías, etc.
<i>Gerund.</i> trayendo.
<i>Pret.</i> traje, -iste, traje, trajimos, trajisteis, traje-ron.
<i>Imp. Sub.</i> 1. trajera, 2. trajese, <i>Fut. Sub.</i> trajere.

194. Oigo, oír, oír, oír, *to hear*.

<i>Pres. Ind.</i> oigo-o, oyes, oye, oímos, oís, oyen.
<i>Pres. Sub.</i> oiga-a, oigas, oiga, oigamos, oigáis, oigan.
<i>Imperat.</i> oye, oiga, oigamos, oíd, oigan.
<i>Imperf.</i> oía, oías, oía, oíamos, oíais, oían.
<i>Fut.</i> oiré, oirás, etc., <i>Cond.</i> oiría, oirías, etc.
<i>Pret.</i> oí, oíste, oyó, oímos, oísteis, oye-ron.
<i>Imp. Sub.</i> 1. oyera, 2. oyese, <i>Fut. Sub.</i> oyere.
<i>Gerund.</i> oyendo.

195. Digo, decir, dije, dicho, *to say, tell*.

<i>Gerund.</i> diciendo.
<i>Pres. Ind.</i> digo-o, dices, dice, decimos, decís, dicen.

Pres. Sub. **dig-a, digas, diga, digamos, digáis, digan.**

Imperat. **di, diga, digamos, decid, digan.**

Imperf. **decía, decías, decia, decíamos, decíais, decían.**

Fut. diré, dirás, dirá, diremos, diréis, dirán.

Cond. dir-ía, dirías, diría, diríamos, diríais, dirían.

Pret. dije, dijiste, dijo, dijimos, dijisteis, dije-ron.

Imp. Sub. 1. dijera, 2. dijese, Fut. Sub. dijere.

NOTE. — An antiquated form *diz* for *dice* still occurs, in familiar style, in the sense of *dicese*, it is said, or *dicen*, they say : **Diz que habrá guerra**, It is said (they say) there will be war.

196. Like *decir* are conjugated all its compounds with a few variations. Among these are : —

1st. That they all have the imperative second person singular *-dice* instead of *-di*.

2d. That **bendecir**, *to bless*, and **maldecir**, *to curse*, have, besides *bendicho* and *maldicho*, the older participles **bendito** and **maldito** ; although the latter are only used as adjectives.

3d. That these two, while occasionally occurring with the contracted future of *decir*, now regularly have the future stem *-decir* : —

Fut. bendeciré, bendecirás, etc., Cond. bendecir-ía, -ías, etc.

Fut. maldeciré, maldecirás, etc., Cond. maldecir-ía, -ías, etc.

197. **Hago, hacer, hice, hecho, to do, make.**

Gerund. **haciendo.**

Pres. Ind. hag-o, haces, hace, hacemos, hacéis, hacen.

Pres. Sub. hag-a, hagas, haga, hagamos, hagáis, hagan.

Imperat. haz, haga, hagamos, haced, hagan.

Imperf. hacía, hacías, hacía, hacíamos, hacíais, hacían.

Fut. har-é, harás, hará, haremos, haréis, harán.

Cond. har-ía, harías, haría, haríamos, haríais, harían.

Pret. hice, -iste, hizo, hicimos, hicisteis, hicie-ron.

Imp. Sub. 1. hicie-ra, 2. hiciese, Fut. Sub. hiciere.

Idioms. **Hacer** occurs in numerous idiomatic expressions, some of which we have seen in 158, *b*. A few others are :—

Yo hago hacer un traje nuevo.	I am having made a new suit.
Voy á hacerme la barba.	I am going to shave.
Hace las veces del capitán.	He is discharging the duties of the captain.
Ese actor hace el papel de Hámlet.	That actor plays the part of Hamlet.
Ha hecho bancarrota.	He has failed (in business).
Lo haré venir mañana.	I will send for it to-morrow.
Hacía de escribano ayer.	He was acting as notary yesterday.
Hizo gran papel en París.	He cut a great figure in Paris.
Hacer cara <i>or</i> frente á . . .	To face, to resist . . .
Hacer penitencia con alguno.	To take pot-luck with any one.
Hicimos vela <i>or</i> nos hicimos á la vela para San Juan.	We set sail for San Juan.
Hago por acabarlo.	I am trying to finish it.

198. All the compounds of *hacer* are conjugated like it. Some of them appear with the older form *-facer*, but this does not cause them to vary from those in *-hacer*. **Satisfacer**, *to satisfy*, alone has the two imperatives *satisfaz* and *satisface tú*. The Academy condemns the regular forms *satisfaciera*, *satisfaciese*, and *satisfaciere*, which are sometimes found.

199. Salgo, salir, salí, salido, *to go or come out, depart*.

Pres. Ind. salg-o, sales, sale, salimos, salís, salen.

Pres. Sub. salg-a, salgas, salga, salgamos, salgáis, salgan.

Imperat. sal, salga, salgamos, salid, salgan.

Imperf. salía, salías, salía, salíamos, salíais, salían.

Fut. saldr-é, -ás, -á, saldremos, saldréis, saldrán.
Cond. saldr-ía, -ías, -ía, saldríamos, saldríais, saldrían.
Pret. salí, saliste, salió, salimos, salisteis, **salie**-ron.
Imp. Sub. 1. **saliera**, 2. **saliese**, *Fut. Sub.* **saliere**.
Gerund. **saliendo**.

Idioms with *salir*.

El sol sale .	The sun rises.
Salga lo que saliera .	Come out of it what may.
El caballo me salió en cien pesos.	The horse cost me a hundred dollars.
El libro saldrá á luz el diez del corriente.	The book will be published on the 10th of the current month.
Ella salía de sí.	She was in raptures.
Ese barril se sale .	This barrel leaks.
Ha salido con la suya.	He has carried his point.
Á causa del arancel salen caros esos géneros.	Because of the tariff, those goods come dear.
Salir á caballo, en coche.	To go riding, driving.

200. Valgo, **valer**, **valí**, **valido**, *to be worth*.

Pres. Ind. **valg**-o, vales, vale, valemos, valéis, valen.
Pres. Sub. **valg**-a, **valgas**, **valga**, **valgamos**, **valgáis**, **valgan**.
Imperat. val or vale, **valga**, **valgamos**, valed, **valgan**.
Imperf. **valía**, **valías**, **valía**, **valíamos**, **valíais**, **valían**.
Fut. **valdr**-é, -ás, -á, **valdremos**, **valdréis**, **valdrán**.
Cond. **valdr**-ía, -ías, -ía, **valdríamos**, **valdríais**, **valdrían**.
Pret. **valí**, -iste, **valió**, **valimos**, **valisteis**, **valie**-ron.
Imp. Sub. 1. **valiera**, 2. **valiese**, *Fut. Sub.* **valiere**.
Gerund. **valiendo**.

Idioms with *valer*.

Más vale saber que haber.	Wisdom is better than riches.
<i>No vale la pena de hacerlo.</i>	It is not worth while to do it.

No se valdrá de su ventaja.	He will not avail himself of his advantage.
¡ Válgame Dios !	Good gracious ! Gracious me !
Vale lo que pesa.	He is worth his weight (in gold).
Más vale tarde que nunca.	Better late than never.
Será difícil hacerlo valer .	It will be difficult to make use of it.
Valga lo que valiere .	Let whatever may, come to pass.
No se puede valer con él.	It is not possible to manage him.

201. Pongo, poner, puse, puesto, to put, put on.

Gerund. poniendo.

Pres. Ind. **pong-o, pones, pone, ponemos, ponéis, ponen.**

Pres. Sub. **pong-a, pongas, ponga, pongamos, pongáis, pongan.**

Imperat. **pon, ponga, pongamos, poned, pongan.**

Imperf. **ponía, -ías, -ía, poníamos, poníais, ponían.**

Fut. **pondr-e, -ás, -á, pondremos, pondréis, pondrán.**

Cond. **pondría, -ías, -ía, pondríamos, pondríais, pondrían.**

Pret. **puse, pusiste, puso, pusimos, pusisteis, pusie-ron.**

Imp. Sub. **1. pusiera, 2. pusiese, Fut. Sub. pusiere.**

NOTE.—The compounds of *poner* are conjugated in the same manner.

Idioms with *poner*.

El sol se pone .	The sun is setting.
Se pone el sombrero y después se lo quita.	He puts on his hat and then takes it off.
Se me pone carne de gallina.	My flesh creeps (I have goose flesh).
Puse ayer un telegrama.	I sent a telegram yesterday.
Puso fin á su vida por medio de gas del alumbrado.	He put an end to his life by means of illuminating gas.
Póngalo V. por escrito.	Put it down in writing.
Ponerse pálido, colorado, malo.	To grow pale, to blush, to get sick.

Se pone en jarras.	He sets his arms akimbo.
Ella se puso á llorar.	She began to weep.
Ponerse bien con Dios.	To make one's peace with God.

202. Vengo, **venir**, vine, venido, *to come*.

<i>Pres. Ind.</i> veng-o, vienes, viene, venimos, venís, vienen.
<i>Pres. Sub.</i> veng-a, vengas, venga, vengamos, vengáis, vengan.
<i>Imperat.</i> ven, venga, vengamos, venid, vengán.
<i>Imperf.</i> venía, -ías, -ía, veníamos, veníais, venían.
<i>Fut.</i> vendr-é, -ás, -á, vendremos, vendréis, vendrán.
<i>Cond.</i> vendría, -ías, -ía, vendríamos, vendríais, vendrían.
<i>Pret.</i> vine, viniste, vino, vinimos, vinisteis, vinie-ron.
<i>Imp. Sub.</i> 1. viniera, 2. viniese, <i>Fut. Sub.</i> viniere.
<i>Gerund.</i> viniendo.

NOTE.—All compounds of *venir* have the same irregularities as above.

Idioms with *venir*.

Esa chaqueta no me viene.	That jacket does not fit me.
Vino á conseguir la plaza.	He has obtained the place.
Vengo con quien vengo.	That's my business and not yours.
Venga lo que viniere.	Come what may come.
Se viene durmiendo.	He is falling to sleep.
Vengamos al caso.	Let's come to the point.

203. Tengo, **tener**, tuve, tenido, *to have, hold*.

The full conjugation is given in 136.

The compounds of *tener* have the same conjugation.

Idioms with *tener* have been given in 138, 2 and 3, and only a few others will be set down here:—

Que no tenga V. novedad.	I hope you will find things all right at home.
Buenos días tenga usted.	I wish you good morning.

Tenga V. la bondad de decirme . . .	Have the goodness to tell me . . .
Tiene mucho de miserable.	He has a good deal of the miser about him.
No se podía tener en pie.	He could not stand up.

204. Quepo, caber, cupe, cabido, to hold, be contained.

Gerund. cabiendo.

Pres. Ind. **quep**-o, **cabes**, **cabe**, **cabemos**, **cabéis**, **caben**.

Pres. Sub. **quep**-a, **quepas**, **quepa**, **quepamos**, **quepáis**, **quepan**.

Imperat. **cabe**, **quepa**, **quepamos**, **cabed**, **quepan**.

Imperf. **cabía**, **-ías**, **-ía**, **cabíamos**, **cabíais**, **cabían**.

Fut. **cabr**-é, **-ás**, **-á**, **cabremos**, **cabréis**, **cabrán**.

Cond. **cabr**-ía, **-ías**, **-ía**, **cabríamos**, **cabríais**, **cabrían**.

Pret. **cupe**, **-iste**, **cupo**, **cupimos**, **cupisteis**, **cupie**-ron.

Imp. Sub. 1. **cupiera**, 2. **cupiese**, *Fut. Sub.* **cupiere**.

Idioms with *caber*.

Este hombre no cabe por la puerta.	This man can't get in through the door.
No cabe duda.	There is no doubt about it.
Si cabe .	If it be possible.
¿ Cabe usted?	Is there room for you?
No caben tantas personas en la iglesia.	The church will not contain so many people.
No cabe más.	That settles it, caps the climax.
No cabe en el mundo.	The world is not big enough to hold him.
Cabe suponer se tratará de la guerra y no de la paz.	There is room for supposing it will be a question of war and not of peace.
Todo cabe en fulano.	So and so is capable of anything.
Yo no quepo de gozo.	I am overjoyed.

205. Veo, **ver**, **ví**, **visto**, *to see*.*Pres. Ind.* **ve**-o, ves, ve, vemos, **véis**, ven.*Pres. Sub.* **ve**-a, **veas**, **vea**, **veamos**, **veáis**, **vean**.*Imperat.* **ve**, **vea**, **veamos**, **ved**, **vean**.*Imperf.* **veía**, **veías**, **veía**, **veíamos**, **veíais**, **veían**.*Fut.* **ver**-é, **verás**, **verá**, **veremos**, **veréis**, **verán**.*Cond.* **ver**-ía, **verías**, **vería**, **veríamos**, **veríais**, **verían**.*Pret.* **ví**, **viste**, **vió**, **vimos**, **visteis**, **vieron**.*Imp. Sub.* 1. **viera**, 2. **viese**, *Fut. Sub.* **viere**.*Gerund.* **viendo**.

NOTE. — Occasionally in poetry are found the old forms of the imperfect: *via*, *vias*, *via*, *viamos*, *viais*, *vian*, and the populace still use the old preterits *yo vide* for *ví* and *él vido* for *vió*.

206. The compounds of *ver* are inflected like the simple verb. The infinitive was formerly *veer*, and this form appears in some of the compounds. In that case the conjugation is regular like any other verb in *-eer*, as *leer*, *creer*, *poseer*, in whose conjugation unaccented *i* between two vowels becomes *y*. See 143, *d*.

Proveo, **proveer**, **proveí**, **proveído** or **provisto**, *to provide*.

Pres. Ind. proveo, provees, provee, etc. *Imperf.* proveía, etc.*Pres. Sub.* provea, *Imperat.* provee, —, —, proveed, —.*Fut.* **proveeré**, *Cond.* **proveería**.*Pret.* **proveí**, **-iste**, **proveyó**, **proveímos**, **-isteis**, **proveye**-ron.*Imp. Sub.* 1. **proveyera**, 2. **proveyese**, *Fut. Sub.* **proveyere**.*Gerund.* **proveyendo**.Idioms with *ver*.Eso está **de ver**.

That is worth seeing.

Eso está **por ver**.

That remains to be seen.

Á ver or **vamos á ver**.

Let's see.

Ya se ve.

It is evident, to be sure.

No te **verás** en ese espejo.

You will not see yourself in that glass, *i.e.* will not succeed in that way.

Hágamelo **ver**.

Show it to me.

Yo le haré **ver** las estrellas.

I will make him see stars.

207. **Ducir**, to lead, as an independent verb, is no longer in use, but it has several compounds which are conjugated in the present stem according to **143, a**. In the preterit the stem changes to **duj**.

Induzco, **inducir**, induje, inducido, *to induce*.

Gerund. induciendo.

Pres. Ind. induzc-o, induces, induce, -imos, -ís, inducen.

Pres. Sub. induzc-a, -as, -a, **induzcamos**, -áis, **induzcan**.

Imperat. induce, **induzca**, -amos, inducid, **induzcan**.

Imperf. inducía, -ías, -ía, inducíamos, -íais, inducían.

Fut. induciré, Cond. induciría.

Pret. induje, -iste, **indujo**, -imos, -isteis, **induje-ron**.

Imp. Sub. 1. **indujera**, 2. **indujese**, *Fut. Sub.* **indujere**.

NOTE. — For loss of *i* in preterit stem see **143, c**.

208. **Placer**, *to please*, is of infrequent use and is confined to the third person, chiefly singular, *i.e.* as an impersonal verb. Its place is usually taken by other verbs, as *agradar*, to please, *gustar*, to suit, please, *querer*, to wish, etc.

Place, **placer**, plugo (plació), placido, *to please*.

Gerund. placiendo.

Pres. Ind. place.

Pres. Sub. **plazca** (plegue).

Imperat. plegue (plega).

Imperf. placia.

Pret. **plugo** (plació).

1. *Imp. Sub.* **pluguiera** (placiera).

2. *Imp. Sub.* **pluguiese** (placiese).

Fut. Sub. **pluguiera** (placiere).

Fut. Ind. placirá.

Cond. placiría.

NOTE. — **Desplacer**, to displease, is found in about the same forms, and an occasional plural form of both verbs occurs. The Academy is of opinion that there is no special reason why both should not be conjugated in full like other verbs in *-cer*, but that as an impersonal the forms above are preferable.

Complacer, to oblige, may be conjugated regularly in full, inserting *s* before *c* when this letter comes before *a* or *o*: —

Pres. Ind. complazco, complaces, complace, etc.

Pres. Sub. complazca, complazcas, etc.

See 143, *a*.

209. The following verbs are grouped together, because they perform many of the functions of the English modal auxiliaries. **Deber** is regular, but is given for convenience.

Puedo, **poder**, pude, podido, *to be able, may, can*.

Sé, **saber**, supe, sabido, *to know, can*.

Quiero, **querer**, quise, querido, *to wish, will, like*.

Debo, **deber**, debí, debido, *to owe, ought, must*.

Gerunds: pudiendo, sabiendo, queriendo, debiendo.

PRESENT INDICATIVE

puedo	sé	quiero	debo
puedes	sabes	quieres	debes
puede	sabe	quiere	debe
podemos	sabemos	queremos	debemos
podéis	sabéis	queréis	debéis
pueden	saben	quieren	deben

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

pueda	sepa	quiera	deba
puedas	sepas	quieras	debas
pueda	sepa	quiera	deba
podamos	sepamos	queramos	debamos
podáis	sepáis	queráis	debáis
puedan	sepan	quieran	deban

IMPERATIVE

puede	sabe	quiere	debe
pueda	sepa	quiera	deba
podamos	sepamos	queramos	debamos
poded	sabed	quered	debed
puedan	sepan	quieran	deban

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE

podía	sabía	quería	debía
podías	sabías	querías	debías
podía	sabía	quería	debía
podíamos	sabíamos	queríamos	debíamos
podíais	sabíais	queríais	debíais
podían	sabían	querían	debían

FUTURE INDICATIVE

podré	sabré	querré	deberé
--------------	--------------	---------------	---------------

CONDITIONAL

podría	sabría	querría	debería
---------------	---------------	----------------	----------------

PRETERIT

pude	supe	quise	debí
pudiste	supiste	quisiste	debiste
pudo	supo	quiso	debió
pudimos	supimos	quisimos	debimos
pudisteis	supisteis	quisisteis	debisteis
pudie-ron	supie-ron	quisie-ron	debie-ron

1. IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

pudiera	supiera	quisiera	debiera
----------------	----------------	-----------------	----------------

2. IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

pudiese	supiese	quisiese	debiese
----------------	----------------	-----------------	----------------

FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE

pudiere	supiere	quisiere	debiera
----------------	----------------	-----------------	----------------

210. Poder expresses physical or moral ability, possibility, liability, authority, permission, etc. It is constructed with a dependent infinitive and is variously equivalent to our *may, can, might, could*; but as these may have different shades of meaning, it is best, when there is any doubt, to resolve them into the equivalent forms of the verb *to be able*. The following examples will show some of the many uses of *poder*:—

No puede alcanzarlo.	He can not (is not able to) reach it.
No pueden menos de sentirlo.	They can not help regretting it.
Yo no puedo verle.	I can not bear to look at him, <i>i.e.</i> I detest him.
Mamá, ¿ puedo salir á jugar?	Mama, may I go out to play?
Podemos hacer lo que nos guste.	We can (have the authority to) do whatever we please.
¡Cuidado! puede V. caer en el agua.	Look out! you may fall into the water.
Me dijo que podía venir.	He told me he could (was able to) come.
Estaba desalentado; no podía (pudo) más.	He was out of breath; he could (do) no more.
Se consoló como mejor pudo .	He consoled himself as best he could.
Hasta ahora no he podido encontrarlo.	Up to the present I have not been able to find it.
Yo había dicho todo lo que había podido .	I had said all that I could (had been able to) say.
Yo podré hacerlo mañana.	I can (shall be able to) do it to-morrow.
Me aseguró que no podría venir.	He assured me he could not (would not be able to) come.
Se hubiera podido escapar de la cárcel.	He might have escaped from the prison.

Puede haberlo olvidado.

He may have forgotten it.

Podría haberlo perdido.

He might have lost it.

Puede ser, **podrá** ser.

It may be so.

Eso no **se puede**.

That can not be (done).

211. Saber expresses mental ability — *to know how*, as knowledge is power. Hence it may take the place of *poder*, whenever this idea is present. Its use, however, as an auxiliary is not very extensive, and a few examples will suffice : —

Tiene ya doce años y no **sabe** todavía escribir. He is already twelve years old and he can not write yet.

Era muy rico pero no **sabía** guardar su dinero. He was very rich, but he did not know how to (could not) keep his money.

Si se me acomete, yo **sabré** defenderme. If I am attacked, I shall be able to defend myself.

a. As an independent verb **saber** means to have such knowledge as comes from the exercise of the mental faculties — subjective knowledge. Hence : —

Yo **sé** la música, la geografía, la lengua castellana, mi lección, que mi hermano está en Boston, etc. I know (understand) music, geography, the Spanish language, my lesson, that my brother is in Boston, etc.

b. Conocer (see 143, *a*), on the other hand, is to know persons and things by external observation — objective knowledge. Hence : —

Yo **conozco** al capitán, el libro, el camino, la casa del maestro, la cortesía, la buena crianza, etc. I know the captain, the book, the road, the teacher's house, politeness, good breeding, etc.

212. *Querer*, with a dependent infinitive, is used instead of the future and conditional forms of the verb, whenever *will* and *would* mean *willingness, wish, inclination* :—

¿Quién **quiere** prestarme cinco Who will (is willing to) lend
duros? me five dollars?

Le pregunté si **quería** ir al teatro. I asked him whether he would
(wished to) go to the theater.

No **quiso** contestar. He would not (was not willing
to) answer.

Dijo que no **querría** venir. He said he would not (would
not be willing to) come.

Dudo que **quiera** aceptarlo. I doubt whether he will (will
be willing to) accept it.

Quisiera ir con usted. I should like to go with you.

a. Querer, when not employed as an auxiliary, means *to love, wish, desire*, etc. :—

Quiero á mis amigos. I love my friends.

¿Qué más **quiere**? What more does he desire?

¿Qué **quiere** decir eso? What does that mean?

Como usted **quisiere**. As you will, wish.

213. *Deber* is constructed through all its moods and tenses with a dependent infinitive, and thus has, in English, various equivalents, the most common of which are *should, must, ought*; but these, where they are defective in mood and tense forms, have to be supplemented by other verbs which have full inflections, such as *to have to, to be obliged, compelled*, etc. A careful study of a few examples will enable the student to gain some insight into this rather complex subject :—

Los juramentos ó no **deben** ha- Oaths either ought not to be
cerse ó **deben** cumplirse. made or ought to be kept.

Él debe ir á la ciudad hoy por la mañana.	He has to go to the city this morning.
Esta escena debía quedar como un secreto entre la muerte y yo.	This scene was to remain as a secret between death and myself.
El general opinó que la campaña debía proseguirse.	The general thought that the campaign ought to go on.
Yo tampoco debí someterme á tal debilidad.	Nor was I to subject myself to such weakness.
Debió de recibir alguna mala nueva.	He must have received some bad news.
Hemos debido hacer frente á un nuevo peligro.	We have been compelled to face a new danger.
No debe de haber llegado todavía.	He can not have arrived yet.
Él había debido venir á caballo á causa del mal estado del camino.	He had been obliged to come on horseback because of the bad condition of the road.
Debían de haber atacado la fortaleza antes de la salida del sol.	They must have attacked the fort before sunrise.
Si usted quiere ir de caza conmigo deberá estar aquí á las cuatro en punto.	If you wish to go hunting with me, you will have to be here at four o'clock sharp.
Usted no debería aceptarlo.	You should not (ought not to) accept it.
El congreso debiera reunirse cuanto antes.	Congress should (ought to) meet as soon as possible.

NOTE.—The preposition *de* is used as a connective between *deber* and the infinitive, when it is desired to express a *doubt*, a *supposition*, or an *inference*. The Academy condemns the use of *de*, when no such idea is present, very properly maintaining that there is a wide difference between Juan debe estar agradecido, *John ought to be grateful*, and Juan debe de estar agradecido, *John must be grateful*. Good writers, however, do not always observe the distinction.

a. Deber, in its primary meaning of *to owe*, takes the direct object: —

Me *debe* 500 pesos con interés. He owes me five hundred dollars with interest.

Es una obligación que *debo* á la amistad. It is an obligation which I owe to friendship.

214. *Voy, ir, fuí, ido, to go* (with a definite limit).

Gerund. yendo.

Pres. Ind. *voy, vas, va, vamos, váis van.*

Pres. Sub. *vay-a, vayas, vaya, vayamos, vayáis, vayan.*

Imperat. *ve, vaya, vamos, id, vayan.*

Imperf. *iba, ibas, iba, íbamos, ibais, iban.*

Fut. *ir-é, irás, irá, iremos, iréis, irán.*

Cond. *ir-la, irías, iría, iríamos, iríais, irían.*

Pret. *fuí, fuiste, fué, fuimos, fuisteis, fue-ron.*

1. *Imp. Sub.* *fue-ra, -ras, -ra, fuéramos, fuerais, fueran.*

2. *Imp. Sub.* *fue-se, -ses, -se, fuésemos, fueseis, fuesen.*

Fut. Sub. *fue-re, -res, -re, fuéremos, fuereis, fueren.*

See 188, Note.

215. *Ir á*, with a dependent infinitive, is used to express *intention* or an *immediate future*: —

Él *va á* oír misa. He is going to hear mass.

Yo *voy á* partir para Europa esta tarde. I am going to start for Europe this afternoon.

a. Other idioms with ir.

Eso es lo que *voy* diciendo. That is just what I am saying.

Á despecho de todo *iba* pidiendo limosna. In spite of everything he went on asking alms.

Ella no *va á* medias. She does not do things by halves.

Ya se ve que V. no *va* sobre seguro. It is evident that you are not on safe ground.

Ha ido en busca de su amigo.	He has gone in search of his friend.
Vamos á pie , si no hallamos coche.	Let's walk, if we do not find a carriage.
Vaya V. con Dios.	Farewell (God be with you).
Mucho va de Pedro á Pedro.	There is a great difference between men and men.
Por donde fueres, haz como vieres.	If you go to Rome, do as the Romans.

216. *Acabar*, to complete, finish, when followed by *de* and an infinitive, means *to have just done the action expressed by the infinitive*, i.e. it expresses an immediate past : —

Acabo de escribir mi tema.	I have just finished writing my composition.
Acabábamos de comprar la casa.	We had just bought the house.
Acabó de llegar.	He had just arrived.

Note that *acabar de*, with a negative, may have a different meaning : —

No acabo de maravillarme.	I can not help wondering.
----------------------------------	---------------------------

DEFECTIVE VERBS

217. Ten verbs are defective only in the present stem, as indicated by the dashes below (*a*). The other tenses are complete. The first six are regular; the others are conjugated according to the models of the paragraphs set opposite them.

abolir, <i>abolish</i> .	reg.	manir, <i>make tender</i> (of meat).	reg.
desmarrirse, <i>become sad</i> .	"	aguerrir, <i>accustom to war</i> .	174.
despavorir, <i>be terrified</i> .	"	arrecirse, <i>grow numb</i> .	"
embaír, <i>deceive</i> .	"	aterirse, <i>grow numb</i> .	"
garantir, <i>guarantee</i> .	"	empedernir, <i>harden</i> .	181.

MODEL

a. — abolir, abolí, abolido, to abolish.

Pres. Ind. —, —, —, abolimos, abolís, —.

Pres. Sub. —, —, —, —, —, —.

Imperat. —, —, —, abolid, —.

Imperf. abolía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían.

Fut. aboliré, -ás, etc. *Cond.* aboliría, -ías, etc.

Pret. abolí, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, abolie-ron.

Imp. Sub. 1. abolie-ra, 2. aboliese, *Fut. Sub.* aboliere.

Gerund. aboliendo.

218. Raer, to erase, is, for the most part, superseded by other words. When it occurs, it follows the conjugation of caer (192), but in addition has 1st per. sing. pres. ind. rayo and the present subjunctive : raya, rayas, raya, etc.

219. Roer, to gnaw, has :—

Pres. Ind. roo, roigo, and royo, roes, roe, etc., regular.

Pres. Sub. ro-a, roig-a, and roy-a, -as, -a, etc.

Imperf. roía, roías, roía, etc.

a. Corroer, to corrode, has :—

Pres. Ind. —, —; corroe, —, —, corroen.

Pres. Sub. —, —, corroa, —, —, corroan.

220. The following three verbs occur sporadically in the third persons only :—

a. Aplacer, to please.

Pres. Ind. —, —, aplace, —, —, aplacen.

Imperf. —, —, aplacia, —, —, aplacian.

Note the proverb : Todo lo nuevo aplace, all novelty is pleasing.

b. Atañer, to appertain.

Pres. Ind. —, —, atañe, —, —, atañen.

c. **Concernir**, *to concern*, pp. **concernido**.

Pres. Ind. concierne, conciernen, *Pres. Sub.* concierna, -an.

Imperf. concernía, concernían.

Fut. concernirá, -án, *Cond.* concerniría, -ían.

Pret. concernió, concernie-ron.

Imp. Sub. 1. concniera, 2. concniese, *Fut. Sub.* concnierre.

Gerund. concniendo.

221. **Soler**, *to be accustomed*, has the present and imperfect indicative and an occasional compound with the past participle **sólido** : —

Pres. Ind. suelo, sueles. *suele*, *solemos*, *soléis*, *suelen*.

Imperf. solía, solías, solía, solíamos, solíais, solían.

REMARK.—There are other verbs which, though having all their forms, are of infrequent use except in the third persons, but they present no peculiarities which require presentation here.

IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES

222. Four verbs and their compounds have no other irregularities than their past participles : —

abrir, *open*, pp. **abierto**.

escribir, *write*, pp. **escrito**.

cubrir, *cover*, pp. **cubierto**.

imprimir, *print*, *impress*, pp.
impreso.

a. Two compounds of *escribir* have two participles : —

inscribir, *inscribe*, pp. **inscripto**, **inscrito**.

proscribir, *proscribe*, pp. **proscripto**, **proscrito**.

223. The following have two participles, but are otherwise regular : —

oprimir, *oppress*, pp. **oprimido**, **opreso**.

suprimir, *suppress*, pp. **suprimido**, **supreso**.

prender, *catch*, pp. **prendido**, **preso**.

romper, *break*, pp. **rompido**, **roto**.

NOTE. — The regular participles of *oprimir* and *suprimir* are preferred, while *preso* and *roto* are more frequently used than the regular participles.

224. The grammars usually give a long list of verbs said to have two past participles, one regular and another derived from the Latin; but as the latter are listed in the dictionaries as adjectives or substantives and are only used as such, there seems to be no good reason why a grammar should be encumbered with them. They are, therefore, omitted here.

225. Quite a number of past participles, properly belonging to the dictionaries, have, notwithstanding their passive form, an active meaning. A few examples will suffice:—

agradecer, *to thank*, pp. agradecido, *grateful*.

atreverse, *to dare*, pp. atrevido, *daring*.

entender, *to understand*, pp. entendido, *intelligent*.

fingir, *to feign*, pp. fingido, *dissembling*.

OTHER VERBAL IDIOMS

226. Become and its synonym get are variously rendered in Spanish —

1. By *ponerse* :—

Al oír la noticia *se puso* muy triste. On hearing the news he became very sad.

Venga V., que *se pone* fría la sopa. Come along, for the soup is getting cold.

2. By *volverse*, *tornarse* :—

Se volvió alegre al ver á su hijo. He became cheerful on seeing his son.

De pálido que está se torna lívido. From pale he becomes livid.

3. By *hacerse* :—

El padre *se me hacía* cada día más intolerable. The father was getting daily more intolerable to me.

4. By *salir* :—

Si continúa así, *saldrá* un a- If he continues thus, he will
famado orador. become a famous orator.

5. By *venir á ser, meterse á, llegar á ser, ser* :—

Vino á ser el valido de la reina. He became the favorite of the queen.

Me dijo que quería *meterse á* actor. He told me he wished to become an actor.

Dudo que *llegue á ser* primer ministro. I doubt whether he will become prime minister.

¿Qué *había sido* de él? What had become of him?

6. By *quedar* :—

Quedó convencido de su error. He became convinced of his error.

NOTE.—There are many other ways of translating *become*, particularly by certain verbs in *-ecer*, as *enfurecerse*, *to become furious*, *envejecer*, *to become old*, *envanecerse*, *to become proud*.

227. Volver á (see 171), followed by an infinitive, generally indicates a repetition of the action expressed by the infinitive. It frequently translates our *again* or prefix *re*, the latter being little used in Spanish :—

Vuelvo á leer el dictado. I read again the dictation.

Volverá á escribir el tema, si se lo mando. He will rewrite the exercise if I order him to.

Volvamos á decírselo. Let's repeat it to him again.

Other idioms with *volver*.

✓ Su charla me volverá loco.	His babbling will turn me mad.
Déjele V., volverá en sí dentro de poco.	Leave him, he will soon come back to his senses.
La burla se volvió contra él.	His joke turned out to be a boomerang.
Se me volvió la tortilla.	The tables were turned on me.
El buque se volvió patas arriba.	The ship turned topsy-turvy.
Volveré á casa mañana.	I shall return home to-morrow.

228. Echar, besides its common meaning of *to throw*, enters into numerous idioms of daily use:—

Al ratero se le echó á puntapiés fuera de la ciudad en vez de echarle á galeras.	The thief was kicked out of the town instead of being sent to the galleys.
Sería echar agua en el mar.	It would be carrying coals to Newcastle.
Echar el agua á un niño	To baptize a child.
Echaron la plática á otra parte.	They cut short the conversation.
Echar el pie adelante ó atrás.	To progress or retrograde.
Echar raíces, hojas, bigotes, canas, piernas, suertes.	To put forth roots, leaves, to grow a mustache, get gray, strut about, draw lots.
Entre V. en la alcoba y échele el cerrojo ó la llave á la puerta.	Go into the bedroom and bolt or lock the door.
Me lo echó en cara.	He reproached me for it.
Echo de menos á mi hermano.	I miss my brother.
El corrector de pruebas no ha echado de ver el error.	The proof-reader did not notice the error.
Si te lo dijera, lo echarias á perder .	If I told it to you, you would spoil it.
Echó á reír á carcajadas.	He burst out into a horse-laugh.

Derribó al centinela y echó á correr por el patio. He knocked down the sentinel and began to run across the yard.

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

229. The figures refer to the paragraphs of the grammar and mean that the verbs after which they are placed are conjugated like the ones in the paragraphs indicated.

This list, while not complete, contains all the important verbs, — more, in fact, than the student will ever need to learn. The definitions have been given in the hope of adding some interest, as well as value, to an otherwise dull catalogue of meaningless words. The *to* of the English infinitive has been omitted as unnecessary.

A

- | | |
|--|---|
| Abastecer, 143 , <i>a.</i> provide. | Agorar, 167 , <i>a.</i> divine. |
| Aborrecer, 143 , <i>a.</i> abhor. | Agradecer, 143 , <i>a.</i> thank. |
| Abrir, 222 . open. | Aguerrir, 217 . accustom to war. |
| Absolver, 171 . absolve. | Alentar, 164 . breathe. |
| Abstenerse, 136 . abstain. | Almorzar, 143 , 4 , 167 . breakfast. |
| Abstraer, 193 . abstract. | Alongar 167 , 143 , 2 . enlarge. |
| Acaecer, 159 , 143 , <i>a.</i> happen. | Amanecer, 158 . dawn. |
| Acertar, 164 . hit the mark. | Amoblar, 167 . furnish. |
| Acontecer, 159 , 143 , <i>a.</i> happen. | Amolar, 167 . whet. |
| Acordar, 167 . decide, remind. | Amortecer, 143 , <i>a.</i> faint. |
| Acostar, 167 . lay down, put to bed. | Andar, 188 . go. |
| Adestrar, 164 . guide. | Anocheecer, 158 . become night. |
| Adherir, 174 . adhere. | Antedecir, 196 . predict. |
| Adormecer, 143 , <i>a.</i> put to sleep. | Anteponer, 201 . put before. |
| Adquirir, 176 . acquire. | Antever, 205 . foresee. |
| Aducir, 207 . adduce. | Apacentar, 164 . graze. |
| Advertir, 174 . observe. | Aparecer, 143 , <i>a.</i> appear. |
| | Apetecer, 143 , <i>a.</i> long for. |
| | Apostar, 167 . bet, station. |

Apretar, 164. squeeze.
 Aprobar, 167. approve.
 Argüir, 186. argue.
 Arrecirse, 217. grow numb.
 Arrendar, 164. rent.
 Arrepentirse, 174. repent.
 Ascender, 166. ascend.
 Asentar, 164. set down.
 Asentir, 174. coincide.
 Aserrar, 164. saw.
 Asir, 190. grasp.
 Asoldar, 167. hire.
 Atañer, 220, *b*. appertain.
 Atender, 166. attend to, care for.
 Atenerse, 136. abide by.
 Atentar, 164. attempt a crime.
 Aterirse, 217. grown numb.
 Atraer, 193. attract.
 Atravesar, 164. cross.
 Atribuir, 185. attribute.
 Atronar, 167. thunder, stun.
 Aventar, 164. winnow.
 Avergonzar, 167, *a*. shame.

B

Bendecir, 196. bless.
 Bienquerer, 209. wish well.
 Blanquecer, 143, *a*. bleach.
 Bruñir, 143, *c*. burnish.
 Bullir, 143, *c*. boil.

C

Caber, 204. be contained.
 Caer, 192. fall.
 Calentar, 164. warm.

Canecer, 143, *a*. get gray.
 Carecer, 143, *a*. lack.
 Cegar, 143, 2, 164. blind.
 Ceñir, 143, *c*, 181. gird.
 Cerner, 166. sift.
 Cerrar, 164. close.
 Cimentar, 164. found.
 Circuir, 185. surround.
 Clarecer, 143, *a*. dawn.
 Cocer, 143, 5, & *a*. boil, bake.
 Colar, 167. strain.
 Colegir, 143, 8, 181. collect.
 Colgar, 143, 2, 167. hang up.
 Comenzar, 143, 4, 164. begin.
 Compadecer, 143, *a*. pity.
 Comparecer, 143, *a*. appear.
 Competir, 181. compete.
 Complacer, 143, *a*. please.
 Componer, 201. compose.
 Comprobar, 167. verify.
 Concebir, 181. conceive.
 Concernir, 220, *c*. concern.
 Concertar, 164. concert.
 Concluir, 185. conclude.
 Concordar, 167. agree.
 Condescender, 166. condescend.
 Condolerse, 170. condole.
 Conducir, 207. conduct.
 Conferir, 174. confer.
 Confesar, 164. confess.
 Conmover, 170. affect, stir.
 Conocer, 143, *a*. know.
 Conseguir, 143, 10, 181. obtain,
 accomplish.
 Consentir, 174. consent.

Consolar, **167**. console.
 Constituir, **185**. constitute.
 Construir, **185**. construct.
 Contar, **167**. count, relate.
 Contender, **166**. contend.
 Contener, **136**. contain.
 Contorcerse, **143**, **5**, **167**. writhe.
 Contradecir, **196**. contradict.
 Contraer, **193**. contract.
 Contrahacer, **197**. counterfeit.
 Contraponer, **201**. compare.
 Contravenir, **202**. contravene.
 Contribuir, **185**. contribute.
 Controvertir, **174**. controvert.
 Convalecer, **143**, *a.* convalesce.
 Convenir, **202**. agree, suit.
 Convertir, **174**. convert.
 Corregir, **143**, **8**, **181**. correct.
 Corroer, **219**, *a.* corrode.
 Costar, **167**. cost.
 Crecer, **143**, *a.* increase, grow.
 Creer, **206**. think, believe.
 Cubrir, **222**. cover.

D

Dar, **189**. give.
 Decaer, **192**. decay.
 Decir, **195**. say, tell.
 Decrecer, **143**, *a.* decrease.
 Deducir, **207**. deduce.
 Defender, **166**. defend.
 Deferir, **174**. defer.
 Degollar, **167**, *a.* throttle.
 Demoler, **170**. demolish.
 Demostrar, **167**. demonstrate.

Denegar, **143**, **2**, **164**. deny.
 Denegrecer, **143**, *a.* blacken.
 Denostar, **167**. insult.
 Dentar, **164**. teeth.
 Deponer, **201**. depose.
 Derrengar, **143**, **2**, **164**. sprain
 the hip.
 Derretir, **181**. melt.
 Derrocar, **143**, **1**, **167**. throw
 from a rock.
 Derruir, **185**. demolish.
 Desabastecer, **143**, *a.* deprive of
 provisions.
 Desacertar, **164**. err.
 Desacordar, **167**. forget.
 Desagradecer, **143**, *a.* be un-
 grateful.
 Desalentar, **164**. put out of
 breath.
 Desamoblar, **167**. unfurnish.
 Desandar, **188**. go back.
 Desaparecer, **143**, *a.* disappear.
 Desapretar, **164**. loosen.
 Desaprobar, **167**. disapprove.
 Desarrender, **164**. shake off the
 bridle.
 Desasir, **190**. loosen.
 Desasosegar, **143**, **2**, **164**. dis-
 quiet.
 Desatender, **166**. disregard.
 Desatentar, **164**. perplex.
 Desavenir, **202**. disconcert.
 Desbravecer, **143**, *a.* tame.
 Descender, **166**. descend.
 Desceñir, **143**, *c.*, **181**. ungird.

- Descolgar, **143, 2, 167.** unhang.
 Descollar, **167.** surpass.
 Descomadirse, **181.** be rude.
 Descomponer, **201.** discompose.
 Desconcertar, **164.** disconcert.
 Desconocer, **143, a.** disown.
 Desconsentir, **174.** dissent.
 Desconsolar, **167.** afflict.
 Descontar, **167.** discount.
 Desconvenir, **202.** disagree.
 Descordar, **167.** unstring.
 Descornar, **167.** dishorn.
 Decrecer, **143, a.** grow less.
 Descubrir, **222.** discover, uncover.
 Desdecir, **196.** charge with falsehood.
 Desdentar, **164.** draw teeth.
 Desembellecer, **143, a.** disem-
bellish.
 Desembravecer, **143, a.** tame.
 Desempedrar, **164.** unpave.
 Desempobrecer, **143, a.** quit
poverty.
 Desencerrar, **164.** set at liberty.
 Desencordar, **167.** unstring.
 Desenfurecerse, **143, a.** calm
oneself.
 Desengrosar, **167.** attenuate.
 Desenmohecer, **143, a.** remove
rust.
 Desennudecer, **143, a.** break
silence.
 Desensoberbecer, **143, a.** hum-
ble.
 Desentenderse, **166.** ignore.
 Desenterrar, **164.** disinter.
 Desentorpecer, **143, a.** free from
torpor.
 Desentristecer, **143, a.** enliven.
 Desentumecer, **143, a.** free from
numbness.
 Desenvolver, **171.** unfold.
 Deservir, **181.** fail in duty.
 Desfallecer, **143, a.** pine away.
 Desfavorecer, **143, a.** disfavor.
 Desflaquecerse, **143, a.** pine
away.
 Desflorecer, **143, a.** lose flowers.
 Desfortalecer, **143, a.** dismantle.
 Desgobernar, **164.** misgovern.
 Desguarnecer, **143, a.** dis-
garrison.
 Deshacer, **197.** undo.
 Deshelar, **158.** thaw.
 Desherbar, **164.** remove herbs.
 Desherrar, **164.** remove horse-
shoes.
 Deshumedecer, **143, a.** dry.
 Desleir, **182.** dilute.
 Deslucir, **143, a.** tarnish.
 Desmedirse, **181.** be unreason-
able.
 Desmembrar, **164.** dismember.
 Desmentir, **174.** give the lie.
 Desmerecer, **143, a.** demerit.
 Desnegar, **143, 2, 164.** retract.
 Desnevar, **158.** thaw.
 Desobedecer, **143, a.** disobey.
 Desoír, **194,** pretend not to hear.

- Desolar, **167**. desolate.
 Desoldar, **167**. unsolder.
 Desollar, **167**. skin.
 Desobstruir, **185**. deobstruct.
 Desosar, **169**. bone.
 Desovar, **169**. spawn.
 Desparecer, **143**, *a.* disappear.
 Despedir, **181**. dismiss.
 Despedrar, **164**. clear of stones.
 Despernar, **164**. cripple.
 Despertar, **164**. awake.
 Desplacer, **208**, Note. displease.
 Desplegar, **143**, **2**, **164**. unfold.
 Despoblar, **167**. depopulate.
 Desproveer, **206**. deprive of provisions.
 Desteñir, **143**, *c*, **181**. fade.
 Desterrar, **164**. banish.
 Destituir, **185**. deprive.
 Destorcer, **143**, **5**, **170**. untwist.
 Destrocar, **143**, **1**, **167**. swap back.
 Destruir, **185**. destroy.
 Desvanecer, **143**, *a.* vanish.
 Desventar, **164**. ventilate.
 Desvergonzarse, **167**, *a.* act impudently.
 Detener, **136**. detain.
 Detraer, **193**. detract.
 Devolver, **171**. return.
 Diferir, **174**. differ, defer.
 Digerir, **174**. digest.
 Diluir, **185**. dilute.
 Discernir, **174**. discern.
 Disconvenir, **202**. disagree.
 Discordar, **167**. disagree.
 Disentir, **174**. dissent.
 Disminuir, **185**. diminish.
 Disolver, **171**. dissolve.
 Disonar, **167**. be discordant.
 Displacer, **143**, *a.* displease.
 Disponer, **201**. arrange, dispose.
 Distráer, **193**. distract.
 Distribuir, **185**. distribute.
 Divertir, **174**. divert, amuse.
 Doler, **170**. ache, pain.
 Dormir, **177**. sleep.
- E
- Educir, **207**. educate.
 Elegir, **143**, **8**, **181**. elect.
 Embarbecer, **143**, *a.* grow a beard.
 Embebecer, **143**, *a.* astonish.
 Embellecer, **143**, *a.* embellish.
 Embestir, **181**. attack.
 Emblandecer, **143**, *a.* soften.
 Emblanquecer, **143**, *a.* whiten.
 Embobecer, **143**, *a.* stultify.
 Embravecer, **143**, *a.* irritate.
 Embrutecer, **143**, *a.* become brutal.
 Emparentar, **164**. be akin by marriage.
 Empedernir, **217**. harden.
 Empedrar, **164**. pave.
 Empequeñecer, **143**, *a.* diminish.
 Empezar, **143**, **4**, **164**. begin.
 Emplastecer, **143**, *a.* smooth for painting.

- Empobrecer, **143**, *a.* impoverish.
 Emporcar, **143**, **1**, **167**. soil, foul.
 Enaltecer, **143**, *a.* exalt.
 Enardecer, **143**, *a.* inflame.
 Encabellecerse, **143**, *a.* grow hair.
 Encallecer, **143**, *a.* become hard.
 Encalvecer, **143**, *a.* get bald.
 Encanecer, **143**, *a.* become gray.
 Encarecer, **143**, *a.* raise the price.
 Encender, **166**. kindle, light.
 Encerrar, **164**. lock up, inclose.
 Encloquecer, **143**, *a.* cluck.
 Encomendar, **164**. recommend.
 Encontrar, **167**. find, meet.
 Encubertar, **164**. cover over.
 Endentar, **164**. join with a mortise.
 Endentecer, **143**, *a.* teeth.
 Enflaquecer, **143**, *a.* thin.
 Enfranquecer, **143**, *a.* make free.
 Enfurecer, **143**, *a.* infuriate.
 Engrandecer, **143**, *a.* aggrandize.
 Engreírse, **182**. get proud.
 Engrosar, **167**. fatten.
 Enhambrecer, **143**, *a.* be hungry.
 Enloquecer, **143**, *a.* madden.
 Enlucir, **143**, *a.* whitewash.
 Enmagrecer, **143**, *a.* grow lean.
 Enmelar, **164**. bedaub with honey.
 Enmendar, **164**. correct.
 Enmohecer, **143**, *a.* mildew, *rust*.
 Enmudecer, **143**, *a.* grow dumb.
 Ennegrecer, **143**, *a.* blacken.
 Ennoblecer, **143**, *a.* ennoble.
 Ennudecer, **143**, *a.* knot.
 Enorgullecer, **143**, *a.* grow proud.
 Enrarecer, **143**, *a.* rarefy.
 Enriquecer, **143**, *a.* enrich.
 Enrobustecer, **143**, *a.* make robust.
 Enrodar, **167**. break on the wheel.
 Enrojecer, **143**, *a.* blush.
 Enronquecer, **143**, *a.* make hoarse.
 Enroñecer, **143**, *a.* tarnish.
 Enruinecerse, **143**, *a.* become vile.
 Ensangrentar, **164**. stain with blood.
 Ensoberebecer, **143**, *a.* make proud.
 Ensordecer, **143**, *a.* deafen.
 Entallecer, **143**, *a.* sprout.
 Entender, **166**. hear, understand.
 Enternecer, **143**, *a.* move to pity.
 Enterrar, **164**. inter.
 Entontecer, **143**, *a.* fool.
 Entorpecer, **143**, *a.* benumb.
 Entrededir, **196**. interdict.
 Entrelucir, **143**, *a.* glimmer.
 Entremorir, **178**. die away slowly.
 Entreoir, **194**. hear imperfectly.
 Entreponeer, **201**. interpose.
 Entretener, **136**. entertain.
 Entrever, **205**. get a glimpse of.

Entristecer, 143, a. sadden.
Entullecer, 143, a. stop, check.
Entumecer, 143, a. swell.
Envanecer, 143, a. make vain.
Envejecer, 143, a. grow old.
Enverdecer, 143, a. grow green.
Envilecer, 143, a. vilify.
Envolver, 171, wrap up, involve.
Enzurdecer, 143, a. become left-handed.
Equivaler, 200. be equal to.
Erguir, 175. erect.
Errar, 165. err, miss.
Escarmentar, 164. be warned.
Escarnecer, 143, a. scoff.
Esclarecer, 143, a. lighten.
Escocer, 143, 5 and a. smart.
Escribir, 222. write.
Esforzar, 143, 4, 167. strengthen.
Establecer, 143, a. establish.
Estar, 136. be, stand.
Estremecer, 143, a. shudder.
Estreñir, 143, c, 181. bind.
Excluir, 185. exclude.
Expedir, 181. dispatch.
Exponer, 201. expose.
Extender, 166. extend.
Extraer, 193. extract.

F

Fallecer, 143, a. die.
Favorecer, 143, a. favor.
Fenecer, 143, a. end, die.
Ferrar, 164, plate with iron.
Florecer, 143, a. flower, flourish.

Fluir, 185. flow.
Fortalecer, 143, a. fortify.
Forzar, 143, 4, 167. force.
Freír, 182 and 183. fry.

G

Gemir, 181. groan.
Gobernar, 164. govern.
Gruñir, 143, c. grunt.
Guarecer, 143, a. guard, protect.
Guarnecer, 143, a. garnish, garrison.

H

Haber, 136. have, hold.
Hacendar, 164. convey property.
Hacer, 197. make, do.
Heder, 166. stink.
Helar, 164. freeze.
Henchir, 181. fill up, stuff.
Hender, 166. split.
Herbecer, 143, a. begin to grow.
Herir, 174. wound.
Herrar, 164. shoe horses.
Hervir, 174. boil.
Holgar, 143, 2, 167. rest, idle.
Hollar, 164. tread.
Huir, 185. flee.
Humedecer, 143, a. dampen.

I

Impedir, 181. impede.
Imponer, 201. lay, impose.
Imprimir, 222. print.
Improbar, 167. censure.
Incensar, 164. incense.

Incluír, **185.** include.
 Indisponer, **201.** indispose.
 Inducir, **207.** induce.
 Inferir, **174.** infer.
 Infernar, **164.** damn.
 Influir, **185.** influence.
 Ingerir, **174.** insert, graft.
 Inquirir, **176.** inquire.
 Instituir, **185.** institute.
 Instruir, **185.** instruct.
 Interdecir, **195.** interdict.
 Interponer, **201.** interpose.
 Intervenir, **202.** intervene.
 Introducir, **207.** introduce.
 Invernar, **164.** winter.
 Invertir, **174.** invert, invest.
 Investir, **181.** invest.
 Ir, **214.** go.

J

Jugar, **168.** play, stake.

L

Languidecer, **143, a.** languish.
 Leer, **206.** read.
 Lobreguecer, **143, a.** grow dark.
 Lucir, **143, a.** shine.

LL

Llover, **158.** rain.

M

Maldecir, **196.** curse.
 Malherir, **174.** wound badly.
 Malquerer, **209.** abhor.
 Maltraer, **193.** maltreat.

Manifestar, **164.** manifest.
 Mantener, **136.** maintain, keep.
 Mecer, **143, 5** and *a.* rock, shake.
 Medir, **181.** measure.
 Melar, **164.** deposit honey.
 Mentar, **164.** mention.
 Mentir, **174.** tell falsehoods.
 Merecer, **143, a.** merit.
 Merendar, **164.** lunch.
 Moblar, **167.** furnish.
 Mohecer, **143, a.** cover with moss.
 Moler, **170.** grind.
 Morder, **170.** bite.
 Morir, **178.** die.
 Mostrar, **167.** show.
 Mover, **170.** move.

N

Nacer, **143, a.** be born.
 Negar, **143, 2, 164.** deny.
 Negrecer, **143, a.** blacken.
 Nevar, **158.** snow.

O

Obedecer, **143, a.** obey.
 Obscurecer, **143, a.** obscure.
 Obstruir, **185.** obstruct.
 Obtener, **136.** obtain.
 Ofrecer, **143, a.** offer.
 Oír, **194.** hear.
 Oler, **172.** smell.
 Oponer, **201.** oppose.
 Oscurecer, **143, a.** obscure.

P

Pacer, **143**, *a.* pasture.
 Padecer, **143**, *a.* suffer.
 Palidecer, **143**, *a.* grow pale.
 Parecer, **143**, *a.* appear.
 Pedir, **181**. beg, ask.
 Pensar, **164**. think, intend.
 Perder, **166**. lose.
 Perecer, **143**, *a.* perish.
 Permanecer, **143**, *a.* remain.
 Perniquebrar, **164**. break the legs.
 Perseguir, **143**, **10**, **181**. pursue.
 Pertener, **143**, *a.* belong.
 Pervertir, **174**. pervert.
 Pimpollecir, **143**, *a.* sprout, bud.
 Placer, **208**. please.
 Plañir, **143**, *c.* lament.
 Plegar, **143**, **2**, **164**. fold.
 Poblar, **167**. found, settle.
 Poder, **209**. be able, may, can.
 Podreecer, **143**, *a.* become putrid.
 Podrir, **179**. rot.
 Poner, **201**. place, set, lay.
 Poseer, **206**. possess.
 Posponer, **201**. put after, postpone.
 Preconocer, **143**, *a.* foreknow.
 Predecir, **196**. foretell.
 Predisponer, **201**. predispose.
 Preferir, **174**. prefer.
 Premorir, **178**. die before another.
 Preponer, **201**. prefer, prepose.

Presentir, **174**. forebode.
 Presuponer, **201**. presuppose.
 Prevalecer, **143**, *a.* prevail.
 Prevalerse, **200**. prevail.
 Prevenir, **202**. anticipate.
 Prever, **205**. foresee, provide.
 Probar, **167**. try, prove.
 Producir, **207**. produce, furnish.
 Proferir, **174**. pronounce, utter.
 Promover, **170**. promote.
 Proponer, **201**. propose.
 Proseguir, **143**, **10**, **181**. pursue.
 Prostituir, **185**. prostitute.
 Proveer, **206**. provide.
 Provenir, **202**. proceed from.
 Pudrir, **179**. rot.

Q

Quebrar, **164**. break.
 Querer, **209**. wish, love.

R

Raer, **218**. scrape, erase.
 Reaparecer, **143**, *a.* reappear.
 Reapretar, **164**. press again.
 Rebendecir, **195**. bless again.
 Reblandecer, **143**, *a.* soften.
 Recaer, **192**. fall back.
 Recalentar, **164**. heat again.
 Recluir, **185**. seclude.
 Recocer, **143**, **5** and *a.* boil again.
 Recolar, **167**. strain again.
 Recomendar, **164**. recommend.

- Reconponer, **201.** recompose.
 Reconducir, **207.** renew a lease.
 Reconocer, **143, a.** confess, recognize.
 Reconstruir, **185.** reconstruct.
 Recontar, **167.** recount.
 Reconvalencer, **143, a.** recover from sickness.
 Reconvenir, **202.** accuse.
 Recordar, **167.** remember.
 Recostar, **167.** lean against.
 Recrecer, **143, a.** grow again.
 Reducir, **207.** reduce.
 Reelegir, **143, 8, 181.** reelect.
 Referir, **174.** refer, relate.
 Refloreecer, **143, a.** reflourish.
 Refluir, **185.** flow back.
 Reforzar, **143, 4, 167.** fortify.
 Refregar, **143, 2, 164.** scour again.
 Refreír, **182, 183.** fry again.
 Regar, **144, 2, 164.** water.
 Regimentar, **164.** form a regiment.
 Regir, **143, 8, 181.** govern.
 Rehacer, **197.** mend, make over, reform.
 Reherir, **174.** repel.
 Reherrar, **164.** reshoe (horses).
 Rehervir, **174.** boil again.
 Rehuir, **185.** withdraw.
 Rehumedecer, **143, a.** redampen.
 Reír, **182, a.** laugh.
 Rejuvenecer, **143, a.** rejuvenate.
 Relucir, **143, a.** glitter.
 Remendar, **164.** mend.
 Rementir, **174.** lie frequently.
 Remoler, **174.** regrind.
 Remorder, **170.** bite repeatedly.
 Remover, **170.** remove.
 Renacer, **143, a.** be born again.
 Rendir, **181.** subdue, surrender.
 Renegar, **143, 2, 164.** deny.
 Renovar, **167.** renew.
 Reñir, **143, c, 181.** quarrel.
 Repadecer, **143, a.** suffer much.
 Repensar, **164.** consider, reflect.
 Repetir, **181.** repeat.
 Replegar, **143, 2, 164.** redouble.
 Repoblar, **167.** repopulate.
 Reponer, **201.** replace, reply.
 Reprobar, **167.** condemn.
 Reproducir, **207.** reproduce.
 Requebrar, **164.** woo, court.
 Requerer, **209.** desire anxiously.
 Requerir, **174.** require.
 Resaber, **209.** know well.
 Resalir, **199.** jut out.
 Resegar, **143, 2, 164.** reap again.
 Resembrar, **164.** resow.
 Resentirse, **174.** begin to fail.
 Resolver, **171.** resolve.
 Resollar, **167.** respire.
 Resonar, **167.** resound.
 Resplandecer, **143, a.** glitter.
 Restablecer, **143, a.** restore.
 Restituir, **185.** restore.
 Restregar, **143, 2, 164.** scrub.
 Retemblar, **164.** tremble often.
 Retener, **136.** retain.

- Reteñir, **143**, *c*, **181**. dye again.
 Retoñecer, **143**, *a*. sprout.
 Retorcer, **143**, **5**, **170**. twist.
 Retostar, **167**. toast again.
 Retraer, **193**. retract.
 Retribuir, **185**. recompense.
 Retronar, **158**. thunder again.
 Reventar, **164**. burst.
 Reverdecir, **143**, *a*. grow green again.
 Revestir, **181**. put on clerical robes.
 Revolar, **167**. fly again.
 Revolcarse, **143**, **1**, **167**. wallow.
 Revolver, **171**. stir, revolve.
 Robustecer, **143**, *a*. make robust.
 Rodar, **167**. roll.
 Roer, **219**. gnaw.
 Rogar, **143**, **2**, **167**. ask, beg.
- S
- Saber, **209**. know.
 Salir, **199**. go or come out.
 Satisfacer, **198**. satisfy.
 Segar, **143**, **2**, **164**. reap.
 Seguir, **143**, **10**, **181**. follow, continue.
 Sembrar, **164**. sow.
 Sementar, **164**. sow.
 Sentar, **164**. seat.
 Sentir, **174**. feel, regret.
 Ser, **136**. be.
 Serrar, **164**. saw.
 Servir, **181**. serve.
 Sobrecrer, **143**, *a*. outgrow.
- Sobrentender, **166**. be understood.
 Sobreponer, **201**. add.
 Sobresalir, **199**. surpass.
 Sobresembrar, **164**. sow over again.
 Sobresolar, **167**. pave anew.
 Sobrevenir, **202**. happen.
 Sobreventar, **164**. gain the weather gage.
 Sobrevestir, **181**. put on overcoat.
 Sofreír, **182**, **183**. fry slightly.
 Soldar, **167**. solder.
 Soler, **221**. be accustomed.
 Sollar, **167**. blow with bellows.
 Soltar, **167**. loosen.
 Solver, **171**. loosen.
 Sonar, **167**. sound.
 Sonreír, **182**, *a*. smile.
 Soñar, **167**. dream.
 Sosegar, **143**, **2**, **164**. appease.
 Sostener, **136**. sustain.
 Subarrendar, **164**. subrent.
 Subseguir, **143**, **10**, **181**. follow next.
 Substituir, **185**. substitute.
 Substraer, **193**. subtract.
 Subtender, **166**. subtend.
 Subvenir, **202**. aid.
 Sugerir, **174**. suggest.
 Superponer, **201**. superpose.
 Supervenir, **202**. supervene.
 Suponer, **201**. suppose.
 Sustituir, **185**. substitute.
 Sustraer, **193**. subtract.

T

Tallecer, **143**, *a.* sprout.
 Temblar, **164**. tremble.
 Tender, **166**. stretch.
 Tener, **136**. have, hold.
 Tentar, **164**. touch, try.
 Teñir, **143**, *c.*, **181**. dye, tinge.
 Torcer, **143**, *5*, **170**. twist.
 Tostar, **167**. toast.
 Traducir, **207**. translate.
 Traer, **193**. bring.
 Transcender, **166**. transcend.
 Trascolar, **167**. percolate.
 Trascordarse, **167**. forget.
 Trasegar, **143**, *2*, **164**. overset.
 Traslucir, **143**, *a.* shine through.
 Trasoír, **194**. misunderstand.
 Trasoñar, **167**. dream.
 Trasponer, **201**. transpose.
 Trostocar, **143**, *1*, **167**. invert.
 Travolar, **167**. fly across.
 Travesar, **164**. cross.
 Trocar, **143**, *1*, **167**. exchange.

Tronar, **158**. thunder.
 Tropezar, **143**, *4* ; **164**. stumble.

V

Valer, **200**. be worth.
 Venir, **202**. come.
 Ventar, **164**. blow (wind).
 Ver, **205**. see.
 Verdecir, **143**, *a.* grow green.
 Verter, **166**. spill.
 Vestir, **181**. clothe.
 Volar, **167**. fly, blow up.
 Volcar, **143**, *1*, **167**. overset, hurl.
 Volver, **171**, **227**. come back, return.

Y

Yacer, **191**. lie (recline).
 Yuxtaponer, **201**. put along side.

Z

Zabullirse, **143**, *c.* dive, plunge.
 Zaherir, **174**. mortify.

VII

ADVERBS

230. Adverbs serve to limit or otherwise modify verbs, adjectives, and other adverbs. They stand before adjectives and adverbs, but as a rule after verbs : —

Muy malo ; bastante bien.	Very bad ; quite well.
El actor trabaja muy bien.	The actor acts very well.
Mi hijo ha estudiado siempre su lección.	My son has always studied his lesson.

Note that, in passive constructions, the adverb stands before the past participle : —

La carta está bien escrita.	The letter is well written.
Está rica y elegantemente vestida.	She is richly and elegantly dressed.
Es muy amado de sus amigos	He is much loved by his friends.

231. Adverbs may be classified as *simple* or *primitive*, *derivative*, and *compound*.

232. To the first class belong such adverbs as are expressed by a single word : —

Bien, *well*, mal, *badly*, peor, *worse*, temprano, *early*, claro, *clearly*, derecho, *straight*, sólo, *only*, etc.

233. The so-called *derivative* adverb is, strictly speaking, a compound of an adjective and *mente* (manner), and was originally written as two words. To-day, however, it appears as one word, *mente* bearing the primary tonic accent. The adjective, however, retains its own accent.

a. Adjectives of one termination are added to *mente* without change:—

Prudentemente, útilmente. Prudently, usefully.

b. The feminine form of adjectives in *o* is used, because *mente* is feminine:—

Sabiamente, dichosamente. Wisely, happily.

c. Other adjectives of two terminations do not usually form adverbs with *mente*, but with *de una manera* or *de un modo*:—

De una manera encantadora. Charmingly, in a charming manner.

De un modo holgazán. Idly, in an idle way.

Note, however, *traididamente*, treacherously.

234. For euphony, when two or more derivative adverbs follow each other immediately, *mente* is used with the last adjective only:—

Juan Valera escribe clara, concisa y elegantemente. Juan Valera writes clearly, concisely, and elegantly.

235. *Compound* adverbs are simply adverbial phrases formed of two or more words. Some now appear as single words, but their composition is evident:—

Acaso (á + caso), <i>perhaps</i> .	Aprisa (á + prisa), <i>quickly</i> .
Ahora (á + hora), <i>now</i> .	Despacio (de + espacio), <i>slowly</i> .
Apenas (á + penas), <i>scarcely</i> .	Anteayer (ante + ayer), <i>the day before yesterday</i> .
Anoche (á + noche), <i>last night</i> .	

a. But most adverbial phrases are written in separate words. Sometimes the article is used, at other times omitted; now the noun is in the singular, now in the *plural*:—

Á la moda, <i>in style</i> .	En lo sucesivo, <i>in the future</i> .
Á la española, <i>in Spanish style</i> .	Por lo más, <i>at most</i> .
Á la vista, <i>at, in sight</i> .	Por lo menos, <i>at least</i> .
En el acto, <i>instantly</i> .	Por lo pronto, <i>for the present</i> .
De balde, <i>gratis</i> .	De día, <i>by day</i> , de noche, <i>by night</i> .
De buena gana, <i>willingly</i> .	Por consiguiente, <i>consequently</i> .
En seguida, <i>at once</i> .	Por supuesto, <i>of course</i> .
Á gatas, <i>on all fours</i> .	Á solas, <i>alone, in private</i> .
Á sabiendas, <i>knowingly</i> .	De rodillas, <i>on one's knees</i> .
Á ciegas, <i>blindly</i> .	De espaldas, <i>backwards</i> .
Á más andar, <i>at full speed</i> .	Cuanto antes, <i>as soon as possible</i> .
Á más tardar, <i>at latest</i> .	De vez en cuando, <i>from time to time</i> .
Á todo correr, <i>with all speed</i> .	De cuando en cuando, <i>from time to time</i> .
Á más no poder, <i>with might and main</i> .	
Poco á poco, <i>little by little</i> .	

236. It is convenient to arrange adverbs into groups according to their meaning. Hence we have —

a. Adverbs of place : —

¿Dónde? <i>where?</i>	Allí, <i>there (distant from both)</i> .
¿Adónde? <i>whither?</i>	Allá, <i>there (in that direction)</i> .
¿De dónde? <i>whence?</i>	De aquí, <i>hence, from here</i> .
Aquí, <i>here (near me)</i> .	De allí, <i>thence, from there</i> .
Acá, <i>here (towards me)</i> .	Atrás, detrás, <i>behind, backward</i> .
Arriba, encima, <i>up, above</i> .	En todas partes, } <i>everywhere</i> .
Abajo, <i>down, below</i> .	Por todas partes, }
Afuera, <i>outside, without</i> .	

Adentro, *inside, within.*

Cerca, *near, lejos, far.*

Adelante, *delante, forward.*

Aquí mismo, *in this very place.*

Ahí, *there (near or towards you).*

En alguna parte, *somewhere.*

En otra parte, *elsewhere.*

En ninguna parte, *nowhere.*

Allí mismo, *in that very place.*

NOTE. — **Donde**, *where (i.e. without the written accent)* is frequently used as a relative (*which*), referring to things, and may be governed by a preposition : —

La ciudad (en) donde vive.

El lugar de donde viene.

El camino por donde venimos
está en muy mal estado.

The city in which he lives.

The village from which he
comes.

The road by which we came
is in a very bad condition.

b. Adverbs of time : —

¿Cuándo? *when? cuando, when.*

¿Cuánto tiempo? *how long?*

¿Cuántas veces? *how often?*

Hoy, *to-day; hoy mismo, this
very day.*

Ayer, *yesterday; ayer mismo, only
yesterday.*

Anteayer, *day before yesterday.*

Anoche, *last night.*

Anteanoche, *night before last.*

En otro tiempo, *antes, formerly.*

Después, *since; entonces, then.*

Desde entonces, *since then.*

Por fin, al fin, *at length, at last.*

Ahora, *now, at present.*

Ahora mismo, *at this very time.*

Hasta ahora, *as yet.*

El otro día, *the other day.*

Al momento, *luego, at once.*

Mañana por la mañana, *to-morrow morning.*

Mañana por la tarde, *to-morrow afternoon.*

Mañana por la noche, *to-morrow night.*

Pasado mañana, *day after to-morrow.*

Á menudo, *often; ya, already.*

Raras veces, *seldom.*

Tarde, *late; temprano, early.*

Todavía, aun, *still, yet.*

Jamás, alguna vez, *ever.*

En mi vida (before a verb),
never.

Jamás, nunca, *never, ever.*

Nunca jamás, *never.*

Siempre, *always.*

Siempre que, *whenever.*

Otra vez, *again*; á veces, *at times*. Para siempre, *forever*.
 Mañana, *to-morrow*. Por siempre jamás, *forever and*
 Mañana mismo, *to-morrow surely*. *ever*.

Recién, *recently* (before participles): La recién casada, *the bride*.

NOTE. — Some adverbs of **place** and **time** are sometimes placed after certain nouns, forming therewith adverbial phrases: —

Puertas afuera, <i>outdoors</i> .	Camino adelante, <i>onward</i> .
Tierra adentro, <i>inland</i> .	Siglos atrás, <i>centuries ago</i> .
Río arriba, <i>upstream</i> .	Años después, <i>years afterwards</i> .
Ciudad, abajo, <i>down town</i> .	Meses antes, <i>months before</i> .

c. Adverbs of quantity and degree: —

¿Cómo? <i>how?</i> como, <i>about, as</i> .	Más, <i>more</i> ; por lo más, <i>at most</i> .
¿Cuánto? <i>how much?</i>	
Mucho, <i>much</i> ; tanto, <i>so much</i> .	Sólo, solamente, <i>only</i> .
Demasiado, sobrado, <i>too, too much</i> .	Siquier(a), <i>even, at least</i> .
Poco, <i>little</i> ; casi, <i>almost</i> .	Algo, <i>somewhat</i> ; muy, <i>very, very much</i> .
Bastante, hartó, <i>enough, quite</i> .	Poco más ó menos, <i>about</i> .
Menos, <i>less</i> ; por lo menos, <i>at least</i> .	

NOTE. — *Muy* never stands alone and rarely modifies *mucho*. Instead of *muy mucho*, we say *muchísimo*, very much. *Muy* precedes a few nouns, but its chief office is to modify the positive degree of adjectives and adverbs; while *mucho* modifies the comparative degree. When it would stand alone, the former is replaced by *mucho*: —

Es mucho, muchísimo mejor éste.	This one is much, very much better.
Muy señor mío y amigo.	My dear sir and friend.
Mucho más agradable.	Much more agreeable.
¿Está V. muy malo? Sí, mucho.	Are you very sick? Yes, very.

Es muy hombre de mundo.	He is very much a man of the world.
Deben reflexionar muy mucho lo que dicen.	They ought to consider very thoroughly what they say.

d. Adverbs of manner :—

Bien, <i>well</i> ; mal, <i>badly</i> .	Alto, en alta voz, <i>aloud</i> .
Así, <i>so</i> ; tan, <i>so</i> .	Mejor, <i>better</i> ; peor, <i>worse</i> .
Bajo, en voz baja, <i>low, in a low tone</i> .	Lo mejor posible, <i>as well as possible</i> .
And many adverbs in <i>mente</i> .	

e. Adverbs of affirmation and negation :—

Sí, <i>yes</i> ; no, <i>no, not</i> .	Ni aun; ni siquiera, <i>not even</i> .
Que sí, <i>so</i> ; que no, <i>not</i> .	Ni . . . tampoco; tampoco, <i>nor</i>
Sí tal; sí que, <i>of course</i> .	. . . <i>either</i> .
Cierto, por cierto, <i>certainly</i> .	Sin duda, <i>undoubtedly</i> ; nada,
Acaso; tal vez; quizá, } <i>perhaps</i> .	<i>by no means</i> .
quizás; puede ser, }	De ningún modo, <i>by no means</i> .
Ya ya, <i>quite so, very true</i> .	No . . . del todo, <i>not wholly</i> .
Ni . . . ni, <i>neither . . . nor</i> .	Claro; vaya, <i>of course</i> .
Ya no, <i>no more</i> ; ya que, <i>now that, since</i> .	Justo, <i>just so</i> ; hasta, <i>even</i> .

237. Position of Negatives.—All negatives as such stand before the word to be negated, or alone, the verb being understood. Any of them, however, except **no**, may follow the verb, but in that case **no** must be used. The following sentences will make clear the usage :—

¿Qué sabe V. de nuevo?—Nada.	What do you know new?—Nothing.
Nada sabemos en absoluto.	We know absolutely nothing.
Jamás lo hubiera hecho yo.	I would never have done it.
¿Ha estado V. alguna vez en París?—Nunca (jamás).	Have you ever been in Paris?—Never.

Yo no creo nunca lo que él me dice. — Ni yo tampoco.	I never believe what he tells me. — Nor do I either.
En no lejano porvenir.	In the not distant future.
En mi vida he oído mentira más gorda.	Never in my life have I heard a bigger lie.
¿Tiene V. mi lápiz y mi papel? — Ni el uno ni el otro.	Have you my pencil and paper? — Neither the one nor the other.
Ni una vez siquiera vino á mi casa.	Not even a single time did he come to my house.
Si se me paga siquiera la mitad, estoy contento.	If I am paid even the half, I shall be content.
Me abandonó sin decirme jamás por qué.	He abandoned me without ever telling me why.
Ella está más bonita que nunca.	She is prettier than ever.
Creo que sí ; creo que no.	I think so ; I think not.
Eso sí que no.	Not that by any means.

NOTE. — **No** may be used redundantly in comparative sentences, the general effect, if any, being to render the contrast more vivid : —

Mejor es el trabajo que **no** la ociosidad. Better is work than idleness.

COMPARISON OF ADVERBS

238. Certain adverbs, chiefly the derivatives and a few others, are compared like adjectives, the invariable **lo** (when used) taking, in the superlative, the place of the gender forms of the article used with adjectives.

POSITIVE	COMPARATIVE	SUPERLATIVE
Lejos, <i>far</i> ,	más lejos,	lo más lejos.
Á menudo, <i>often</i> ,	menos á menudo,	lo menos á menudo.
Sabiamente, <i>wisely</i> ,	más sabiamente,	lo más sabiamente.
Ricamente, <i>richly</i> ,	menos ricamente,	lo menos ricamente.

a. Irregular comparisons:—

POSITIVE	COMPARATIVE	SUPERLATIVE
Bien, <i>well</i> ,	mejor, <i>better</i> ,	lo mejor, (<i>the</i>) <i>best</i> .
Mal, <i>badly</i> ,	peor, <i>worse</i> ,	lo peor, (<i>the</i>) <i>worst</i> .
Muy, } <i>very</i> ,	más, <i>more</i> ,	lo más, (<i>the</i>) <i>most</i> .
Mucho, } <i>much</i> ,		
Poco, <i>little</i> ,	menos, <i>less</i> ,	lo menos, (<i>the</i>) <i>least</i> .

NOTE.— Más bien, *rather*, is not used as a comparative.

239. **Than** is expressed by **que** and **de**, the latter, however, only being used before numbers in positive sentences:—

Ella toca menos á menudo que antes.	She plays less often than formerly.
Llegó más tarde que el maestro.	He arrived later than the teacher.
No vino más que dos ó tres veces.	He did not come more than two or three times.
Me lo solicitó más de diez veces.	He asked me for it more than ten times.

240. **Lo** is omitted where the superlative is not limited or defined in some way:—

Á la larga los que más estudian, más aprenden.	In the long run those who study (the) most, learn (the) most.
Donde menos se piensa, salta la liebre.	Where least expected, the hare starts up.

But—

Escribimos lo menos posible.	We write the least possible.
Se quedó lo más lejos que pudo de la escena.	He remained the farthest from the scene that he could.

Prometióme volvería á los tres cuartos de hora lo más tarde.	He promised me he would return in three quarters of an hour at the latest.
Una vez por lo menos.	Once at least.
Daré diez pesos á lo más.	I will give ten dollars at most.
Deseo acabarla lo antes posible.	I desire to finish it as soon as possible.

241. The absolute superlative is expressed either by modifying the positive by some other adverb (as *muy*, *bien*, etc.), or resort is had to the *ísimo* forms, where they exist. The former method, however, is generally preferred to the latter:—

Cerca, <i>near</i> ,	{ muy cerca, cerquísimo,	} <i>very near.</i>
Lejos, <i>far</i> ,	{ muy lejos, lejísimo,	} <i>very far.</i>
Mal, <i>badly</i> ,	{ muy mal, malísimo,	} <i>very badly.</i>
Poco, <i>little</i> ,	{ muy poco, poquísimo,	} <i>very little.</i>
Bien, <i>well</i> ,	{ muy bien, (wanting),	} <i>very well.</i>
Felizmente, <i>happily</i> ,	{ muy felizmente, felicísimamente,	} <i>very happily.</i>
Grandemente, <i>greatly</i> ,	{ muy grandemente, grandísimamente,	} <i>very greatly.</i>

242. Tanto and cuanto lose their final syllable to before adjectives and adverbs in the positive degree, but *not* before comparatives:—

No hable V. tan de prisa.	Don't speak so fast.
Yo lo hallo tan bien que no puedo menos de aceptarlo.	It pleases me so much that I can not do less than accept it.

¡ Cuán despacio caminan !	How slowly they walk !
¡ Cuán contento está aquí !	How contented he is here !
Tanto mejor (peor) para usted.	So much the better (worse) for you.

a. **Como** stands in the second term of comparisons of equality, when **tan** is in the first :—

Este cómico trabaja tan bien como el otro.	This comedian plays as well as the other.
--	---

b. But **como** or **cuanto** may be used in the second term, where **tanto** is an independent adverb :—

No juega tanto como antes.	He does not play so much as formerly.
Hoy he escrito tanto como (or cuanto) he podido.	To-day I have written as much as I could.

c. Note also the following expressions. In the first two, **tanto** may be omitted, the sense remaining the same :—

Cuanto más bebe, (tanto) más se emborracha.	The more he drinks, the drunker he gets.
Cuanto más gana el pobrecito, (tanto) menos tiene.	The more the poor fellow earns, the less he has.
Tanto más tarde trabajo hoy, cuanto que no podré venir mañana.	I work the later to-day, as I shall not be able to come to-morrow.
Cuanto más se discute, mayor es la confusión.	The more it is discussed, the greater is the confusion.

VIII

PREPOSITIONS

243. The prepositions, especially **á, en, de, por,** and **para,** constitute one of the great difficulties of the Spanish language. The examples here given cover pretty well most of the uses. They should be studied very thoroughly:—

Á, to, at, in, into, on (frequently not translated into English).

a. In expressions of time:—

Á las diez ; al mediodía.	At ten o'clock ; at midday.
Al día siguiente.	On the following day.
Á su nacimiento.	At his birth.
¿ Á cuántos estamos hoy ?	What is the day of the month ?
Estamos á primero ; á tres.	It is the first ; the third.
Á primeros de Marzo.	Early in March.
Á fines de verano.	Towards the end of summer.
Cuatro veces al año.	Four times a year.
Llegará á tiempo.	He will arrive in time.
Á poco salió el tren.	In a short time the train went out.
Al amanecer ; á la noche.	At dawn ; at night.
Al entrar ; al llegar.	On entering ; on arriving.
Á tiempo que pasaba un tren.	Just as a train was passing.
Fué extraído del pozo á los nueve días.	He was taken from the well at the end of nine days.

b. Position, direction, etc.:—

Á la puerta ; á la derecha.	At the door ; to the right.
Está á bordo del barco.	He is on board the ship.
Voy á casa ; á casa de Juan.	I am going home ; to John's.
Iré á España ; á Madrid.	I shall go to Spain ; to Madrid.
¡ Al tren, señores viajeros !	All aboard, ladies and gentlemen !

Vive á dos leguas de aquí.	He lives two leagues from here.
Lo traduciré al inglés.	I will translate it into English.
Á medio camino entre Madrid y Toledo.	Halfway between Madrid and Toledo.
Á su paso tomó la ciudad.	On his way he captured the city.
Siéntese usted á la mesa.	Take your seat at the table.
Cayó á tierra, al suelo.	He fell down (to the earth, to the ground).
Estamos á vista de tierra.	We are in sight of land.
Todavía no está á mi servicio.	He is not yet in my service.
Tropas al mando del capitán.	Troops under the command of the captain.

c. Manner, means, cause : —

Hizo una reseña á grandes rasgos.	He gave a description in large outlines.
Vino á caballo ; á pie.	He came on horseback ; on foot.
Á fe de caballero.	On the word of a gentleman.
Lo hizo á ruegos de mi tío.	He did it at the instance of my uncle.
Se le mató á sangre fría.	He was killed in cold blood.
Rió á carcajadas.	He roared out laughing.
Disparó á quemarropa.	He fired point blank.
Gota á gota ; paso á paso.	Drop by drop ; step by step.
Á lo filósofo.	In a philosophical manner.

d. Price, rate, etc. : —

Se vende á tres pesetas el metro.	It is sold at three <i>pesetas</i> a meter.
La descontaré al cinco por ciento.	I will discount it at five per cent.
Al contado ; al fiado (á crédito).	For cash ; on credit.
Al por mayor ; al por menor.	At wholesale ; at retail.
Está empleado á dos duros diarios.	He is employed at two dollars a day.
Andando á diez nudos por hora.	Going at ten knots an hour.

e. Note also :—

Jugar á los naipes, al ajedrez.	To play cards, chess.
Una solución al conflicto.	A solution of the difficulty.
Temor á la publicidad.	Fear of publicity.
Amor á la patria.	Love of country.
La sala huele aún á tabaco.	The parlor still smells of tobacco.
La carne sabe á ajo.	The meat tastes of garlic.

NOTE. — Other uses of *á* will be found in the syntax of nouns and verbs.

244. *En, at, on, upon, in, into* (the general idea being *rest in* or *on*, or *motion in* or *into*).

a. *In time relations* :—

El ataque comenzó en la noche del viernes.	The attack began on Friday night.
No se había separado de él en toda la noche.	He had not parted from him during the whole night.
Volvió en el momento en que yo lo esperaba.	He returned at the moment when I was expecting him.
En época en que estamos.	In these days.
Curan el dolor de muelas en un momento.	They cure toothache instantly.
La situación del banco en 21 de Octubre.	The condition of the bank on the 21st of October.
De hoy en ocho días.	To-day week.
De día en día.	From day to day.
En la noche y en la mañana.	At night and in the morning.

b. *Position, direction, etc.* :—

El señor está y quedará en casa todo el día.	The gentleman is in and will remain at home all day.
La comida está en la mesa.	The dinner is on the table.
Sentarse en la mesa, en la cama, en la silla.	To take a seat at the table, upon the bed, in the chair.

Murió en la silla eléctrica.	He died in the electric chair.
El vapor iba en su socorro.	The steamer was going to their rescue.
Se alejó en su bicicleta.	He went off on his bicycle.
El crucero naufragó en un arrecife.	The cruiser was wrecked on a reef.
Se ofrece en venta en la librería.	It is offered for sale at the bookstore.
En la estación del ferrocarril.	At the railroad station.
Está en el fondo de ese corredor.	It is at the further end of that corridor.
En la esquina de la calle.	On the corner of the street.
Vamos á pasear en el parque.	Let's go to take a walk in the park.
Entran en el domicilio de los deudores.	They enter the debtors' houses.
El periódico en que trabaja.	The newspaper on which he works.

c. Note also : —

Se castigará en juicio sumarisimo.	He will be summarily punished.
La reconocí en el crujido de sus botinas.	I recognized her by the creaking of her boots.
¿Qué puedo hacer en servicio de usted?	What can I do for you ?
La guerra podría prolongarse en grave daño de Inglaterra.	The war could be prolonged to the serious damage of England.
En bien de España entera.	For the good of all Spain.
Pedir en justicia.	To sue at law.
Anda siempre en pleitos.	He is always lawing.
Lo valúo en cien pesos.	I value it at a hundred dollars.
No se mide en las palabras.	He does not weigh his words.
El partido radical, en su mayor parte, se compone de ellos.	The radical party, for the most part, is composed of them.

NOTE. — Many other uses of **en** coincide with the English **in**.

245. *De, of, from, by, on, with, at* (indicating primarily possession, origin, separation, etc.).

a. Possession, origin, separation, etc. : —

Vengo de casa de mi padre.	I come from my father's(house).
El palacio real de Madrid.	The royal palace of Madrid.
Tengo un reloj de oro y una cadena de plata.	I have a gold watch and a silver chain.
Una jícara de chocolate.	A cup of chocolate.
La diferencia de una cosa á otra.	The difference between one thing and another.
Él vive de limosna.	He lives by alms.

b. Time : —

De día, de noche, de verano.	By day, by night, in summer.
Digámoslo de una vez.	Let us say it at once.
Trabaja de sol á sol.	He works from sun to sun.
En cuanto sea de día.	As soon as it shall be day.
Murió de poca edad.	He died very young.

c. Cause, manner, characteristic, etc. : —

Temblar de miedo, de frío.	To tremble with fear, with cold.
Vestirse de negro ; teñir de azul ; pintar de verde.	To dress in black ; to dye blue ; to paint green.
Agudo de ingenio ; alto de cuerpo ; ancho de boca ; li- gero de pies.	Sharp-witted ; tall in stature ; wide-mouthed ; light-footed.
Eso me pone el cabello de punta.	That makes my hair stand on end.
La niña de los ojos azules.	The girl with the blue eyes.

d. State, condition, etc. : —

Está de viaje en Europa.	He is traveling in Europe.
Prefiero quedarme de pies.	I prefer to remain standing.
Este sombrero está muy de moda.	This hat is very much in style.

Está de venta en la librería.	It is for sale at the bookstore.
Los domingos iba de caza.	On Sundays he used to go hunting.
Se hincó de rodillas.	He knelt down.

e. Occupation, profession, etc. :—

Sirve de mayordomo.	He serves as steward.
Ella trabaja de costurera á domicilio.	She goes out to sew.
Se recibió de abogado.	He was admitted to the bar.
Me retiré de sargento.	I retired as sergeant.
Fué de embajador á Francia.	He went as ambassador to France.

f. Note further:—

Dígale V. de mi parte.	Tell him for me.
El bebió del vino.	He drank of the wine.
Le dieron de puñaladas.	They stabbed him.
De un trago se lo bebió.	He drank it down at one swallow.
Mató de un tiro á su mujer y cometió suicidio después.	He killed with one shot his wife and committed suicide afterward.
El bueno de Juan.	Good John.
El bribón de cartero.	The rascal of a letter carrier.
El pobre de Rocinante.	Poor (old) Rocinante.
¡ Ay de los vencidos !	Woe to the vanquished !

NOTE. — See 147 for *de* after passive verbs. Many other uses of *de* correspond with English *of*.

246. *Por, by, for, in, along, by means of, in place of*, is one of the most overworked of all the prepositions; but its various uses fall, in general, within certain lines which *make their classification* rather easy:—

a. Time :—

No durará por mucho tiempo.	It will not last for a long time.
Creo que cae por pascua.	I think it falls at Easter.
Cuatro pesos por un año.	Four dollars (for) a year.
Una lluvia de cenizas caía por instantes.	A shower of ashes fell at times.
Por entonces había estallado una guerra.	At that time a war had broken out.
Por la noche la ví salir del restaurant.	At night I saw her come out of the restaurant.

b. Place, movement, etc. :—

Pasa por la calle.	He passes along the street.
Se escapó por la ventana.	He escaped by the window.
Sin bajas por su parte.	Without casualties on their side.
Mis investigaciones por ese lado.	My investigations in that line.
Las aves vuelan por el aire.	The birds fly through the air.
Se echó á andar por montes y por llanos.	He began to wander about aimlessly.
Luego revolió su mirada por la mar y por el espacio.	Then he looked around over the sea and into space.
Un viaje de inspección por las costas.	A tour of inspection along the coasts.
Cuando ve al conde por la calle.	When he sees the count in the street.

c. Price, value :—

Venderé mi casa por mil pesos.	I will sell my house for a thousand dollars.
Una carta puede ir á Manila por dos perras chicas.	A letter can go to Manila for two pennies.
¿Cuánto pide V. por este sombrero?	How much do you ask for this hat?
Madera por valor de doscientos duros.	Wood to the value of two hundred dollars.
Un real por pieza.	One real apiece.

d. Cause, manner, means : —

Los regalos llaman la atención por su elegancia.	The presents attract attention by their elegance.
No hay que palidecer por eso.	There is no reason to get pale on that account.
Alguna vez ocurría por descuido.	It occurred sometimes through oversight.
Ella está loca por él.	She is madly in love with him.
Acudió por el ruido que causé yo.	He ran up (to me) because of the noise I made.
La dolencia se agravó por inesperada complicación.	The disease grew worse because of an unexpected complication.
Por Dios y por España queríamos evitarlo.	For God's sake and for Spain's we should like to avoid it.
Merezco por ello la muerte.	I deserve death for it.
No se podían ver por la oscuridad.	They could not see each other on account of the darkness.
La ciudad sufrió por falta de agua.	The city suffered for lack of water.
Por el amor que le tenía ella.	For the love she had for him.
La mujer lo hizo por vanidad.	The woman did it for vanity.
Tememos por los colonos.	We fear for the colonists.
Por haber tolerado tales gobernantes.	For having tolerated such rulers.
Por un golpe de buena fortuna.	By a stroke of good luck.
Se le formará causa por embriaguez.	He will be prosecuted for drunkenness.
Lo hará por fuerza.	He will do it by force.
Lo divide por la mitad.	He divides it into halves.
Entonces empezó por decir.	Then he began by saying.
Le llaman por su nombre.	They call him by his name.
Explicó, por modo conciso, sus razones para augurar éxito brillante.	He explained, in a concise manner, his reasons for predicting brilliant success.

Se estableció por su cuenta.	He went into business on his own account.
Está obligado á mirar por sí mismo.	He is obliged to look out for himself.
Se la sitió (á la ciudad) por hambre.	The city was besieged and starved out.
Se despachan pedidos por correo.	Orders sent by mail.
¿Debo venir por mar ó por tierra?	Shall I come by sea or by land?
Ya lo sé por experiencia.	I already know it by experience.
Nadie me vió bajar por aquella sogá.	No one saw me come down by that rope.
La situación se explica por sí misma.	The situation explains itself.
Muchos, por falta de sentido, no le pierden.	Many do not lose their senses because they have none.

e. Purpose, exchange, instead of, in behalf of, etc. :—

Salgo sin capa por (para) ir más ligero.	I go out without cape in order to go more rapidly.
Hubo un pleito por divorcio.	There was a suit for divorce.
Tenía impaciencia por defender á su amigo.	He was impatient to defend his friend.
La filosofía lucha por resolver este problema.	Philosophy strives to solve this problem.
Tenía prisa por otra explicación.	He was anxious for another explanation.
Lo que V. ha hecho por mí.	What you have done for me.
Estoy siempre velando por tí.	I am always watching over thee.
Asisto por mi compañero.	I attend in place of my companion.
Habla por su amigo.	He speaks for his friend.
Fué por leña y agua.	He went for wood and water.
Doy mi gabán por el de usted.	I will give my greatcoat for yours.
Váyase el uno por el otro.	Let one go for the other.

f. Note further :—

Ruin sea él que por ruin se tiene.	Vile be he who thinks himself vile.
Fuí por Madrid á Toledo.	I went to Toledo via Madrid.
Echáronle por tierra.	They threw him to the ground.
Ella le cogió por la mano.	She took him by the hand.
¿ Quiere V. tomarla por esposa?	Do you wish to take her to wife?
La carta está por escribir.	The letter is yet to be written.
Repito por mi honor que lo ignoro.	I repeat on my honor that I do not know it.
Hacemos votos por vuestra fortuna.	We pray for your welfare.
Se le recibió por maestro.	He was received as teacher.
Cada árbol, por decirlo así, tiene su lengua.	Every tree, so to speak, has its language.
¡ Bien por mi sobrino !	Good for my nephew !
Los carlistas se dieron por vencidos.	The Carlists gave up as conquered.
Preguntó por la salud del niño.	He asked after the child's health.

g. In many adverbial expressions :—

Por ejemplo ; por lo general.	For instance ; in general.
Por consiguiente ; por completo.	Consequently ; completely.
Por lo demás ; por el contrario.	For the rest ; on the contrary.
Por fin ; por dicha.	Finally ; fortunately.
Por razones obvias.	For obvious reasons.
Palabra por palabra.	Word for word.
Por orden alfabético.	In alphabetical order.
Por grande que sea.	However great he may be.

REMARK.— See 147 for *por* after passive verbs.

247. Para, for, to, in, by (with infinitive, to, in order to):—*a. Destination, use, etc. :—*

Esta carta es para el correo.	This letter is for the post office.
No es útil para nada.	It is not good for anything.
Ropa hecha para niños.	Ready-made clothing for children.
Lo he hecho para un amigo.	I have made it for a friend.
Tela buena para camisas.	Cloth good for shirts.
Al practicarse la carga para el sexto disparo.	While preparing the charge for the sixth shot.
Este caballo es bueno para correr, pero malo para tirar.	This horse is good for running, but bad for drawing.
La casa está para alquilar.	The house is for rent.

b. Purpose, etc. :—

Comemos para vivir.	We eat to live.
Estudió para abogado.	He studied to be a lawyer.
Es dificultoso para aprendido de memoria.	It is difficult to learn by heart.
Son incapaces para el gobierno propio.	They are incapable of self-government.
Vengo aquí para asuntos de familia.	I come here for family affairs.
No sirve sino para hacerle tímido.	It only serves to make him timid.

c. Time :—

Lo dejaremos para mañana.	We will leave it for to-morrow.
Para lo futuro tomará otro nombre.	In (for the) future it will take another name.
Para ese tiempo se conocerán los resultados.	By that time the results will be known.
No veía aparecer de un día para otro las cerezas.	He did not see the cherries appear from day to day.
Un almanaque para el año que viene.	An almanac for the coming year.

d. Direction :—

Saldré mañana para Madrid.

I shall start to-morrow for Madrid.

Partieron para el pueblo.

They set out for the village.

e. Consideration, etc. :—

Para principiante no lo ha hecho mal.

For a beginner he has not done it badly.

Para el que habita la ciudad.

For him who lives in the city.

No es envidiable para mí la vida.

Life is not enviable for me.

Es una grave ofensa para su reputación.

It is a grave offense against his reputation.

No hay para qué desesperar.

There is no reason to despair.

No existe para él y no la teme.

It does not exist for him, and he does not fear it.

Es increíble para muchos.

It is incredible to many.

f. As a complement to certain adjectives :—

Soldados aptos para la lucha.

Soldiers fit for fighting.

Apropiado para el oficio.

Suitable for the office.

Capaz para un empleo.

Fit for an employment.

Hábil para el empleo.

Qualified for the occupation.

Idóneo para alguna cosa.

Suitable for anything.

g. Note further :—

El general leyó la relación para sí.

The general read the report to himself.

Para empezar diremos que el perito se equivoca.

To begin we will say that the expert is mistaken.

Mi trabajo ha sido muy benéfico para esta república.

My work has been very beneficial to this republic.

Dijo para sí : lo haré.

He said to himself : I will do it.

NOTE.—While difference in use between *por* and *para* is nearly always quite distinct, there are cases where either may be used, especially before an infinitive :—

Callaré por (para) no dar disgusto á usted. I will hold my tongue in order not to displease you.

Viene á caballo por (para) llegar más de prisa. He comes on horseback in order to arrive more quickly.

248. *Ante, before, in the presence of, in view of.*

Antes de, before (in time, order, or rank).

Delante de, before (in front of) :—

Ante el tribunal, el juez. Before the court, the judge.

Lo hizo ante mis ojos. He did it before my eyes.

Ante la declaración del rey. In view of the king's declaration.

Ante todo, ante todas cosas. Before all, before all things.

Llegó antes de mí. He arrived before I did.

Murió antes de las tres. He died before three o'clock.

El pronombre se pone antes del verbo. The pronoun is placed before the verb.

El obispo está antes del sacerdote. The bishop takes precedence of the priest.

Está delante de la iglesia. He is in front of the church.

Lo diré delante de testigos. I will say it before witnesses.

249. *Bajo, beneath, under, below* (chiefly figurative).

Debajo de, beneath, under (material position).

So, under (used only in a few expressions) :—

Lo hago bajo protesta. I do it under protest.

Bajo el mando del capitán. Under the command of the captain.

Tres grados bajo cero. Three degrees below zero.

Bajo la rodilla ; bajo la mano.	Below the knee ; under the hand.
Ponga V. su maleta debajo del sofá.	Put your valise under the sofa.
Mis zapatos están debajo de la cama.	My shoes are under the bed.
So capa ; so color ; so pretexto.	Under cover, color, pretense.
So pena de la muerte.	Under penalty of death.

250. De á, of (rate, measure, price, etc.) :—

Sellos de á dos centavos.	Two-cent postage stamps.
Un cañon de á diez centímetros.	A ten-centimeter gun.
Una pieza de á seis pulgadas.	A six-inch gun.
Un puro de á real.	A five-cent cigar.
Guardias de á caballo y de á pie.	Mounted and unmounted guards.

Note that in the first three examples simple *de* might be used.

**251. Con, with, along with ; also means and instrument.
Juntamente con, together with :—**

Fui al teatro con mi tío.	I went to the theater with my uncle.
No llevo dinero conmigo.	I don't carry money with me.
Le mató con una navaja.	He killed him with a clasp-knife.
Me quiere con todo su corazón.	He loves me with all his heart.
Juntamente con sus amigos.	Together with his friends.

252. Contra, against, towards :—

Estrellóse el caballo contra la pared.	The horse dashed against the wall.
El barco dió contra las rocas.	The vessel ran against the rocks.
La casa está contra el norte.	The house faces towards the north.

253. Desde, *from, since* : —

Desde la creación del mundo.	From the creation of the world.
Desde Madrid hasta Toledo.	From Madrid to Toledo.
Desde niño ; desde mañana.	From childhood ; from to-mor- row on.

254. Durante, *during* : —

Durante su minoría.	During his minority.
---------------------	----------------------

255. Entre, *between, amongst, to* : —

Entre tú y yo ; entre amigos.	Between you and me ; amongst friends.
Entre los cuatro se comieron el pavo entero.	Between the four they ate the whole turkey.
Dije entre mí : no haré tal cosa.	I said to myself : I will do no such thing.

256. Excepto, menos, salvo, *except, save* : —

Lo hace todo excepto lo más importante.	He does it all except the most important part.
Los tengo todos menos media docena.	I have them all except a half dozen.
Salvo los errores inevitables.	Save the inevitable errors.

257. Hacia, *towards* (physical and moral direction).**Para con, *towards* (moral direction) : —**

Hacia la entrada de la casa.	Towards the entrance of the house.
Relampaguea hacia el norte.	It lightens towards the north.
Él camina hacia su perdición.	He is going to his ruin.
Mi agradecimiento hacia V. será eterno.	My gratitude towards you will be eternal.
Es siempre amable para con sus amigos.	He is always amiable towards his friends.

258. Hasta, as far as, until, even, etc.: —

Pelearemos hasta vencer ó morir.	We shall fight until we conquer or die.
Mañana caminaremos hasta Burgos.	To-morrow we shall go as far as Burgos.
Los piratas mataron hasta los niños.	The pirates killed even the children.

259. Mediante, by means of: —

Fórmula de un charlatán para matar pulgas mediante unos polvos de su invención.	Formula of a charlatan for killing fleas by means of some powder of his invention.
---	--

260. No obstante, notwithstanding: —

No obstante todo lo que ha dicho, es increíble.	Notwithstanding all he has said, it is incredible.
---	--

261. Según, according to: —

El juez sentenció según ley.	The judge gave sentence according to law.
No pienso que las mercancías sean según las muestras.	I don't think the goods are according to samples.
Según lo que se me ha dicho.	According to what I have been told.
¿Viene hoy ó mañana? Es según.	Is he coming to-day or to-morrow? It depends.

262. Sin, without, besides: —

El pobre tiene que trabajar sin cesar para ganar su pan cotidiano.	The poor man has to work without ceasing in order to earn his daily bread.
Me trajo diamantes y rubies sin otras muchas piedras preciosas.	He brought me diamonds and rubies besides many other precious stones.

263. Sobre, on, upon, of, above, over, etc.**Encima de, upon, over, above: —**

Colonia está sobre el Rhin.	Cologne is on the Rhine.
Pongo mi gorro sobre la mesa.	I put my cap on the table.
Disputan sobre la libre acuñación de la plata.	They are disputing about the free coinage of silver.
Hay aquí sobre cien personas.	There are over a hundred persons here.
Hablemos sobre otra cosa.	Let us speak of something else.
Sobre lo de rústico, tiene algo de taimado.	Besides his rusticity, he has something crafty about him.
Mi sombrero está encima de la guardarropa.	My hat is upon the wardrobe.
Las aves vuelan encima de la torre.	The birds fly over the tower.
Y por encima de todo.	And above all.

264. Tras (de), after, besides.

Atrás de, } *behind* (place, order).
 Detrás de, }

Después de, after (time, order).**En pos de, after, behind: —**

Tras la fortuna viene la adversidad.	After fortune comes adversity.
Tras (de) perder su dinero, va sobre su honor.	Besides losing his money, his honor is at stake.
No se queda atrás de su antepasado.	He is not inferior to his ancestor.
Detrás de la cruz está el diablo.	Behind the cross is the devil.
Está sentado detrás de su sobrino.	He is sitting behind his nephew.
Después de la lluvia, el buen tiempo.	After the rain, the good weather.
El pronombre enclítico se pone después del infinitivo.	The enclitic pronoun is placed after the infinitive.
En pos de los demás se dirigió hacia el municipio.	Behind the others he went towards the townhall.

265. Certain combinations of prepositions have already been given. Others occur with **de** and **por** : —

Salieron de entre los sepulcros.	They came forth from amongst the tombs.
Saltaban los pajarillos por entre las ramas.	The little birds were hopping about among the limbs.
Cada uno de por sí.	Each one by himself.
Un alambre pasa por encima de la rueda y por delante de la ventana.	A wire passes over the wheel and before the window.
De debajo de la cama.	From under the bed.

266. Besides the prepositional examples already recorded, there are numerous phrases which serve as prepositions. Their use is so simple that illustrative sentences are not deemed necessary : —

además de, <i>besides</i> .	conforme á, <i>according to</i> .
alrededor de, <i>around</i> .	correspondiente á, <i>corresponding to</i> .
acerca de, <i>about, concerning</i> .	contrario á, <i>contrary to</i> .
cerca de, <i>near</i> .	frente á, <i>opposite to</i> .
dentro de, <i>in, into, within</i> .	junto á, <i>near, close to</i> .
fuera de, <i>outside of</i> .	respecto á, <i>with regard to</i> .
lejos de, <i>far from</i> .	tocante á, <i>touching</i> .
á causa de, <i>because of</i> .	en frente de, <i>opposite</i> .
á excepción de, <i>excepting</i> .	en lugar de, <i>instead of</i> .
á fuerza de, <i>by dint of</i> .	en vez de, <i>instead of</i> .
al lado de, <i>by the side of</i> .	en virtud de, <i>by virtue of</i> .
á(1) través de, <i>across, through</i> .	en vista de, <i>in view of</i> .
á pesar de, <i>in spite of</i> .	más allá de, <i>beyond</i> .
á razón de, <i>at the rate of</i> .	por causa de, <i>on account of</i> .
de parte de, <i>on the part of</i> .	por razón de, <i>by reason of</i> .
en cuanto á, <i>as to, as for</i> .	sin embargo de, <i>notwithstanding</i> .

IX

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

CONJUNCTIONS

267. The distinction between pure conjunctions and conjunctive adverbs can not always be strictly drawn. Their classification is unimportant:—

mas, pero, sino, }	} <i>but.</i>	que, <i>that, for, whether, and.</i>
empero (rare), }		á que, <i>that, until, I'll bet that.</i>
ni, <i>nor.</i>		de que, <i>that, because.</i>
ó, ú (before <i>o</i> or <i>ho</i>), <i>or.</i>		y, é (before <i>i</i> or <i>hi</i>), <i>and.</i>
ó sea, <i>or, that is.</i>		si, <i>if, whether, suppose, why.</i>

a. Mas, pero (empero), are the usual connectives between adversative statements:—

Eso lo dice Mariana, mas no conviene con él Lafuente.	That is what Mariana says, but Lafuente does not agree with him.
No le he visto hoy, pero creo que vendrá.	I have not seen him to-day, but I think he will come.

b. Sino, if the same verb is expressed or implied in both clauses, is used by way of contrast after a negative statement. When it is used in the same clause with the negative, it translates our *but* in the sense of *only*:—

Yo no vivo aquí sino en Cartagena.	I do not live here, but in Cartagena.
No una vez sino tres veces me lo solicitó.	Not once, but three times, he begged it of me.

No tengo sino tres pesos en mi cartera.	I have but three dollars in my pocketbook.
No llega el vapor sino pasado mañana.	The steamer arrives only the day after to-morrow.

c. *Ó* becomes *ú* before words beginning with *o* or *ho*:—

Vendré hoy <i>ó</i> mañana.	I shall come to-day or to-morrow.
Siete <i>ú</i> ocho ; diez <i>ú</i> onze ; mujer <i>ú</i> hombre.	Seven or eight ; ten or eleven ; woman or man.

d. *Que* is the common connective between principal and subordinate clauses, but it likewise has other uses, some of which are purely idiomatic and arbitrary. It may be omitted in certain cases, but is not nearly so often omitted as the English *that*:—

Pienso que lo hará tarde <i>ó</i> temprano.	I think he will do it sooner or later.
Permítame le diga que no está á mi gusto.	Allow me to tell you that it is not satisfactory to me.
Al mismo tiempo cayó enferma su madre ; que rara vez una desgracia viene sola.	At the same time his mother fell sick ; for rarely does a misfortune come alone.
Que quiera <i>ó</i> no, lo haré.	Whether he will or not, I shall do it.
Justicia pide, que no gracia.	Justice he asks, and not pardon.
¡ Socorro ! ¡ que me matan !	Help ! they are killing me !

NOTE.—In some instances a preceding clause may be supplied:—

¡ Que pase ! (<i>i.e.</i> quiero que—).	Let him come in (<i>i.e.</i> I wish that) he come in.
¡ Que se van todos ! (<i>i.e.</i> creo que—).	(I believe) they are all going away.

e. Á que is used after such verbs as *invitar, instar, exhortar, esperar, aguardar, etc.*:—

Invita á los franceses á que inviertan sus capitales.	He invites the French to invest their capital.
El <i>Globo</i> insta al gobierno á que tome posesión de la bahía.	The <i>Globe</i> urges the government to take possession of the bay.
Le exhortamos á que no pierda las esperanzas.	We exhort him not to lose hope.
Aguardaré á que venga.	I will wait until he comes.
Á que no vendrá.	I'll bet he will not come.

f. De que, in general, is employed after words which, in other constructions, would be followed by *de*:—

No hay duda de que el proyecto llegará á ser ley.	There is no doubt (of the fact) that the bill will become a law.
Estoy seguro de que él lo aceptará.	I am sure (of the fact that) he will accept it.

g. Y becomes *é* before *i* or *hi*, but not before *hie* or at the beginning of an interrogative sentence:—

Fernando é Isabel; padres é hijos.	Ferdinand and Isabella; fathers and sons.
Tigres y hienas; nieve y hielo.	Tigers and hyenas; snow and ice.
¿Y interés al cinco por ciento?	And interest at five per cent?

h. Si commonly expresses a condition, but it has other uses which may be seen in the following:—

Dudo si traerá su escopeta.	I doubt whether he will bring his gun.
¿Si será verdad lo que se me ha dicho?	Suppose what has been told me shall turn out to be true?
Si no salió en toda la noche.	Why, he did not go out during the whole night.

268. Besides the conjunctions already given, there are numerous conjunctive phrases. Those in heavy type are followed by the subjunctive under conditions to be hereafter explained:—

á fin de que, *in order that.*

á medida que, *according as.*

á menos que, } *unless.*
á no ser que, }

ahora que, *now that.*

antes que, *before.*

así que, *so that, as.*

aunque, } *although.*
bien que, }

como, *when, as.*

como quiera que, *however.*

con que, *so, so then.*

con motivo que, *so that.*

con tal que, *provided that.*

cuando, *when.*

cuanto más que, *the more since.*

dado que, *in case.*

dado caso que, *supposing that.*

de manera que, } *so that.*
de modo que, }

de suerte que, }

desde que, *since.*

después que, *after.*

en caso que, *in case that.*

en tanto que, *while, in case that.*

en vez de que, *instead of.*

entre tanto que, *while.*

excepto que, *except that.*

hasta que, *until.*

luego que, *as soon as.*

mientras (que), *while.*

no obstante que, *notwithstanding.*

para que, *in order that.*

por — que, *however (246, g).*

porque, *because, in order that.*

por si, *in case that.*

pues que, } *since.*
puesto que, }

sea que, *whether, while.*

según que, *according as.*

siempre que, *whenever.*

sin que, *without.*

supuesto que, *supposing, since.*

tanto que, *so that.*

ya que, *since.*

269. Certain conjunctions, which occur in pairs, are called correlatives:—

Apenas — cuando.

Así — como ; ni — ni (237).

No bien — cuando.

No sólo — sino (que).

Scarcely — when.

Both — and ; neither — nor.

Scarcely — when.

Not only — but.

No solamente — sino (que).

Not only — but.

Ó — ó ; ora — ora.

Either — or ; now — now.

Sea — sea ; ya — ya.

Whether — or ; now — now.

NOTE. — Where *que* follows *sino*, as above, a verb will be expressed, which need not be the same as that of the first clause (267, *b*) :—

Te suplico que no rompas esta carta, sino que la guardes. I beg you not to tear up this letter, but to keep it.

INTERJECTIONS

270. Conversational Spanish is profuse in interjections. Their exact shade of meaning depends, to some extent, on the circumstances which call them forth. The English translations assigned to them must be regarded as merely approximative. The pure interjections are :—

ah ! oh !	} <i>oh ! ah ! alas !</i>	huy ! (pain) <i>oh me !</i>
ay ! guay !		ja ! ja ! ja ! (laughter).
bah ! <i>pshaw !</i>		ojalá ! <i>God grant !</i>
ca ! <i>or !</i> <i>quíá ! nonsense !</i>		ox ! <i>shoo !</i>
caramba ! <i>the deuce !</i>		puf ! <i>ugh ! pah !</i>
cáspita ! <i>zounds !</i>		sus ! <i>courage ! come on !</i>
ea ! <i>come !</i>		tate ! <i>beware !</i>
eh ! <i>eh ! say !</i>		uf ! (weariness), <i>oh !</i>
hola ! (ola) <i>oh ! hello !</i>		zape ! <i>scat ! goodness !</i>

271. Besides the pure interjections, various parts of speech are used as such. Among the more common are :—

al asesino ! <i>murder !</i>	cuidado ! <i>take care !</i>
al ladrón ! <i>stop thief !</i>	de veras ! <i>indeed ! truly !</i>
á lincharle ! <i>lynch him !</i>	fuego ! <i>fire !</i>
anda ! <i>pshaw ! nonsense !</i>	otra ! otra ! otra vez ! <i>en-</i>
á quemarle vivo ! <i>burn him</i>	<i>core !</i>
<i>alive !</i>	toma ! <i>indeed ! really !</i>

¡basta! <i>enough!</i>	¡sócorro! <i>help! help!</i>
¡bravo! <i>bravo! good for you!</i>	¡vamos! <i>come! well!</i>
¡calle! <i>shut up! nonsense!</i>	¡vaya! <i>indeed! of course!</i>
¡cómo! <i>how! why!</i>	¡voto va! <i>thunderation!</i>
¡corriente! <i>all right!</i>	¡ya ya! <i>yes, yes, of course!</i>

NOTE. — Hombre, *man*, and mujer, *woman*, often occur as interjections, particularly to add emphasis or to protest against a statement.

272. The names of holy personages and evil spirits are freely used as exclamations, Spaniards not feeling the same aversion to their use as we do. In translating into English, they may be rendered by *dear me! heavens! gracious me!* or any other equivalent appropriate to the context: —

¡cielos! <i>heavens!</i>	¡ave María! <i>hail Mary!</i>
¡ay Dios mío! <i>oh, my God!</i>	¡ave María purísima! <i>hail Mary most pure!</i>
¡Dios! <i>God!</i>	
¡Dios mío! <i>my God!</i>	¡Virgen Santa! <i>Holy Virgin!</i>
¡por Dios! <i>for God's sake!</i>	¡Jesús! <i>or, Jesús, María, José!</i>
¡señor! <i>lord! sir!</i>	¡demonio! <i>the deuce!</i>
¡pardiez! <i>by George!</i>	¡diablo! <i>the devil!</i>
¡válgame Dios! <i>God help me!</i>	¡diantre!

273. Adjectives and *ay* and *guay* are connected by *de* with a following noun or pronoun: —

¡triste de mí! <i>poor me!</i>	¡ay de tí! <i>alas for thee!</i>
¡pobre de mi amigo! <i>my poor friend!</i>	¡guay de la víctima! <i>woe to the victim!</i>

274. Finally *qué* and *qué* — *tan* introduce many exclamatory phrases: —

¡que lástima! <i>what a pity!</i>	¡qué hombre! <i>what a man!</i>
¡qué bonita! <i>how pretty!</i>	¡qué niña tan hermosa! <i>what a pretty child!</i>

X

SYNTAX

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

275. The English and Spanish definite articles coincide in many of their uses. In general we shall note only such cases as differ from English usage. The Spanish article is used —

a. With the names of certain countries, provinces, mountains, and cities, and with others when they are limited by some qualifying word or are not preceded by a preposition : —

el Brasil, el Canadá.	la América del Sur.
el Perú, la Coruña.	la Carolina del Norte.
la Habana, el Vesuvio.	la Gran Bretaña.
el Helicón.	Castilla la Nueva <i>or</i> la Vieja.
el Japón, el Paraguay.	la Francia produce mucho vino.

NOTE. — Familiarly also before the baptismal names of women :
la Carlota, la Dolores, la Pepita.

b. In expressing periods or points of time : —

Volveré á los ocho días.	I shall return in eight days.
Lo ví el lunes y lo veré el miércoles.	I saw him on Monday and shall see him on Wednesday.
Doy mi lección de música los martes y los jueves.	I take my music lesson (on) Tuesdays and Thursdays.
La semana entrante ; el año que viene.	Next week ; next year.

Es la una ; son las dos, las tres y media.	It is one o'clock ; it is two, half-past three.
Á <i>or</i> por la noche.	At night.

c. In expressions of rate, measure, weight, etc. : —

Al tanto por ciento.	At so much per cent.
Á dos pesos la fanega.	At two dollars a bushel.
Á tres pesetas la libra.	At three francs a pound.
Á diez centavos la milla.	At ten cents a mile.

NOTE. — But the article is frequently omitted and *por* may be used : —

Este paño vale dos pesos vara (la vara <i>or</i> por vara).	This cloth is worth two dollars a yard.
La mantequilla se vende á 25 centavos libra (la l. <i>or</i> por l.).	Butter sells at twenty-five cents a pound.

d. With nouns expressing universal or abstract ideas : —

El mentir es un vicio abominable.	Lying is an abominable vice.
Más vale la alegría que la riqueza.	Mirth is better than riches.
El hombre propone y la mujer dispone.	Man proposes and woman disposes.
El oro es más precioso que la plata.	Gold is more precious than silver.
El perro es un animal muy útil.	The dog is a very useful animal.

e. Before titles when used in the third person, except *don* and *doña* : —

El doctor Sánchez ; el general Espartero ; el almirante Cer- vera ; el señor Silvela ; la señora Bazán ; el papa León <i>trece.</i>	Dr. Sanchez ; General Espar- tero ; Admiral Cervera ; Mr. Silvela ; Mrs. Bazan ; Pope Leo the Thirteenth.
---	--

But —

Buenos días, señor García.	Good morning (day), Mr. García.
¿Cómo está V., señora Pérez?	How are you, Mrs. Perez?
Don Juan y doña María han llegado.	Don John and Donna Mary have arrived.

f. Before nouns expressing *nationality, profession, or sex*, when they limit pronouns of the first or second person plural: —

Nosotros los españoles.	We Spaniards.
Vosotros los actores.	You actors.
Ustedes las mujeres.	You women.
Todos los hombres del Mediodía somos muy pundonorosos.	All we men of the South are very nice about points of honor.

Note also: —

Tengo una buena edición <i>del</i> Quijote.	I have a fine edition of Don Quijote.
El Dante y el Petrarca eran poetas italianos.	Dante and Petrarca were Italian poets.
Dar el parabién; dar el pésame.	To congratulate; to condole with.
La María tiene la boca pequeña, el pelo rubio, los ojos azules y las mejillas color de rosa.	Mary has a small mouth, blond hair, blue eyes, and rosy cheeks.
Los ocultó en <i>el</i> pecho.	He hid them in <i>his</i> bosom.
El pobre Juan ha muerto.	Poor John has died.

276. The definite article is omitted —

a. Before nouns in predicate relations, when they are qualified by adjectives or other attributes: —

Es obra mágica de Brunilda.	It is the magic work of Brunilda.
Es superintendente de la Academia naval.	He is the superintendent of the Naval Academy.
Es primo de un marqués.	He is the cousin of a marquis.

b. Before certain nouns in apposition :—

Maria Cristina, reina regente de España.	Maria Cristina, the Queen Regent of Spain.
Juan Valera, autor de <i>Pepita Jiménez</i> .	Juan Valera, the author of <i>Pepita Jimenez</i> .
Pelayo, primer rey de Asturias.	Pelayo, the first king of Asturias.

c. Before numbers indicating the order of sovereigns :—

Alfonso trece, rey de España.	Alfonso XIII, king of Spain.
Isabel segunda, ex-reina de España.	Isabella the second, ex-queen of Spain.
Pío nono, Papa que fué de Roma.	Pius IX, the late Pope of Rome.
Su Santidad, León trece.	His Holiness, Leo XIII.

d. While the definite article is usually expressed before each noun of a series, it may be omitted before all but the first, especially when they are of similar meaning or are connected by *ó* :—

Ella tiene toda la inocencia, sencillez y blandura de una niñita.	She has all the innocence, simplicity, and gentleness of a little girl.
Á causa de la ignorancia ó torpeza de su amigo.	Because of the ignorance or dullness of his friend.

e. Sometimes the use or omission of the definite article gives a different meaning to the sentence :—

hacer la cama, <i>to make the bed.</i>	hacer cama, <i>to be sick in bed.</i>
dar el alma, <i>to expire.</i>	dar alma, <i>to encourage.</i>
día del juicio, <i>judgment day.</i>	día de juicio, <i>the day set for trial.</i>
tomar el hábito, <i>to become a nun or monk.</i>	tomar hábito, <i>to adopt the custom.</i>

f. Finally, the definite article is omitted in many cases which do not admit of classification. This occurs particularly after certain prepositions and in certain expressions fixed by usage. A few examples only can be cited:—

En Filipinas.	In the Philippines.
Bajo mando de.	Under the command of.
En nombre del rey.	In the name of the King.
En dicha mañana.	On the morning in question.
Broma de nuevo año.	New Year's joke.
En número singular.	In the singular number.
En tercera persona.	In the third person.
En presente de indicativo.	In the present of the indicative.
Un hombre de mar.	A man of the sea (seaman).
En medio del camino.	In the midst of the way.
En presencia del juez.	In the presence of the judge.
De parte del presidente.	By order of the president.
Á última hora de la sesión.	At the last hour of the session.

THE NEUTER ARTICLE

277. *Lo* is freely used to form nouns expressing abstract and other ideas. From its nature it can not have a plural, and can not be omitted like other articles. It is joined —

a. To adjectives and participles:—

Lo bueno ; lo útil ; lo mío.	The good ; the useful ; mine, what is mine.
Hice todo lo posible.	I did all I could (my best).
La puse al corriente de lo ocurrido.	I informed her of what had happened.
La relación de lo visible con lo invisible.	The relation of the visible to the invisible.

b. To adverbs and nouns by means of *de*:—

Lo de ayer ; lo de siempre.	The affair of yesterday ; the same old story.
Lo de Filipinas.	The Philippine question.

NOTE.—See 89, 1st to 4th, for other uses of *lo*.

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE

278. While the Spanish indefinite article agrees in many of its uses with the English, it differs in many others. Among these differences is its omission —

a. Before nouns in predicate relations. These nouns may be qualified by adjectives or other adjuncts:—

Es abogado ; es médico.	He is a lawyer ; he is a doctor.
Es español ; es española.	He is a Spaniard ; she is Spanish.
Es excelente compositor.	He is an excellent composer.
Nos parece modelo de ingratitude.	He appears to us a model of ingratitude.
Quiere meterse á hermana de caridad.	She wishes to become a sister of charity.

NOTE.—The above usage is not constant, as the article is expressed, whenever it is desired to define more sharply the individual:—

El es un hombre de importancia.	He is a man of mark.
Es un estadista de primer orden.	He is a statesman of the first order.
Es un viejo de muy pequeña estatura.	He is an old man of very small stature.

b. Before nouns in apposition :—

<i>El Sombrero de tres Picos</i> , novela de Alarcón.	<i>The Three-Cornered Hat</i> , a novel by Alarcon.
Nueva York, gran ciudad de los Estados Unidos, se halla en la desembocadura del Hudson.	New York, a great city of the United States, is situated at the mouth of the Hudson.

c. Before certain adjectives and indefinite expressions :—

Buen susto me has dado.	You gave me a good scare.
Está en muy mal estado.	He is in a very bad state.
Recibe gran quebranto.	It receives a great damage.
Tan noble acción.	Such a noble action.
Tamaña idea no me ocurrió.	Such an idea did not occur to me.
En semejante materia.	In such a matter.
Por igual razón.	For a like reason.
Media docena de naranjas.	Half a dozen oranges.
Con cierto tono malicioso.	With a certain malicious tone.
Como se dijo en otro lugar.	As was said in another place.
No pienso en tal cosa.	I am not thinking of such a thing.
No tuvo éxito como actor.	He had no success as an actor.
¡ Qué vergüenza ! ¡ qué lástima !	What a shame ! what a pity !

d. After negative expressions and others implying negation :—

Por no sufrir extraño yugo.	In order not to suffer a foreign yoke.
Dudo que V. encuentre mejor calidad.	I doubt whether you will find a better quality.
Éste no hablaba palabra.	The latter was not saying a word.
Siguió sin pronunciar palabra.	He followed without speaking a word.

Con todo eso apenas tendrá V. idea de ella.	With all that you will scarcely have an idea of her.
¿Hay hombre más arrogante?	Is there a more arrogant man?

e. Before words indicating quantity : —

Precio, diez pesetas año en España.	Price, ten pesetas a year in Spain.
Présteme V. cien pesos.	Lend me a hundred dollars.
Á treinta pesetas tomo.	At thirty pesetas a volume.
No llegaría á vara y media.	It would not reach a yard and a half.
Hay aquí mil soldados.	There are a thousand soldiers here.
Quiero docena y media.	I want a dozen and a half.
Á media milla de aquí.	Half a mile from here.

f. Lastly, the indefinite article is omitted before nouns used in a general or indeterminate sense : —

Datos tomados de fuente fidedigna.	Data taken from a trustworthy source.
Después de brevísima noche.	After a very short night.
También tenemos sala de patinar.	We have also a skating rink.
Formó parte del primer ministerio.	He formed a part of the first ministry.
Dió palabra de curarme.	He promised to cure me.
Lo atribuyo á falta de fuerza física.	I attribute it to a lack of physical strength.
Le ha dado habitación en el palacio.	He has given him a room in the palace.

NOUNS AND PRONOUNS

279. We have seen (13) that it is convenient to treat nouns as having a declension, although they only vary to *express number*. A brief treatment of the cases will suffice.

280. The **nominative** has the same uses as the English nominative.

281. The **genitive** is formed by the preposition *de*, *of*, and is the equivalent of the English possessive case or of a word preceded by *of* (occasionally *to*): —

El caballo de mi amigo.	My friend's horse.
Una taza de te ; una copa de agua.	A cup of tea ; a glass of water.
Una cadena de oro.	A gold chain.
Los manzanos del huerto.	The apple trees of the orchard.
El camino de la viña.	The road to the vineyard.

a. The **genitive** occurs also after certain quasi-intransitive and reflexive verbs : —

Los soldados carecen de todo.	The soldiers lack everything.
Tiró de un revólver.	He drew a revolver.
Voy á cambiar de traje.	I am going to change my clothing.
No dudo de lo que dice usted.	I don't doubt what you say.
Él no entiende de poesía.	He does not know anything about poetry.
Goza de buena reputación.	He enjoys a good reputation.
Debiera usar de sus privilegios y no abusar de ellos.	He ought to use his privileges and not abuse them.
Necesitamos de mucho dinero.	We need much money.
El barco varió de rumbo.	The vessel changed her course.
No se acuerda de lo ocurrido.	He does not remember what occurred.
No me fio de sus promesas.	I don't trust his promises.
Se burló de él y no de mí.	He made fun of him and not of me.
Nos alegramos de su éxito.	We rejoice at his success.
Se ríe de todo el mundo.	He laughs at everybody.

Se compadece del pobre perro.	He takes pity on the poor dog.
Sírvase V. de sus talentos.	Make use of your talents.
Se ha enamorado de la joven.	He has fallen in love with the young girl.
Se apoderó del palacio.	He took possession of the palace.

282. The **dative**, expressed by *á* when a noun or pronoun follows, is the case of the indirect object and occurs mostly after verbs whose equivalent, in English, takes *to* (sometimes *of* or *from*) as a complement: —

El general hablaba al soldado.	The general was speaking to the soldier.
Á mí me lo dijo y no á él.	He told it to me and not to him.
Dará un terrón de azucar á la muchachita.	He will give a lump of sugar to the little girl.
Devolvió el libro al maestro.	He returned the book to the teacher.
Lo mandaré á casa por usted.	I will send it home for you.
Anoche fui á la ópera.	Last night I went to the opera.
El salteador quitó al viajero su reloj y su capa.	The footpad took from the traveler his watch and cloak.
Le agradezco á V. su bondad.	I thank you for your kindness.
Le ganó todo su dinero.	He won from him all his money.
Me pidió una limosna.	He asked alms of me.
Beso á usted la mano.	I kiss your hand.
Ella tomó el brazo á su hermano.	She took her brother's arm.
Sobrevivirá á toda su familia.	He will outlive all his family.

a. The dative occurs also after some nouns: —

El amor á la patria.	The love of country.
Su afición á la música.	His love for music.
<i>El miedo á la muerte.</i>	The fear of death.

283. The **accusative** has two forms, the *personal*, formed by the preposition *á*, and the *simple accusative*. They both stand as the object of a transitive verb. The personal is used —

a. When the object is a common noun referring to living beings or to things personified : —

La madre quiere á sus hijas, y	The mother loves her daughters,
las hijas la quieren á ella. —	and the daughters love her.
El cazador vapula al perro.	The hunter flogs the dog.
El buen ciudadano ama á su	The good citizen loves his
patria.	country.

b. When the object is a proper name not preceded by the article : —

Mandé á José al correo.	I sent Joseph to the post office.
Ayer ví á Juan y á Carlos.	Yesterday I saw John and Charles.
Con eso picó á Rocinante y	With that he spurred Rosinante
partió á galope.	and started off at a gallop.
Dejaré á España mañana.	I shall leave Spain to-morrow.

c. With pronouns and pronominal adjectives, when used, by way of contrast or emphasis, to define more nearly other pronouns : —

Le aseguro á usted que no.	I assure you it is not so.
No me lo envió á mí sino á él.	He did not send it to me, but to him.
Se admiran el uno al otro.	They admire each other.
Nos aborrecen á todos.	They hate us all.
¿ Á quién vió V. ? ¿ á él ó á ella ?	Whom did you see ? him or her ?

d. With most pronouns and pronominal adjectives designating persons :—

De los dos hombres prefiero á éste.	Of the two men I prefer this one.
No encontré á nadie en el parque.	I did not meet (find) any one in the park.
No quiere á ninguno de ellos.	He does not like any one of them.
No sé á quién busca.	I don't know whom he is looking for.
Consuela á cada uno por turno.	He consoles each one in turn.
Vino el diluvio y destruyó á todos.	The flood came and destroyed all.

e. When two objects, whether persons or things, stand in a factitive relation to each other, the true accusative takes á. One of them may be an adjective :—

Hizo al agua vino.	He made the water wine.
Llama á su capricho amor.	She calls her caprice love.
El rey designó capitán al teniente.	The king appointed the lieutenant captain.
Su éxito hace vano al soldado.	His success makes the soldier vain.

f. When two or more nouns, the names of things, are in the same sentence, á must precede the object, provided the subject is also the name of a thing; otherwise the subject and object might be confounded :—

El adjetivo precede al nombre.	The adjective precedes the noun.
Al verbo se antepone el pronombre.	The pronoun is placed before the verb.
<i>Sigue el día á la noche.</i>	The day follows the night.

284. The simple accusative, *i.e.* without *á*, occurs —

a. When the object is a thing or insignificant animal, the subject generally a person :—

Ella está dando lección de música. She is taking a music lesson.

Escribe una carta á su padre. He writes a letter to his father.

Habla español muy al pelo. He speaks Spanish very glibly.

El cazador mata la liebre. The hunter kills the hare.

b. When the object, though designating a person, is not preceded by a determining word, as the article, demonstrative, etc. :—

No conozco hombre más torpe, I don't know a duller man nor
ni mujeres más amables. more amiable women.

c. When the object is preceded by a numeral (except *un, una*). Not constant :—

Envió 50 hombres en su ayuda. He sent 50 men to his assistance.

Ví seis amigos míos en el teatro. I saw six friends of mine in the
theater.

Nadie puede servir á dos señores. No one can serve two masters.

d. When the object stands in immediate relation with a dative, unless the former be a proper name without the article :—

Envié el criado á la plaza. I sent the servant to market.

Paris arrebató á Menelao su mujer Elena. Paris carried off from Menelaos
his wife Helen.

But —

Pascual entrega á María á su rival. Pascual delivers up Mary to his
rival.

e. When the object is a proper name preceded by the article:—

Pizarro conquistó el Perú.	Pizarro conquered Peru.
Prefiero el Dante al Tasso.	I prefer Dante to Tasso.
Vamos á visitar los Alpes.	We are going to visit the Alps.
Ponce de León descubrió la Florida en 1512.	Ponce de Leon discovered Florida in 1512.

f. When the object represents a general idea:—

La antigua Grecia produjo grandes oradores.	Ancient Greece produced great orators.
Es la práctica la que hace los maestros.	Practice is what makes masters (makes perfect).
Toda buena mujer ama los buenos niños.	Every good woman loves good children.

g. For the sake of euphony, but not before a proper name:—

Él mira aquel hombre.	He looks at that man.
Vió aquella mujer.	He saw that woman.
Halló á Anita en la escuela.	He found Anita in the school.

NOTE.—This rule is not constant.

285. After a few verbs the use or omission of *á* gives a different turn to the thought:—

WITHOUT	WITH
Tenemos un novel autor. <i>We have a new author.</i>	El caballerizo tiene al caballo. <i>The groom holds the horse.</i>
Quiere amigos que le amen. <i>He wants friends to love him.</i>	Quiere muchísimo á sus amigos. <i>He loves his friends very much.</i>
Los romanos robaron las sabinas en tiempo de Rómulo. <i>The Romans stole the Sabine women in the time of Romulus.</i>	Los romanos robaron á los sabinos sus hijas. <i>The Romans robbed the Sabines of their daughters.</i>

Dejo el criado en la casa.	Dejo al criado hacerlo.
<i>I leave the servant in the house.</i>	<i>I have the servant do it.</i>
Perdió ayer su padre.	Ha perdido á su hijo.
<i>He lost his father yesterday.</i>	<i>He has spoiled his son.</i>

NOTE.—What has been said covers pretty well the general use of the two forms of the accusative ; but the subject is confessedly a difficult one, at least for the foreigner, and the student must not be surprised if he find, even in the best authors, violations of some of the above rules. The degree of individuality which the speaker wishes to assign to the object frequently determines the use or omission of *á*. Hence it may appear, at times, a little arbitrary.

THE ADJECTIVE

286. Adjectives agree in gender and number with the nouns or pronouns they qualify:—

El es un hombre honrado.	He is an honest man.
Ella es una mujer bonita.	She is a pretty woman.
Falsas esperanzas y vanos temores.	False hopes and vain fears.
Ella es aplicada y buena.	She is diligent and good.
¿ Cuántos años tiene usted ?	How old are you ?
Es usted injusta, señora.	You are unjust, madam.

287. When two or more nouns or pronouns are in the singular and of different genders, the adjective is put in the masculine plural:—

El médico y su hermana son ricos.	The doctor and his sister are rich.
La casa y el jardín son magníficos.	The house and garden are magnificent.
Él y ella son generosos.	He and she are generous.

NOTE. — Where the nouns are of similar meaning, the adjective may agree with the nearest : —

Tiene una energía y un celo in-	He has an indomitable energy
domable.	and zeal.

288. Adjectives qualifying singular nouns of the same gender are put in the plural and in the gender of their nouns : —

El blanco y el negro son colores	White and black are opposite
opuestos.	colors.

La yegua y la vaca son pardas.	The mare and the cow are gray.
--------------------------------	--------------------------------

289. Sometimes a plural noun may be qualified distributively by several adjectives in the singular : —

Las edades pretéritas, griega,	The past ages, Grecian, Roman,
latina, ó bárbara.	or Barbarian.

Los siglos décimooctavo y déci-	The eighteenth and nineteenth
monono.	centuries.

290. Two or more nouns referring to animate beings take the masculine adjective, if they are of different genders : —

Tanto los padres como las madres	Both the fathers and the mothers
son caritativos.	are charitable.

Los caballos, las vacas y las	The horses, the cows, and the
ovejas son gananciosos.	sheep are profitable.

NOTE. — But if the nouns represent things or ideas, the adjective generally agrees in gender with the nearest noun : —

Vanas son mis esperanzas y te-	Vain are my hopes and fears.
mores.	

Tiene buenos melocotones y	He has (some) good peaches
<i>manzanas.</i>	and apples.

¡ Tenga V. las orejas y los ojos abiertos !	Keep your ears and eyes open.
La igualdad de nuestro linaje y riquezas.	The equality of our lineage and riches.
Las ideas y educación americanas.	American ideas and education.

291. When a title grammatically feminine is applied to men, the adjective, unless it is part of the title, is put in the masculine : —

Su Majestad (el rey) está satisfecho.	His Majesty (the king) is satisfied.
Su Santidad (el Papa) es muy caritativo.	His Holiness (the Pope) is very charitable.

But —

Su Majestad (la reina) es bonita.	Her Majesty (the queen) is pretty.
Su graciosa Majestad.	Her gracious Majesty.
Su Alteza serenísima.	His most serene Highness.

292. When adjectives express dimension they are sometimes treated as nouns and connected with numbers by means of *de* : —

Tiene una sala de 80 pies de largo, 60 de ancho y 30 de alto.	It has a hall 80 feet long, 60 wide, and 30 high.
---	---

NOTE. — But dimension may be otherwise expressed : —

Tiene la torre 100 pies de altura.	The tower is a hundred feet high.
La calle es de 40 pies en ancho.	The street is 40 feet wide.
La goleta tiene una manga de 30 pies.	The schooner has a beam of 30 feet.

293. The complements of adjectives, *i.e.* the prepositions which connect them with other words, form a subject which

does not admit of concise and orderly treatment. The preposition to be used in each case has to be learned by practice. The following examples will show a few of the differences between the two languages : —

Atento con sus mayores.	Respectful to one's superiors.
Una espada bota de punta.	A sword blunt at the point.
Escaso de medios.	Limited in means.
Falto de juicio.	Lacking in sense.
Generoso para con sus parientes.	Generous towards one's relatives.
Impropio para su edad.	Unbecoming to his age.
Ingrato á los beneficios.	Ungrateful for benefits.
Ingrato con los amigos.	Ungrateful to friends.
Humano con los presos.	Humane towards the prisoners.
Penetrado de dolor.	Penetrated with grief.
Sed bueno conmigo.	Be kind to me.
Sordo de un oído.	Deaf in one ear.
Aficionado á la música.	Fond of music.
Alegre con la noticia.	Joyful at the news.

THE VERB

294. Sentence structure. — Spanish being more highly inflected than English, its words have a greater freedom of position in the sentence. This is doubtless a relic of Latin syntax, which secured fine *rhetorical* effects by varying the *logical* order of the words. In Spanish such variations often depend merely on the choice of the speaker who arranges his words according to his own ideas of harmony and rhythm. The following sentence, arranged in three ways, will serve as an illustration : —

Logical order. — Tres grandes artistas líricos estaban encargados (*encharged*) de las principales partes de la obra (*piece*).

1. **Rhetorical order.** — Estaban encargados de las principales partes de la obra tres grandes artistas líricos.

2. **Rhetorical order.** — De las principales partes de la obra estaban encargados tres grandes artistas líricos.

295. Agreement. — In a general way the Spanish rules for the agreement of subject and predicate are the same as those of English. There is some diversity, however, which may be noted under the following headings: —

a. A noun of multitude, not modified by a plural adjunct, has the verb in the singular, when the idea of unity is uppermost in the speaker's mind: —

El ejército atacó la ciudad.	The army attacked the city.
Toda la gente aplaudió .	All the people applauded.
La multitud quedó atónita.	The multitude was astonished.
La mayor parte del público rió á mandíbula batiente.	The greater part of the public laughed uproariously.

NOTE. — But the verb may be put in the plural when the idea of plurality is prominent: —

Multitud de gente acudieron á la ciudad.	A crowd of people hurried to the city.
La mitad del regimiento resultaron muertos.	Half of the regiment were killed.

b. When a noun of multitude is limited by a plural adjunct, the verb can be singular or plural, but plural only when it is logically applicable to the individuals of the adjunct: —

Un batallón de soldados defienden (<i>or defiende</i>) el castillo.	A battalion of soldiers defend the castle.
--	---

Un enjambre de abejas con su maestra **salieron** (*or* **salió**) de la colmena. A swarm of bees with their queen came out of the hive.

NOTE. — But if the verb stands before the subject or is not logically applicable to the adjunct, the verb in the former case is usually singular, in the latter it must be : —

Sale de la trinchera un destacamento de trabajadores. A detachment of laborers come out of the intrenchment.
El precio de las manzanas **está** subido. The price of apples is high.

296. Two or more singular subjects require a plural verb, when they are considered as distinct agencies, and especially if the verb follows : —

El jinete y el caballo **cayeron**. The rider and horse fell.
El sol y la luna **alumbran** la tierra. The sun and moon give light to the earth.
El monólogo del barítono y el dúo con la tiple **conmovieron** mucho al público. The solo of the baritone and the duet with the soprano created great enthusiasm in the audience.

a. But if the verb precedes, or the nouns are taken as forming one idea, the verb may, and generally will, be in the singular : —

Cuando el maestro empuñó la batuta, **reinaba** en el teatro un silencio profundo y una emoción intensa. When the *maestro* seized his baton, there reigned in the theater a profound silence and intense expectancy.
El subir y bajar la escalera me **cansa**. Going up and coming down the stairs tires me.
Su sabiduría y elocuencia nos **convenció**. His learning and eloquence convinced us.

NOTE. — When the ideas are distinct, each noun will usually be preceded by some determining word : —

El nacer y el morir son los dos extremos de la vida.	Birth and death are the two extremes of life.
La salida y la puesta del sol marcan el principio y el fin del día.	The rising and setting of the sun mark the beginning and end of day.
Su voz y su pronunciación son encantadoras.	Her voice and her pronunciation are charming.

297. When **ni** stands between two or more subjects, the verb will be singular or plural, according as it logically refers to one or all of them : —

Ni él ni su hijo irá de consul á Cartagena.	Neither he nor his son will go as consul to Cartagena.
Ni el uno ni el otro se casó con ella.	Neither the one nor the other married her.
Ni el ala derecha ni el centro pudieron hacer frente al enemigo.	Neither the right wing nor the center could withstand the enemy.

a. Where **ó** serves as a connective between subjects, as it implies an alternative, the verb will usually be singular : —

Su amigo ó él me ha engañado.	His friend or he has deceived me.
Ó el amo ó el criado compró el barómetro.	Either the master or the servant bought the barometer.

298. When subject and predicate nouns differ in number, the copula will generally be plural : —

Panal de miel son hablas suaves.	Pleasant words are (as) honey-comb.
---	-------------------------------------

Su único recurso son los tribunales de los Estados Unidos.	His only recourse is the United States courts.
Mas su salida son caminos de muerte.	But the end thereof are the ways of death.

299. When the subject of a verb is a relative preceded immediately by a personal pronoun as its antecedent, it will be in the person and number of this antecedent : —

Yo, que lo digo , lo probaré.	I, who say so, will prove it.
Se lo dijo á él quien no es su amigo.	He said it to him who is not his friend.
Nosotros, que ya no somos jóvenes.	We who are no longer young.

300. When *el, los, la, las*, are predicates after some part of the verb *to be* (*ser*) in the first or second person, the verb of the relative clause may be either in the same person or in the third person : —

Y respondió Dios á Moisés : Yo soy el que soy.	And God said unto Moses : I AM THAT I AM.
He sido la que se lo dije (<i>or</i> dijo).	It was I who said it to him.
¿Sois los que me lo pedís ?	Is it you who ask it of me ?

NOTE. — When *quien* stands in the same relation, both verbs may or may not be in the same person : —

Soy yo quien lo dije .	It is I who said so.
Nosotros somos quienes lo sostenemos .	We are the ones (it is we) who maintain it.
Soy yo quien va á contártelo.	I am the one who is going to tell it to you.

THE TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE

PRESENT

301. The **present tense**, besides discharging the usual functions of the verb in the present time, is likewise used,

a. For the **perfect** in certain idiomatic expressions, and at times in familiar epistolary style : —

Cuánto tiempo lleva V. en este país ?	How long have you been in this country ?
Hace diez años que vivo aquí.	I have been living here ten years.
Vengo de visitar á mi tío.	I have just come from visiting my uncle.
Recibo su interesante carta de ayer.	I have received your interesting letter of yesterday.

b. For the **preterit** in lively narrative : —

Viene á mi casa ; pregunta por mí, y cuando se le informa que no puede verme, se va maldiciéndome.	He came to my house ; asked for me, and when he was informed that he could not see me, he went away cursing me.
--	---

c. For the **future** : —

El lunes que viene parto para Europa.	This coming Monday I shall start for Europe.
De hoy en ocho días se casa mi hija.	To-day week my daughter will be married.

IMPERFECT

302. The **imperfect**, if studied in all its phases, presents some difficulty for the English-speaking person ; but its general use may be easily acquired. It is employed —

a. To express habitual or repeated action in past time, sometimes rendered in English by *used to*; also state or condition :—

Cuando **vivía** en Wáshington, **iba** á las escuelas municipales. When I lived in Washington, I used to go to the public schools.

Venía á verme muy á menudo. He used to come to see me very often.

Estaba malo y no **podía** salir. He was sick and could not go out.

NOTE. — Customary action is also expressed by the verb *soler* (221) :—

Yo **solía** ir á la pesca con mi padre, cuando yo **era** muchacho. I used to go fishing with my father, when I was a boy.

b. To indicate that one action was taking place, when another supervened :—

Yo **salía** á paseo, cuando encontré á mi tía. I was going out for a walk, when I met my aunt.

Llegó la carta mientras yo **comía**. The letter arrived while I was dining.

NOTE. — Continuous action of this kind may also be expressed by the progressive form of the verb (140) :—

Estaba yo **leyendo**, cuando vino á mi cuarto. I was reading when he came to my room.

c. When simultaneous actions are to be expressed :—

Mientras yo **escribía** (estaba escribiendo), él **leía** (estaba leyendo). While I was writing, he was reading.

Amenazaba lluvia, y **llevaba** un *paraguas*. It threatened rain, and he was carrying an umbrella.

d. In descriptive narrative : —

Ya era noche, y la oscuridad, con cada momento, fbase poniendo más profunda. Cuanto más buscábamos, más nos perdíamos.	It was already night, and the darkness, with each moment, was getting more profound. The more we tried to find our way, the more bewildered we became.
---	---

e. When the action took place at a time specified in the sentence : —

Se hizo á la vela y al día siguiente arribaba á Cádiz.	He set sail and on the following day he arrived at Cadiz.
Había gigantes en la tierra en aquellos días.	There were giants on the earth in those days.
Estaba muy bien el verano pasado.	He was very well last summer.

f. To indicate what was possible in the past : —

Ayer se fiaba de mi firma. Yo tomaba un pedacito de papel, escribía en él mi nombre, y valía cien mil pesos.	Yesterday people had faith in my signature. I could take a scrap of paper, write my name on it, and it was worth a hundred thousand dollars.
---	---

g. With the force of the pluperfect : —

Ya había tres años que vivía en Sevilla.	It had already been three years that I had been living in Seville.
Tenían defensores, pero eran todos muertos.	They had had defenders, but they were all dead.

h. As a substitute for the conditional : —

Si yo anduviera en vapor, no llegaba antes de la noche.	If I went by steamer, I should not arrive before night.
Á no ser por el temporal, mañana se concluía la obra.	But for the storm, the work would be finished to-morrow.

i. Note also:—

Ha comprado lo que quería comprar.	He has bought what he wished to buy.
Ni por sueño, decía mi primo.	Not by any means, said my cousin.
Como decíamos ayer.	As we were saying yesterday.
Sócrates era filósofo griego.	Socrates was a Greek philosopher.
Castelar era elocuentísimo.	Castelar was very eloquent.
No faltaba más.	That capped the climax.

REMARK.—The examples given will suffice to show fairly well the varied uses of the imperfect. The student should bear in mind that it is a past tense which always implies some idea of extension or incompleteness in time, hence expresses *habit, state or condition, repetition, duration* not fixed by any specified limits, and the like.

THE PRETERIT

303. The **preterit** states what took place at some point or period of past time separated from the present. The interval may be a minute or centuries and must always be expressed or implied. When repetition or duration is mentioned, the limits must be specified:—

¿Cuándo llegó ? Llegó hoy, esta mañana, hace algunos minutos.	When did he arrive? He arrived to-day, this morning, a few minutes ago.
Vino á este país hace diez años.	He came to this country ten years ago.
Ya se acabó mi juvenil locura.	My youthful folly is already over.
Dios creó los cielos y la tierra.	God created the heavens and the earth.
Cuando estuvo en Madrid, iba á menudo al teatro.	When he was in Madrid, he went often to the theater.

Lo **hice** no sólo una vez sino cien veces. I did it not only once but a hundred times.

Vivió en Europa veinte años. He lived in Europe twenty years.

REMARK. — In place of the preterit, some writers of the present day, in imitation of the older writers, use the first form of the imperfect subjunctive (which was the old pluperfect) :—

El impostor quiere pasar por libertador de aquél á quien **asesinara**. Alarcón. The impostor wishes to pass himself off as the liberator of him whom he assassinated.

No **ambicionara** Luzbel á estar más lejos de Dios. Lucifer never desired to be farther from God.

THE PERFECT

304. The perfect has but three well-recognized uses :—

1st. To express what has occurred in the past without reference to any special point or period of time :—

¿**Ha leído** V. los poemas de Bécquer? Have you read the poems of Bécquer?

Sí, los **léí** muchos años há. Yes, I read them many years ago.

2d. Where the action of the verb, having begun in the past, comes up to and continues in the present :—

Hemos vivido en esta casa quince años. We have lived in this house fifteen years. (We are still living here.)

3d. Where an action is begun and finished in a period of time still present :—

Ella **ha escrito** muchas cartas hoy. She has written many letters to-day.

Este invierno **ha habido** mucha lluvia y nieve. This winter there has been much rain and snow.

NOTE. — In the newspapers and writers of their style, the **perfect** is frequently used for the **preterit**, especially in periods of time not very remote from the present. It is a construction not recognized by the Spanish Academy: —

El señor Silvela ha contestado ayer mañana á aquella asociación.	Mr. Silvela replied yesterday morning to that association.
El entierro se verificó el día 31. El cadáver ha sido conducido en una carroza tirada por ocho caballos.	The burial took place on the 31st. The corpse was carried in a coach drawn by eight horses.

THE PLUPERFECT

305. The **pluperfect** expresses the action of the verb —

a. As having been completed in the past before some point of time expressed or implied, or before some other action usually represented by the preterit: —

Me dijo que ya lo había hecho .	He told me that he had already done it.
Habían atacado la ciudad antes de la puesta del sol.	They had attacked the city before sunset.
Había acabado su tarea cuando yo llegué.	He had finished his task when I arrived.

b. As having customarily taken place before some other action expressed by the imperfect or preterit: —

Luego que habíamos dado nuestras lecciones, íbamos á pasear.	After we had recited our lessons, we used to go walking.
No bien había vuelto á casa que alguien venía á verle.	No sooner had he returned home than some one used to come to see him.
Yo no había esperado largo rato cuando pasó el tren.	I had not been waiting a long while, when the train passed.

REMARK. — The first form of the imperfect subjunctive (etymologically the Latin pluperfect) is not infrequently used with the force of the pluperfect : —

Y se llevó lo que al entrar **dejara** And he carried away what on
sobre la mesa. Alarcón. entering he had left on the
table.

PAST ANTERIOR

306. The **past anterior** is another form of the pluperfect and expresses the action as completed immediately before some other past action always expressed by the preterit. The past anterior is always preceded by some time word such as : —

apenas, <i>hardly</i> .	no bien, <i>no sooner</i> .	
cuando, <i>when</i> .	en cuanto á,	
después que, } <i>after</i> .	así que,	} <i>as soon as</i> .
luego que,	tan pronto como,	

Apenas hubo comido su cena	Scarcely had he eaten his supper
cuando murió.	when he died.
Así que hubo tomado la palabra,	As soon as he had taken the floor
reinó un silencio profundo.	(word), a profound silence reigned.

FUTURE

307. The **future**, besides expressing future time, has certain idiomatic uses : —

¿Qué hará él ahora?	What can he be doing now?
¿Qué horas serán ?	About what time can it be?
No habrá hombre más arrogante.	There can not be a more ar- rogant man.
Ella tendrá unos quince años.	She is some fifteen years old, I should think.

FUTURE PERFECT

308. The **future perfect** implies, by its name, that the action will be finished in the future before some point of time or some other action :—

Habrá acabado su tarea antes de cansarse.	He will have finished his task before getting tired.
Habrá salido del puerto á las ocho.	She will have gone out of the port at eight o'clock.
Lo habremos hecho cuando llegue el tren.	We shall have done it when the train arrives.

a. Idiomatically as in **307** :—

¿Quién lo habrá hecho ?	Who can have done it?
Ya habrá acabado su tarea.	He must surely have finished his task by this time.

CONDITIONAL

309. The **conditional** is used —

a. To express a future regarded from the standpoint of the past :—

Me dijo que vendría esta mañana.	He told me he would come this morning.
---	--

b. To express a conclusion dependent on a condition stated or implied :—

Si estuviera (<i>or</i> estuviese) V. malo, no podría venir.	If you were sick, you would not be able to come.
Por eso no lo haría yo.	For that (reason) I would not do it.

c. Idiomatically after the manner of the future:—

Sería á eso de las cuatro.	It must have been about four o'clock.
Que sería hermosa sin duda.	Who was pretty, of course.
Tendría unos veinte años.	She must have been some twenty years old.

CONDITIONAL PERFECT

310. The **conditional perfect** bears very nearly the same relation to the *conditional* as the *future perfect* does to the *future* (307-8):—

a.

Me aseguré que habría acabado su tarea antes del verano.	He assured me that he would have finished his task before summer.
---	---

b.

Si yo hubiera (hubiese) estado malo, no habría podido venir.	If I had been sick, I should not have been able to come.
Por eso no lo habría hecho .	For that (reason) I would not have done it.

c.

Algún enemigo le habría acechado .	Some enemy must have waylaid him.
---	-----------------------------------

IMPERATIVE MOOD

311. The **imperative** and **subjunctive** overlap each other in some respects, both as to form and use. Whether the forms of the latter be regarded as imperative or subjunctive, it matters not, since their force is imperative:—

Ama á tus padres.	Love thy parents.
Vaya usted con Dios.	God be with you.
Que no entre aquí.	Let him not come in here.

Loado sea Dios.	God be praised.
Él te bendiga como yo te bendigo.	May he bless you as I bless you.
Sobre mí caiga la ley.	Let the law fall upon me.
Vivamos como es debido.	Let us live as is fitting.
Haced lo que queráis.	Do whatever you will.
Tengan VV. la bondad de escucharne.	Have the goodness to listen to me.
Pídanse catálogos.	Let catalogues be asked for (ask for catalogues).
¡ Plegue á Dios que llegue sano y salvo !	God grant that he may arrive safe and sound.

a. When the second persons singular and plural are negatived, the corresponding forms of the subjunctive are used:—

No vayas más adelante.	Don't go any further.
No temáis que yo lo impida.	Have no fear that I will hinder it.

THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE

312. The principles underlying the use of the **subjunctive** are those of *uncertainty, doubt, expectation, requirement, and mental or moral emotions*. It appears mostly in dependent clauses and is usually introduced by some conjunction, generally **que**. The character of the principal clause usually decides whether the verb of the dependent clause will be indicative or subjunctive, but sometimes the determining factor may be in the dependent clause itself. In both *indicative* and *subjunctive* constructions, the infinitive in the one language will often translate the personal verb of the dependent clause of the other; but practice only will teach when this can be done. A thorough treatment of the subjunctive would require a volume. What is here *given* is intended merely as a general guide to the student.

THE PRESENT

313. The **subjunctive** occurs, then, after words expressing —

a. Command, request, demand, etc. :—

Mando que se traiga el preso.	I order the prisoner to be brought in.
Dígale que venga en seguida.	Tell him to come at once.
Ruega (suplica) que yo me vaya .	He entreats me to go away.
Le pido á V. que lo haga .	I beg you to do it.
Exigimos que se le trate con justicia.	We demand that he be treated justly.

b. Permission, approval, disposition, preference :—

Permítame V. le diga que no es verdad.	Allow me to tell you it is not true.
Aprueba que yo pase la noche aquí.	He approves of my passing the night here.
Dispondrá que todos sean convidados.	He will arrange it so that all will be invited.
Prefiere que partamos esta tarde.	He prefers that we start this afternoon.

Note, in the first example, the omission of *que* before **diga** (see 267, d).

c. Wish, joy, regret, grief, surprise, hope, fear, etc. :—

Quiero (deseo) que no consienta en ello.	I wish (desire) him not to consent to it.
Me alegro que nos marchemos mañana.	I rejoice that we shall go away to-morrow.
Sentimos que V. no pueda venir.	We are sorry that you can not come.
Se pone triste de que me ausente .	He grieves because I absent myself.

Extraño que sea ofendido.	I am surprised that he is offended.
Espero con ansia que resulte bien.	I anxiously hope that it will turn out well.
Tememos que llueva antes de la caída de la noche.	We fear that it will rain before nightfall.

d. Doubt, denial, and after questions :—

Dudo que nieve esta noche.	I doubt whether it will snow to-night.
No creemos que sea posible.	We do not believe it is possible.
¿Piensa V. que tengamos bastante dinero?	Do you think we have enough money?

e. After impersonal verbs and most impersonal expressions, but not after such as imply certainty :—

Es necesario (preciso, menester) que esperemos dos horas.	It is necessary that we wait two hours.
Es lástima que no pueda venir.	It is a pity he can not come.
Es bueno (bien) que lo hagamos .	It is right that we do it.
Es justo (injusto) que lo pague- mos .	It is just (not just) that we should pay it.
Es tiempo que nos levantemos .	It is time that we get up.
Es posible que no lo sepa .	It is possible that he may not know it.
Conviene que lo olvidemos .	It is proper that we forget it.
Basta que no lo niegue .	It is enough that he does not deny it.
Es de desear que se quede aquí.	It is desirable that he remain here.
Importa mucho que lleguemos á tiempo.	It is very important that we arrive in time.
<i>Puede (ser) que no sea</i> así.	It may be that it is not so.

314. *Que* is sometimes used with the subjunctive to express an alternative, the use of the subjunctive being determined by the thought rather than by the principal clause : —

No lo hago, que le **guste** ó no. I shall not do it, whether he like it or not.

Que se **vaya** ó se **quede**, todo es uno. Whether he goes or stays, it is all one.

315. The subjunctive is used after relative pronouns —

a. When the antecedent clause involves an idea of *doubt*, *negation*, *uncertainty* : —

Dudo que haya hombre que le **iguale**. I doubt whether there is a man who equals him.

No hay mal que por bien no **venga**. There is no evil which may not come for good (It is an ill wind, etc.).

¿Se puede encontrar mujer que **sea** más encantadora? Is it possible to find a woman who is more enchanting?

¿Quién habrá que no **recuerde** aquel día? Who can there be who does not remember that day?

b. When *uncertainty*, *doubt*, *contingency*, are implied in the relative clause : —

Busco un criado que no se **emborrache**. I seek a servant who will not get drunk.

Pese á quien **pese**, no puedo volver atrás. Grieve whom it may grieve, I can not turn back.

Vaya V. á un retiro donde **esté** tranquilo. Go into a retreat where you will be quiet.

El día en que esa ley se **quebrante** se derrumbará el coloso. The day on which that law is broken, the colossus will fall.

De quienquiera que V. **hable**, no le calumníe. Of whomsoever you speak, don't slander him.

316. Turn to **268.** It will be seen that the words in **boldface** type express *purpose, proviso, denial, supposition, exception, concession*, etc. The subjunctive, therefore, will be used after these conjunctions and a few others, whenever the thought of the subordinate clause implies *contingency* or *uncertainty* of some kind, or where there is an idea of *causation* in the principal clause:—

Á fin de que no tenga que que- jarse.	In order that he may have no reason to complain.
Á menos que no llueva hoy, iré al campo.	Unless it rains to-day, I shall go to the country.
Yo estaré de vuelta antes que llegue .	I shall be back before he arrives.
Con tal que lo acabe hoy.	Provided he finishes it to-day.
Cuando venga , dígame lo que he dicho.	When he comes, tell him what I have said.
Dado que no lo admita , ¿que haremos?	In case he does not admit it, what shall we do?
Estudiaré hasta que sepa la lec- ción.	I shall study until I know the lesson.
No será mientras yo viva .	It will not be while I live.
Me esconderé para que no me importunen .	I shall hide in order that they may not importune me.
Por rico que sea , no está con- tento.	Rich as he is, he is not con- tented.
Lo hará sin que nadie le ayude .	He will do it without any one helping him.

Note also:—

Acaso no sepa que estamos aquí.	Perhaps he may not know we are here.
Quizás no oiga lo que V. dice.	Perhaps he may not hear what you say.
¡Ojalá que él viva un día más!	Oh that he may live a day longer!

THE FUTURE AND FUTURE PERFECT

317. The **future** and **future perfect subjunctive** occur only in clauses expressing future contingency, and their use is determined only by the thought of their own clauses, which are introduced by a conjunction or a relative:—

Sea cual fuere el valor de usted,	Be whatever may be your valor,
él tiene más.	he has more.
Viva V. si pudiere , y muera, si no	Live, if you can, and die, if you
pudiere más.	can do no better (more).
Mande V. lo que gustare .	Command whatever you please.
Aunque lo hubiere hecho , no le	Even though he shall have done
ayudará.	it, it will not help him.

NOTE.—It should be observed that the above tenses are now little used, as, in most instances, their places may be taken by the present or perfect subjunctive:—

Mientras yo viere <i>or</i> viva .	While I (shall) live.
Cuando hubiere <i>or</i> haya venido .	When he shall have come.

OTHER TENSES

318. The rules given for the use of the **present** subjunctive apply equally to the **imperfect**, **perfect**, and **pluperfect**. Hence, examples need not be given.

a. The **sequence of tenses** is about the same in Spanish as in English, the thought to be expressed determining in each case what tense shall follow any other.

CONDITIONAL SENTENCES

319. Conditional clauses are of two kinds: 1st, those which, in the mind of the speaker, are assumed as realized; 2d, those which are conceived as contingent or uncertain. The former require the indicative, the latter the subjunctive:—

Si viene á verme, vamos <i>or</i> iremos á caza.	If he comes to see me, we go <i>or</i> shall go hunting.
Si venía á verme, íbamos al campo.	If he came to see me, we used to go to the country.
Si vino á verme aquel día, no lo supe.	If he came to see me that day, I did not know it.
Si había venido á mi casa, fué porque quería verme.	If he had come to my house, it was because he wished to see me.

Si viniere á verme hoy, iremos de caza.	If he shall come to see me to-day, we shall go hunting.
Si viniera <i>or</i> viniese á verme, iríamos <i>or</i> fuéramos al teatro.	If he should come to see me, we should go to the theater.
Si hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese venido á verme, habríamos <i>or</i> hubiéramos ido á pasear.	If he had come to see me, we should have gone to take a walk.

a. The last two examples show that the **first** and **second** forms of the subjunctive (**imperfect** and **pluperfect**) are interchangeable in the protasis, and the **conditional** and **first form** in the apodosis.

Note also that neither the **present** nor **perfect** subjunctive can be used after **si**, *if*.

EXCLAMATORY SENTENCES

320. The subjunctive occurs in exclamations with the force of an optative:—

¡ Si sólo viniese una vez !	If he would but come once !
¡ Pluguiera á Dios que no saliese así !	Would to God it did not turn out thus !
¡ Quién supiera escribir !	I wish I knew how to write !
¡ Quisiera el cielo que así fuese !	Heaven grant that it were so !

THE INFINITIVE

321. The Spanish **infinitive** is the equivalent of the English infinitive, the present participle and the verbal noun in *-ing*. In the latter sense it is usually preceded by *el*:—

Comer demasiado es peligroso.	To eat too much is dangerous.
En tomar y dar es fácil errar .	In taking and giving it is easy to err.
La vista se deleita con el variar de las nubes.	The sight is delighted by the changing of the clouds.
El leer buenos libros es provechoso.	The reading of good books is profitable.
El dulce cantar de las aves.	The sweet singing of the birds.
El amar una madre á sus hijos es natural.	A mother's loving her children is natural.

322. The Spanish uses the infinitive after the prepositions which, in English, take the present participle:—

Comió antes de salir .	He dined before going out.
Habló sin saber lo que decía.	He spoke without knowing what he was saying.
Después de escribir la carta.	After writing the letter.
Empezó por confesar la verdad.	He began by confessing the truth.
No tardaré en poner por obra esa idea.	I shall not delay in putting into execution that idea.
Preguntaré hasta saberlo .	I shall ask until I know it.
Á pesar de decírselo yo, el rey.	In spite of me, the king, telling him so.
<i>Las Novedades</i> se complace en hacer pública tan halagüeña noticia.	<i>The News</i> takes pleasure in making public such a flattering piece of news.

323. Other uses of the infinitive are —*a.* In general questions :—

¿Como pintar mi deleite al ver	How describe my delight at see-
tan linda criatura?	ing such a pretty creature?

b. In questions expressing surprise, indignation, etc. :—

¿Él aceptar tal oferta? ¡ Jamás !	He accept such an offer?
	Never !

c. With *á* and the article in temporal clauses :—

Al entrar en la calle se detuvo.	When entering the street he
	stopped.

Al ponerse el sol, desapareció.	At the setting of the sun it dis-
	appeared.

d. With *á* and *de* to form conditional clauses :—

Á saber yo el delito, no le hu-	If I had known the crime, I
biera perdonado.	should not have pardoned
	him.

De haberlo hecho él, habría abu-	If he had done it, he would
sado de la hospitalidad de su	have committed an offense
amigo.	against the hospitality of his
	friend.

e. As a general or impersonal imperative :—

¡ Obedecer ! ¡ No alborotar !	Obey ! Don't raise a disturb-
	ance !

Con que, no faltar .	Therefore, don't fail.
-----------------------------	------------------------

Dirigirse por escrito á X. Y.	Address in writing X. Y.
--------------------------------------	--------------------------

324. The use or omission of the preposition, which is the equivalent of the *to* of the English infinitive, is not easy to fix by rules, but some help may be given. It is determined somewhat by the inherent nature of the *noun*, *adjective*, or *verb* on which the Spanish infinitive depends. *The subject may be treated under the following headings :—*

a. De is used before a dependent infinitive —

1. After most nouns and a few adjectives : —

Tengo ganas de ir á patinar.	I have a desire to go skating.
Tenga V. la bondad de escucharme.	Have the goodness to listen to me.
Tiene intención de casarse.	He intends to get married.
Yo no soy capaz de hacerlo.	I am not capable of doing it.
Seguro de llevarse el primer premio.	Sure of carrying off the first prize.
Temeroso de salir engañado.	Afraid of being deceived.

*2. When an infinitive, depending on an adjective or the verb *to be* (ser), may logically be turned into a passive : —*

Reviste una importancia difícil de exagerar.	It assumes an importance difficult to be exaggerated.
Nada es más fácil de remediar.	Nothing is more easy to be remedied.
Una declaración imposible de comprender.	A declaration impossible to be understood.
Eran de ver los saraos que había entonces en los palacios.	The entertainments which were then given in the palaces were worth being seen.
No es de extrañar que sea así.	It is not to be wondered at that it is so.
Es de esperar que no vendrá.	It is to be hoped that he will not come.

b. After a few nouns and adjectives á is used : —

Desde largo tiempo era su ambición á venir á Nueva York.	For a long time his ambition had been to come to New York.
Hasta que se establece su derecho á desembarcar.	Until his right to land is established.
Se hallaba próxima á desfallecer.	She was ready to faint.

c. An infinitive usually takes **no preposition** when it depends on a noun or adjective standing in a predicate relation :—

Gran parte es de la fortuna venir un hombre en una edad ú otra.	It is largely a matter of chance whether a man is born in one age or another.
Cosa es clara y conocida ser la historia luz de la verdad.	It is a clear and well-known fact that history is the light of truth.
Mejor fuera no hablar de ello.	It would be better not to speak of it.
Acaso no sea posible volver á verle.	Perhaps it is not possible that we shall see him again.
Yo creo de mi deber aprovechar esta ocasión.	I think it is my duty to take ad- vantage of this occasion.
Creemos del caso dar opinión sobre lo que en otra sección tomamos del <i>Herald</i> .	We think it is pertinent to give our opinion on what we have elsewhere copied from the <i>Herald</i> .
La visita que tuvieron VV. á bien hacerme.	The visit which you were kind enough to make me.

325. An infinitive depending on a verb takes either **de**, **á**, or **no preposition**. Except after verbs of motion, when **á** is used, **por** or **para** will appear as the equivalent of the English *to*, meaning *in order to*. A list of the more common verbs of the first three categories is here given. Verbs marked with a star (*) are irregular.

Those followed by **de** are :—

abstenerse,* <i>abstain</i> .	cesar, <i>cease, stop</i> .
acordarse,* <i>remember</i> .	dejar, <i>fail, leave off</i> .
afligirse, <i>lament</i> .	desesperarse, <i>despair</i> .
alegrarse, <i>be glad</i> .	desistir, <i>desist</i> .
arrepentirse,* <i>repent</i> .	disuadir, <i>dissuade</i> .

dispensar, *excuse.*

jurar, *swear.*

lisonjearse, *flatter oneself.*

ocuparse, *busy oneself.*

olvidarse, *forget.*

temblar, * *fear.*

tratar, *try.*

326. Verbs requiring á usually have an inherent meaning of motion or tendency towards. Such are:—

acertar, * *happen, succeed.*

alcanzar, *succeed, reach.*

aprender, *learn, teach.*

aspirar, *aspire.*

atreverse, *venture, dare.*

comenzar, * *begin.*

condenar, *condemn.*

convidar, *invite.*

dar, * *give.*

decidirse, *decide.*

detenerse, * *stop, desist.*

disponerse, * *get ready.*

echar, *begin.*

empezar, * *begin.*

enseñar, *teach.*

esforzarse, * *endeavor.*

enviar, *send.*

forzar, * *force, compel.*

habituarse, *accustom.*

inducir, * *induce.*

invitar, *invite.*

ir, * *go.*

negarse, * *refuse.*

obligar, *oblige.*

pasar, *pass.*

ponerse, * *begin.*

prepararse, *get ready.*

principiar, *begin.*

resignarse, *resign oneself.*

resistirse, *resist.*

salir, * *go out.*

venir, * *come.*

volver, * *return (227).*

327. Finally, certain verbs govern the infinitive directly without a connecting preposition. The more common of these are:—

aconsejar, *advise.*

acostumbrar, *be accustomed.*

bastar, *suffice.*

celebrar, *be glad.*

conviene, * *it is proper.*

deber, *ought, must, be.*

declarar, *declare.*

decir, * *say.*

dejar, *let, allow.*

desear, *wish.*

determinar, *determine.*

dignarse, *condescend.*

esperar, *hope, expect.*

gustar, *please, like.*

hacer,* <i>make, do, cause.</i>	preferir,* <i>prefer.</i>
impedir,* <i>prevent.</i>	pretender, <i>claim, try.</i>
intentar, <i>attempt.</i>	procurar, <i>try.</i>
lograr, <i>succeed.</i>	prohibir, <i>forbid.</i>
mandar, <i>order.</i>	prometer, <i>promise.</i>
más vale,* <i>it is better.</i>	querer,* <i>wish, be willing.</i>
merecer, <i>deserve, merit.</i>	resolver,* <i>resolve.</i>
necesitar, <i>need, want.</i>	saber, <i>know how, can.</i>
ofrecer, <i>offer.</i>	sentir,* <i>regret.</i>
osar, <i>dare, venture.</i>	servirse,* <i>please, help oneself.</i>
parecer, <i>seem, appear.</i>	soler,* <i>be accustomed.</i>
pensar,* <i>think, intend.</i>	temer, <i>fear.</i>
poder,* <i>be able, can.</i>	

a. Verbs indicating the functions of *sight* and *hearing* take preferably the infinitive without a preposition but may take the gerund:—

Le oigo hablar <i>or</i> hablando con mi amigo.	I hear him talk <i>or</i> talking with my friend.
Le veo dibujar <i>or</i> dibujando.	I see him sketch <i>or</i> sketching.

b. For *para* before an infinitive, see 247, *a* and *b*, and for *por* see 246, *e*.

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE

328. The present participle as such has now but few forms in use. Such other forms as exist are used as nouns or adjectives. The following and a few others (all from intransitive verbs) occur with an undoubted participial force:—

consistente, <i>consisting.</i>	pendiente, <i>pending, hanging.</i>
dependiente, <i>depending.</i>	perteneciente, <i>belonging.</i>
existente, <i>existing.</i>	procedente, <i>proceeding, coming.</i>
obediente, <i>obeying.</i>	referente, <i>referring.</i>

Examples:—

Una carga consistente en minerales, cueros, y café.	A cargo consisting of minerals, leather, and coffee.
Efectos pertenecientes á la Cruz Roja.	Effects belonging to the Red Cross.
Una cruz de brillantes pendiente de su cuello.	A cross of brilliants hanging from her neck.

THE GERUND

329. The present participle being no longer in general use as such, its functions are discharged by the **gerund**, which has but one form, and differs but little, in its use, from our present participle. We need only to note the principal differences, which are —

a. To indicate a *completed action*:—

Llegando mi amigo, partimos á cazar.	My friend having arrived, we started out hunting.
---	---

b. To express *cause, manner, means, time*:—

Gana su pan cotidiano vendiendo periódicos.	He earns his daily bread by selling newspapers.
Los males vienen corriendo .	Misfortunes come rapidly.
Ella se salió con la suya lisonjeándole .	She carried her point by flattering him.
Murió siendo muy joven.	He died when he was very young.
No quería avanzar, estando ausente el general.	He did not wish to advance while the general was absent.

c. Absolutely in place of a finite verb:—

Les consulté si creían que podía continuar el combate, contestando que no.	I consulted them as to whether they thought I could continue the fight, and they answered no.
---	---

d. The gerund occurs with **en** to express an action completed before that of the personal verb; but as the same idea can be rendered without *en*, this preposition is rarely used:—

¿Qué no hará (en) **llegando** á What will he not do after be-
ser tu marido? coming your husband?

e. The compound forms are of quite frequent use, but as they are constructed in the same way as the simple, a single example will suffice:—

El senador habiendo concluido The senator having concluded
su discurso se sentó. his speech sat down.

NOTE.—For the use of the gerund with *estar* and verbs of motion, see 140 and 140, *a.*

THE PAST PARTICIPLE

330. The **past participle** used as such or as an adjective varies for gender and number:—

El proyecto de ley **votado** por el The bill having been passed by
Senado fué rechazado por la the Senate was rejected by
Cámara. the House.
Su hija **amada** murió. His beloved daughter died.

See also 138, 4, and 145, *d.*

331. Special cases of its use are—

a. In absolute constructions:—

Pasado el momento de peligro, The moment of danger having
renovamos nuestros esfuerzos. passed, we renewed our efforts.

b. After después de, antes de, luego de:—

Después de **acabada** la tarea, After having finished the task
fuimos á casa. we went home.

Antes de **concluido** su discurso Before having concluded his
se desmayó. speech, he fainted.

Luego de **contádomelo** no quiso As soon as he had related it to
hablar más. me, he would not speak any
more.

c. After para and por:—

No es una proposición para It is not a proposition to be
rechazada. rejected.

Entonces se dió por **vencido.** Then he gave up as conquered.

XI

FORMS OF ADDRESS (TRATAMIENTOS)

332.

- a. Señor García, Mr. Garcia.
Señor Carlos García, Mr. Charles Garcia.
Señor Don C. García, Mr. Charles Garcia.
Don Carlos (no equivalent in English).
- b. Señora García, Mrs. Garcia.
Señora Josefa García, Mrs. Josephine Garcia.
Señora Doña J. García, Mrs. Josephine Garcia.
Doña Josefa (no English equivalent).
- c. Señorita García, Miss Garcia.
Señorita María García, Miss Mary Garcia.
Señorita María, Miss Mary.

d. The above are the forms of address when speaking *to* people. When speaking *about* them, *señor*, *señora*, and *señorita* must be preceded by the definitive article: —

El señor, la señora y la señorita Mr., Mrs., and Miss Garcia.
García.

e. *Caballero* and *señor* are our *sir*, the latter (*señor*) being a little more distant and formal and consequently always used in addressing deliberative bodies. For instance, in the *Cortes*, a speaker would address his auditors as *señores*; but, if speaking to an audience of ladies and gentlemen, he would say: *Señoras, señoritas y caballeros*. After *sí*, yes, and *no*, *no*, *señor* is always used: *Sí, señor; no, señor*.

f. *Señor* is used before all titles in formal address :—

Buenos días, señor capitán.

Good morning, Captain.

¿ Está el señor profesor?

Is the professor at home?

g. *El señor y la señora* (or *los señores*) are used by servants in speaking of the master and mistress of the house.

h. In speaking of a person's relatives, politeness requires us to say: *su* (your) *señor padre*, *su señora madre*, *su señorita hermana*, etc., instead of *su padre*, etc.

i. When talking to a man of his wife, we say *su* (your) *señora*; while he will mention her as *mi señora* or *mi esposa*, or less formally, *mi mujer*.

j. *Don* and *doña* are only used before baptismal names, which are the common forms of address, where we use Mr., Mrs., etc., with the family name.

As in English, men are also addressed familiarly by their family names.

k. *Señorito* is used by servants in their intercourse with their masters who are young men. It is also quite generally used by the lower orders in addressing men who are not their masters.

l. Spanish family names consist of two parts connected by *y*. The first is the name of the father, the second, that of the mother: *Pascual Cervera y Topete*. The second part is frequently dropped.

m. A woman, when she marries, keeps her maiden name but joins it to the family name of her husband by *de*. For instance, if Josefa Pérez marries a Mr. García, her name becomes *Josefa Pérez de García*. She is commonly known as *Señora Pérez*, or *Doña Josefa*, but not as *Señora García*.

SPANISH ABBREVIATIONS

333. The following is a list of the more common abbreviations. Where usage varies in regard to small or capital letters, the former have been given in parenthesis. When beginning a sentence any of them may be written with a capital.

- (a), alias, *alias*.
 @, arroba (= 25 lbs.; also 4 gals.), and á, *at*.
 Á., afecto, *obedient, affectionate*.
 Á. C. (año de Cristo) = *A.D.*
 á cta., á cuenta, *on account*.
 á v/a, á la vista, *at sight*.
 admón., administración.
 admor., administrador.
 af^{mo}, afectísimo, *most obedient, affectionate*.
 af^{to}, afecto, *obedient, affectionate*.
 ag^{to}, agosto, *August*.
 am^o, amigo, *friend*.
 apble., apreciable, *favor*.
 art. or arto., artículo, *article*.
 att^o, atento, *respectful*.
 B. L. M. (b. l. m.), besa la mano.
 B. L. P. (b. l. p.), besa los pies.
 brl., barril, *barrel*.
 c/, cuenta de, *account of*.
 cap. or cap^o, capítulo, *chapter*.
 capⁿ, capitán, *captain*.
 cte., corriente, *instant*.
 cg., centígramo, *centigram*.
 cla., compañía, *company*.
 cl., centilitro, *centiliter*.
 com., comisión, *commission*.
 cm., centímetro, *centimeter*.
 C. M. B. (c. m. b.), cuya mano beso.
 comp^a (cla.), compañía = *Co.*
 consig., consignación, *consignment*.
 corr^{te}, corriente, *instant*.
 C. P. B. (c. p. b.), cuyos pies beso.
 c., cuenta, *account*.
 c./c^{te}, cuenta corriente, *account current*.
 cta. d/v., cuenta de venta, *account of sales*.
 c^{to}, cuarto, *quarter, fourth*.
 cy., currency, *currency*.
 D. or Dn., Don.
 dic^o, 10^o, diciembre.
 d/v., días vista, *days sight*.
 doz., docena, *dozen*.
 dro., derecho, *duty, right*.
 dup^{do}, duplicado, *duplicate*.
 E., este, *east*.
 en^o, enero, *January*.
 feb^o, febrero, *February*.
 fha., fecha, *date*.
 fol., folio, *page, folio*.

- g., gramo, *gram*.
 gral., general.
 grs., gruesa, *gross*.
 h., hora, *hour*.
 Hl., hectolitro, *hectoliter*.
 ib., ibídem, *in the same place*.
 íd., ídem, *ditto*.
 Il^e, ilustre, *noble, honorable*.
 Il^{mo}, ilustrísimo, *most noble, etc.*
 izq^o, izquierdo, *left*.
 Kg., kilogramo, *kilogram*.
 Km., kilómetro, *kilometer*.
 lbs., libras, *pounds*.
 m., minuto, metro, *minute, meter*.
 mg., miligramo, *milligram*.
 mm., milímetro, *millimeter*.
 mrz., marzo, *March*.
 N., norte, *north*.
 N. B., nota bene, *note well*.
 n/, nuestro, *our*.
 n^o, or núm^o, *number*.
 nov^o, 9^o, noviembre, *November*.
 ntro., nuestro, *our*.
 O., oeste, *west*.
 oct^o, 8^o, octubre, *October*.
 onz., oz., onza, *ounce*.
 P., Papa, or Padre, *Pope* or *Father*.
 p^a, para, *for*.
 pág., página, *page*.
 pc/o., %, por ciento, *per cent*.
 P. D., posdata, *postscript*.
 pgdro., pagadero, *payable*.
 p/cta., por cuenta, *for account*.
 p. ej., por ejemplo, *for example*.
 p^o, pero, *but*.
 p. o., por orden, *by order*.
 P. P., porte pagado, *postpaid*.
 P. P., por poder, *by power of attorney*.
 pp^{do}, próximo pasado, *ultimo*.
 p^r, por, *by, for*.
 pral., principal.
 P. S., poscriptum, *postscript*.
 pxo., proximo, *proximo, next*.
 Q. B. S. M. (q. b. s. m.), que besa sus manos.
 Q. B. S. P. (q. b. s. p.), que besa sus pies.
 Q. D. G. (q. D. g.), que Dios guarde.
 q^e, que, *that, which, who*.
 ql., quintal, *quintal (cwt.)*.
 q^a, quien, *who, whom*.
 q. e. g. e., que en gloria esté.
 q. e. p. d., que en paz descanse.
 q. s. g. h., que santa gloria haya.
 R. I. P., requiescat in pace.
 R^{bt}, recibí, (I) *received*.
 Re., rēcipe, *recipe*.
 r^l, real, "*real*" (about 10¢).
 s/, sobre, *on*.
 S. e. ú. o., salvo error ú omisión, *save errors and omissions*.
 serv^o, servicio, *service*.
 serv^{or}, servidor, *servant*.
 sept^o, set^o, 7^o, septiembre.
 sig^a, siguiente, *following*.

Sr., señor, <i>Sir, Mr.</i>	últº, último, <i>ultimo, last.</i>
spre., siempre, <i>always, ever.</i>	V. E., Vuestra Excelencia, Vue-
Sra., señora, <i>Mrs., Madam.</i>	celencia, Vucencia, <i>Your</i>
Srta., señorita, <i>Miss.</i>	<i>Grace.</i>
S. S. S., su seguro servidor, <i>your</i>	v. gr., verbigracia, <i>for example.</i>
<i>faithful servant.</i>	vol., volumen, <i>volume.</i>
testº, testigo, <i>witness.</i>	vro., vuestro, <i>your.</i>
tom. (º), tomo, <i>volume.</i>	v/ta., vista, <i>sight.</i>
tpo., tiempo, <i>time.</i>	vª, vuelta, <i>forward.</i>

EPISTOLARY FORMALITIES

334. Spanish letter-headings and forms of address differ but slightly from our own. We need only note the use of *nuestro* or *nuestros*, whenever several persons address one or more persons, as if we should say: *Our dear sir* or *our dear sirs*; and further that, in certain forms of address, the adjectives, while essential in Spanish, have no equivalents in English, and have either to be omitted in translating or rendered by our simpler forms of address. The following will suffice as examples of the common modes of address:—

a. Formal:—

Muy señor mío, <i>Dear Sir.</i>	Muy señoritas mías, <i>Dear</i>
Muy señores míos, <i>Dear Sirs.</i>	<i>Misses —.</i>
Muy señor nuestro, <i>Dear Sir.</i>	Muy señora mía, <i>Dear Madam.</i>
Muy señores nuestros, <i>Dear</i>	Muy señora nuestra, <i>Dear</i>
<i>Sirs.</i>	<i>Madam.</i>
Mi distinguido amigo, <i>Esteemed</i>	Muy estimada señora N., <i>Dear</i>
<i>friend.</i>	<i>Mrs. N.</i>
Muy señorita mía, <i>Dear Miss —.</i>	
Muy distinguido señor mío, <i>Dear Sir.</i>	
Muy señora mía y de mi mayor consideración, <i>Dear Madam.</i>	
Reverendo Padre <i>or</i> Respetable señor. (To a priest or clergy-	
<i>man.)</i>	

b. Less formal:—

Muy Sr. mío y distinguido amigo, *Dear Sir and (distinguished) friend.*

Muy señor mío y amigo, *Dear Sir and friend.*

c. Informal:—

Apreciables amigos míos, *My dear friends.*

Querido amigo nuestro, *Dear friend.*

Muy estimados amigos nuestros, *Esteemed friends.*

Mi respetable amigo, *My dear friend.*

Estimado amigo mío, *My esteemed friend.*

Mi bueno y querido amigo, *My (good and) dear friend.*

d. Familiar:—

Mi querido Juan, *My dear John.*

Amigo José, *Friend Joe.*

Queridísima Anita, *My dearest Anita.*

Mi más querido amigo, *My dearest friend.*

NOTE.—The above are the usual forms, but there may be others, depending on the will and temperament of the writer.

335. Letters may begin in one of many ways, but the following may be taken as specimens in formal and informal correspondence. For abbreviations see **333**:—

Aunque no tengo el honor de conocer á V., me tomo la libertad de dirigirle estas líneas para . . .

Ya es tiempo que coja la pluma para dedicar un rato á mis buenos amigos . . .

Adjunto remito á V. una libranza de 30 pesetas en pago de . . .

Llegó á esta su deseada en época que yo me encontraba en Madrid . . .

Refiriéndome á su favorecida del 25 del pp^{do}, tengo el honor de contestar que . . .

Tengo el gusto de acusar recibo de su atenta fechada el 10 corriente . . .

Contestando su grata fechada el 7 del actual, desearía informarle que . . .

Es en mi poder su muy atenta de ayer, y me apresuro á contestar que . . .

Acusando recibo de su favorecida fechada en 22 de octubre, me permito mandarle la cta. d/v. de . . .

336. Of the many ways of closing letters, the following will serve as specimens:—

a. Formal (more or less):—

Nos repitimos de V. con afecto S. S., Q. B. S. M.

Tenemos mucho gusto en ofrecernos S. S. S. y amigos, Q. B. S. M.

Dios guarde á V. muchos años como desea su muy atento servidor, Q. B. S. M.

Reitero á VV. mi afecto y quedo como siempre S. S. S., Q. B. S. M.

Soy (quedo) de V. su muy afecto seguro servidor, q. b. s. m.

Entre tanto queda á sus órdenes su atto. S. S., q. b. s. m.

Con tal motivo me ofrezco de V. afmo. S. S., q. b. s. m.

b. Familiar and informal:—

Salude V. á su señora y niños y sabe que es su afmo. que le quiere, LOPE DE VEGA.

Afectos de toda la familia y sabe V. es su afmo. y S. S., ESTEBAN BANCHS.

Saludo cariñosamente á V. y á todos los suyos, y quedo su am^o
y S. S.,

ENRIQUE GARCÍA.

Que le vaya bien y disponga de este su am^o y servidor,

MANUEL MENDOZA.

Sin más por hoy sabes que puedes disponer del afecto de este
tu amigo y S. S.,

DIEGO GUTIÉRREZ.

NOTE. — While the letters Q. B. S. M. are still in good use, especially in very formal communications, it is becoming more and more customary to omit them, as in the last examples and more particularly in business letters.

337. Letters are addressed as follows : —

When sent by mail,

Señor Don (*or* Sr. Dn.) E—— B——.

Señora Doña (*or* Sra. Da.) M—— O——.

Señorita A—— G—— de P——.

The direction coming immediately after, as in English.

When sent by hand,

B. L. M.	B. L. M.	B. L. M.
Al Sr. Dn. L. de Q——.	Á Don R——.	Al Sr. M——.
S. S. S.	S. S. S.	S. S. S.
Enrique Pérez.	D. de Manjón.	Benito Bazán.

B. L. P.	B. L. P.
Á mi Sra. Da. J—— P——.	Á la Sra. Da. J—— P——.
S. A. S. S.	S. A. S. S.
Rodríguez Guevara.	Emilio Castelar.

B. L. P.
Á la Sra. A—— S——.
S. A. S. S.
Ramón Rey.

XII

EXERCISES

REMARKS.—The grammar references and Spanish exercises should be thoroughly learned before an attempt is made to write the English exercises, as many words, expressions, and explanations are there given which could not be so clearly stated in the vocabulary, and hence are not therein repeated, unless they occur in other exercises, in which case they are again properly provided for.

In the English exercises, translate all words in parentheses (), and leave out all those in brackets [].

The small figures to the right of several English words indicate the order in which their Spanish equivalents are to be placed.

The figures in heavy type in parentheses refer to sections of the grammar, and should always be looked up before the sentences are translated.

Words connected by a dash (—) will be found in the vocabulary under the first word.

1

338. Learn **136** and **142** to imperfect tense, and read **135–135, c.** Learn also **11–15, e.**

1. La tierra gira alrededor del sol en un año. El año tiene doce (12) meses y cuatro (4) estaciones. 2. Los meses son : enero, febrero, marzo, abril, mayo, junio, julio, agosto, se(p)tiembre, octubre, noviembre y diciembre. 3. Las estaciones son : la primavera, el verano ó estío, el otoño y el invierno. 4. Un mes tiene cuatro semanas ; una semana tiene siete (7) días, que son : *lunes, martes, miércoles, jueves, viernes, sábado y domingo.*

5. Día significa un espacio de veinticuatro (24) horas, y también el tiempo entre la salida y la puesta del sol. 6. Cuando el sol se pone, comienza (comenzar) la noche, y el sol parece pasar por debajo de la tierra. 7. La cortesía es la flor de la humanidad.

8. The sun seems [to] revolve around the earth. 9. There are (137, b, 3) twelve (38) months in a year and three months in a season. 10. An hour has sixty (38) minutes, and a minute, sixty seconds. 11. (The) Monday is the first (25) day of the week, (the) Tuesday is the second (38), (the) Wednesday is the third, (the) Thursday is the fourth, (the) Friday is the fifth, (the) Saturday is the sixth, and (the) Sunday is the seventh or last. 12. [On] (the) Sunday the good (25) Christian goes to (the) church and prays; the other six days he works. 13. But [he does] not work all the time, for [he] is² not¹ a machine, and has to (138, 3) rest when [he] is (139) very tired.

2

339. Study 16-19, *d*, and review 14-15 and 136 and 142.

1. Podemos (209) hacer tres divisiones del cuerpo humano: la cabeza, el tronco y las extremidades. 2. Las dos (2) primeras (38) son las más importantes, porque sin ellas (44) no podemos vivir. 3. El cabello (= el pelo) cubre la cabeza que tiene una forma redonda. 4. La cara (el rostro) forma la parte anterior de la cabeza. 5. La frente es la parte superior de la cara, y la barba es la parte inferior. 6. Debajo de la frente tenemos los ojos con los cuales (90) miramos y vemos (205) si no somos ciegos. 7. En medio de la cara (del rostro) está (139) la nariz que es el órgano del olfato. 8. Con la nariz olemos (172), olfateamos; los olores pasan por las dos ventanas de la nariz, llamadas narices (15, *a*). 9. Las mejillas son las prominencias del rostro debajo de los ojos. 10. Las dos orejas están colocadas la una á un lado de la cabeza, y la otra al otro lado. 11. Con las orejas escuchamos y oímos (194), cuando no somos sordos.

12. The mouth is (139) between the chin and the nose, and is

(está) formed (146) by the two lips. 13. When a young man arrives at the age (19, *a'*) of sixteen or eighteen years, a mustache grows (nace) on his (= the) upper² lip,¹ and then he (44) is very proud. 14. In the mouth are the teeth, the tongue, and the palate. 15. These (éstos) with the nose, the throat, and the lips, are the organs of (the) speech. 16. With the mouth (the) man and (the) woman eat, drink, speak, flatter, deceive, and slander (13, Note) their (sus) friends. 17. The tongue is the worst enemy of (the) man. 18. The five senses are the sight, the hearing, the taste, the touch, and the smell.

3

340. Review references given for Exercises 1 and 2.

1. El cuello (= pescuezo) une la cabeza al tronco. 2. Á los hombros son unidos los brazos cuya (90) extremidad forman las manos (19, *a*). 3. Los dedos, que forman la extremidad de la mano, son : el dedo pulgar, el índice, el dedo de en medio (ó del corazón), el dedo anular y el dedo meñique. 4. La parte dura en la extremidad de cada (116) dedo es la uña. 5. Con el puño (= la mano cerrada) el hombre se defiende contra su enemigo. 6. El pecho es la parte anterior y superior del tronco y encierra el corazón y los pulmones. 7. El corazón es un músculo hueco y carnoso que imprime movimiento á la sangre y la hace circular por las venas y arterias. 8. Los pulmones son los órganos de la respiración.

9. The food is masticated and swallowed and enters into (en) the stomach, where the organs of (the) digestion transform² it¹ into blood. 10. Then the blood ascends to the heart, whence (de donde) [it] passes through the veins. 11. To the lower part of the trunk are fixed the legs, which are divided by the knees. 12. The feet form the lower extremity of the legs. 13. (The) men and (the) women use the feet and (the) legs to (para) walk, run, dance, and skate. 14. A biped is an animal that has two legs, but a quadruped has four legs.

4

341. Study 20-20, *f*, and review the verbs.

1. La familia se compone (149 and 150) del padre, de la madre y de los niños. 2. Los niños son los hijos y las hijas de los padres (17, *a*). 3. El abuelo y la abuela son los padres del padre y de la madre. 4. El tío es el hermano y la tía es la hermana del padre ó de la madre. 5. El hijo de mi (63) tío es mi primo y la hija es mi prima. 6. Si mi hermano ó mi hermana se casan y tienen hijos, ellos son mis sobrinos ó sobrinas. 7. Cuando un hombre pierde su esposa (= mujer), es viudo, y una mujer que pierde su marido (= esposo) es viuda. 8. Todas (116) las personas que tienen el mismo (116) parentesco se llaman parientes. 9. Safo era (was) gran poetisa lírica de la antigua Grecia, pero nos (to us) quedan muy pocos de sus poemas.

10. The family lives in a house which is small or large according-to the requirements or the taste of the persons who occupy² it.¹ 11. The house contains various rooms which are (139) in the different stories. 12. We go-up or come-down the stairs, when [we] wish (209) [to] go from one story to another (127). 13. In the kitchen the cook prepares the food which the family eats in the dining-room. 14. Generally [we] eat three times (veces) each (116) day. 15. [We] take (the) breakfast in (por) the morning, (the) dinner at (the) noon and (the) supper at (the) nightfall. 16. When the servant sets (pone) the table, [she] covers² it¹ (la) with the table-cloth; then [she] puts a plate, a knife, a fork, a spoon, a glass and a napkin for (para) each person. 17. Next she puts the victuals on (en) the table and tells (195) (to) her mistress that (que) the meal is (139) ready.

5

342. Study 21-23, *f*, and review the verbs.

1. (22). El hombrón y la mujerona tienen un hijo quien es un mocetón y lleva zapatones. 2. (*a*). Una puñalada es la herida

que se hace (is made) con el puñal. 3. (*b*). El populacho embriagado de vinacho tira piedras contra la casucha de mi amigote. 4. (*c*). Un ventarrón acompañado de un nubarrón derriba los caserones del poblachón. 5. El enano con un narigón espantoso asusta á (13, Note) los niños. 6. El politicastro es el veneno de todo buen gobierno.

7. (23, *a*). Jennie, the little-daughter of my neighbor, has in her (*la*) little-hand (*b*) a beautiful little-flower. 8. Jack's (13) little-dog kills a little-bird. 9. Little-Lou, the little-son of the laundress, carries-on a flirtation with his little-cousin (*a*). 10. (*c*). A silly-little-girl becomes usually a dawdling-woman. 11. (*d*). The petty-king lives in a palace which is (139) on a rivulet and has small-doors and little-windows. 12. (*e*). The poor-girl, who lives in the small-town, sells to the small-boy [some] young-pigeons. 13. The water (11, *b*) of this spring is (139) full of animalcules. 14. She gives (to) the poor-fellow (23, *a*) [some] fritters with butter (*f*) and cheese. 15. [He] has³ not² yet (aun¹) come-out (salido) of-his (del) shell, and already [he] is presumptuous.

6

343. Review references for Exercise 5.

1. La familia se reúne en el comedor; la madre se sienta á la cabecera, el padre enfrente y los otros miembros á los lados de la mesa. 2. El padre pide (181) la bendición, y la comida comienza. 3. La madre derrama el café, el té ó el chocolate en tazas. 4. El padre trincha y sirve (servir) la carne, el pan y la mantequilla, y las personas del lado sirven la leche, las legumbres y otras viandas, si las (56) hay (137, *b*, 3). 5. Mientras comen, la conversación está animada y chistosa, porque saben (209) que la alegría es la mejor (32) ayuda á la digestión. 6. Después de acabada (331, *b*) la comida, todos se levantan; el papá enciende (encender) un tabaco (= puro), los niños van (214) á la escuela, y la mamá atiende á sus quehaceres domésticos.

7. The other rooms of the house are : the parlor, the hall, the library, the bathroom, the pantry and the bedrooms. 8. In the parlor we receive (13, Note) our friends, when [they] make² (197) us¹ visits. 9. In the library there are (137, b, 3) a book-stand with many books, a table, various chairs and an easy-chair. 10. The pantry is the room where the eatables² are-kept¹ (150). 11. The bedroom is where [we] sleep (177). We lie-down in the bed and sleep seven or eight hours and then rise. 12. [We] go to the washstand, pour water from (de) the pitcher into the basin and wash ourselves (150) with soap and water. 13. Then [we] wipe our (la) face and (the) hands with the towel, put-on our clothes, arrange (componer) our hair with the comb and the brush and go-down (the) stairs, where [we] read (leemos) the paper, while [we] wait for (the) breakfast.

7

344. Study 24-26 and review the verbs.

1. Las casas se construyen de madera, de piedra y de ladrillos. 2. Hay casas pequeñas y grandes, bonitas y feas, altas y bajas. 3. Nuestras casas tienen puertas y ventanas que sirven (servir) para dar aire y luz á las habitaciones. 4. El techo y las paredes nos protegen contra el calor del sol y contra los rigores del frío y de la humedad cuando llueve (158). 5. El jardín y los huertos rodean la casa y nos dan hermosas flores, buenas frutas y legumbres diversas. 6. Por las puertas entramos y salimos, y por las ventanas miramos. 7. Si un incendio se declara, vienen (202) los bomberos, vestidos de camisas rojas (24, a) y brillantes cascos negros; con la bomba (= máquina) arrojan torrentes de agua sobre las llamas y apagan el fuego.

8. In the orchard grow (crecer) fruit-trees which produce (producir) fruits of exquisite taste, as (the) pears, (the) apples, (the) peaches, (the) pineapples, (the) grapes, (the) plums, (the) cherries, (the) strawberries and others. 9. The common² flowers¹ are : the rose, the pink, the dahlia, the violet, the tulip, the lily, the camellia,

and many others, which are the ornament of our gardens. 10. The principal vegetables are : the potato, the kidney-bean, the tomato, the pea, the chick-pea, the lentil, etc. 11. In the sea, in the rivers, and in the ponds [we] catch (coger) the fish(es), which form part of our food. 12. [We] eat also the flesh of other animals, as that (la) of the ox, of the cow, of the lamb, of the hog, etc. 13. The flesh of (the) domestic² and wild³ birds¹ furnishes² us¹ a sweet and delicate food. 14. Such (tales) are : the hen, the turkey, the duck, the goose ; and the quail and the partridge which [we] hunt in the fields, woods, and mountains.

8

345. Review 24-26 and study 34-37.

1. La fiebre amarilla es indigena de los climas tropicales.
2. Los muchachos holgazanes y las muchachas holgazanas aprenden poco.
3. Los ingleses y los franceses no se aman (152) los unos á los otros.
4. Los franceses desprecian también á los (13, Note) alemanes desde la guerra franco-prusiana y dicen (say) de un hombre muy aficionado á los placeres del paladar : come como un inglés y bebe como un alemán.
5. La poesía alemana, especialmente la poesía lírica, es deliciosa ; pero la lengua francesa siendo (being) más retórica, su poesía no es tan buena.
6. Ella tiene ojos burlones y una boca chiquitina.
7. Las andaluzas son muy guapas y graciosas.
8. Las clases agrícolas son oprimidas (223) por las combinaciones comerciales é industriales.
9. My good father comes (202) by the first train.
10. The subjects of a good king are always happy.
11. No (25) man can (puede) serve equally well two masters.
12. Unfortunately none of my friends are (139) here to-day.
13. San Juan is the capital of Porto Rico, which is one of the islands of the Great[er] Antilles.
14. Lope de Vega was (fué) a great poet.
15. A great soul pardons easily an injury.
16. Any house is better (mejor) than no house.
17. Every day brings (trae) its (63) trials and its pleasures.
18. The others (25, e) remain at (en) home all (the)

day. 19. A (el) good name is worth more than much riches. 20. When a noble² sentiment¹ sways the heart, [it] inspires great actions. 21. A large house is² not¹ always a great house. 22. Nothing is more despicable than a great man who vacillates between two actions for (por) lack of courage.

9

346. Study 27-28 and review 24-25, *f*.

1. El sol es más grande que la tierra y los otros planetas, pero la luna es menos grande que la tierra. 2. Las estrellas fijas son mucho más distantes de nosotros que el sol. 3. En el invierno los días son más cortos que en el verano, pero las noches son más largas. 4. Un buen perro es mucho más fiel que un buen gato. 5. El ejercicio de hoy es más fácil que el (that) de ayer. 6. Ciertas casas de una ciudad son más altas que otras, y ciertas calles son menos anchas que otras. 7. Mi prima es más hermosa que mi hermana, pero es menos inteligente. 8. El dinero, como el fuego, es un muy buen criado pero un muy mal dueño.

9. [He] spends in a banquet every week more than (de) five hundred (38) dollars. 10. He needs more than (de) the half of the sum necessary to (para) pay the debt. 11. We [do] not need more than twenty dollars this week. 12. They are more skillful than [they] seem. 13. [He] spends more money than [he] admits. 14. The general has less soldiers than [he] needs. 15. [We] have more inhabitants than we can (podemos) support. 16. Yes, he is a great orator, but [he] is² not¹ so eloquent as Castelar. 17. A good dog is as faithful as [he] is brave. 18. The captain is not so prudent as the lieutenant. 19. That (esa) little-girl is as innocent as a lamb. 20. The teacher has as much wisdom as prudence. 21. This (este) exercise has as many mistakes as that (el) of yesterday. 22. (The = la) Florida produces as many oranges as [the = la] California. 23. When a man spends as much money as [he] earns, [he] can² (puede) not¹ get-rich.

10

347. Study 29-33 and review the verbs.

1. El hierro es el más útil y el acero es el más duro de los metales. 2. El rubí, el diamante y la esmeralda son las más hermosas y más preciosas de las piedras, pero no son las más útiles. 3. Los pájaros (= las aves) más comunes son: el águila (11, *b*), el buitre, el buho, el cuervo, la corneja, el papagayo, el pavo real (= pavón), el estornino, la golondrina, el ruiseñor y la avestruz. 4. Mi libro más entrenido es obra de un autor muy conocido. 5. Una madre está más contenta cuando está rodeada de sus hijos. 6. La más dichosa de las mujeres es la (she) que tiene buenos y sanos hijos. 7. Mi querido amigo, el más honrado de los hombres, pasa la mayor parte de su tiempo viajando. 8. La manzana, fruta la más saludable, no es tan dulce como el melocotón.

9. To-converse with one's friends after [a] long absence is exceedingly pleasant. 10. The rose and the violet are very-beautiful. 11. The winters of the north are very-cold (31, *a*). 12. The robber commits a very-atrocious² (31, *b*) crime.¹ 13. The juice of the orange is very-sweet. 14. The translation of this (esta) letter is very-easy (31, *c*, Note). 15. The very-celebrated² (31, *c*) poets¹ of this century are very-few (32). 16. She is the best (32) of my friends. 17. This (esta) beer is dearer than the wine but it is very-bad (32). 18. [We] are here in the mountains, a very-healthy² place.¹ 19. [It] is the youngest (32) of my brothers who is dead. 20. My cousin is in the upper² class¹ and my brother is in the lower² class.¹ 21. (The) very-candid² men¹ (31, *c*) are rarely popular. 22. [He] leads a very-wretched² life¹ (31, *c*) on account of his bad health. 23. The most of (the) men prefer (the) repose to (the) activity. 24. A good (25) man is an accident, a good woman is an incident.

11

348. Study again 34-37. Learn (38) the cardinal and *ordinal numbers* to 30, and read the remainder.

1. Ella tiene ojos azules y pelo castaño. 2. Un rayo de luz blanca contiene los elementos de todos los colores. 3. La guerra anglo-boer continúa todavía en el África austral. 4. La herida penetrante fué (was) el resultado de una puñalada. 5. La peste bubónica es una de las enfermedades más horribles. 6. La telegrafía políciaca espanta al ladrón y él salta por la ventana. 7. Un acto tan bueno merece el reconocimiento de toda buena gente. 8. La música alemana difiere mucho de la música italiana. 9. La edad media es el tiempo transcurrido desde el siglo quinto de la era vulgar hasta mediados del siglo décimoquinto. 10. Una negra acción es característica de un corazón malo y ruin. 11. *Mucho ruido y pocas nueces* es un refrán español que significa que el mucho trabajo trae poca ganancia. 12. Los números cardinales sirven (servir) de (as) base á toda operación aritmética; los ordinales señalan el lugar en que colocamos las personas ó las cosas.

13. The four cardinal² points¹ are² the North, the South, the East and the West. 14. To Flavio Gioia, [a] Neapolitan² navigator¹ of the fourteenth² century,¹ is attributed (se le atribuye) the invention of the mariner's compass. 15. The consumption of soap is the best measure of the manners, intelligence, civilization, and morality of a people. 16. [It] is a great misfortune for (para) a man, when his mother and three sisters think (that) he is perfect. 17. The Greeks, (the) nation [the] most cultured of (the) antiquity, are to-day mere shadows of their (sus) ancestors. 18. The dreams of the morning of (the) life are the nightmares of (the) old-age. 19. What o'clock (hora) is [it]? [It] is (the) one [o'clock]. 20. Saturn makes (hace) the revolution in his orbit in thirty years. 21. The moon revolves around the earth in twenty-seven days, seven hours, and forty-three minutes. 22. I am (tengo) eighteen years [old]. 23. To-day is the thirteenth (40, d) of April. 24. My music-teacher comes every third day (25). 25. Leo [the] thirteenth (40, c) is the present² Pope¹; his predecessor was (fué) Pius [the] ninth. 26. Sancho Panza calls (13, Note) Don Quijote the knight of the rueful countenance (37).

12

349. Study **39-43**. Review **38** and the verbs so far as studied.

1. La navidad (el veinticinco de diciembre) es el día en que celebramos el nacimiento de Jesucristo. 2. El cuatro de julio se celebra (**150**) como el aniversario de la declaración de independencia de nuestra República. 3. Tres multiplicado por seis es igual á diez más ocho, y veintiocho dividido por siete es igual á trece menos nueve. 4. Multiplicamos todos los guarismos del multiplicando por cada uno de los (those) del multiplicador. 5. Escribimos el dividendo y el divisor sobre una misma línea, separados por una vertical; el divisor se separa (**150**) del cociente por una horizontal. 6. El mes de febrero tiene veintinueve días en los años bisiestos. 7. Cien valientes soldados valen (**200**) más que todo un regimiento de cobardes. 8. Ciento y cincuenta pesos (= duros) bastan para hacer el viaje. 9. Carlos segundo, rey de España, murió (died) á los treinta y nueve años de edad.

10. A Spaniard calls (**13**, Note) his wife jocularly: *his dear half* or *his half orange*. 11. A quarter of [an] hour is equal to fifteen minutes. 12. A watch has three hands: the hour-hand marks the hours, the minute-hand the minutes, and the second-hand the seconds. 13. I am² not¹ (**138**, 2) hungry in (por) the morning; [I] only take a couple of eggs, a cup of coffee, and a little (of) bread with butter. 14. They take (dan) a walk towards four o'clock (**42**, Note). 15. His story has [a] double meaning. 16. Our men-of-war and other steamers have engines of triple and quadruple expansion, but (the) locomotives [do] not have² them¹ (las). 17. He gives² me¹ a dozen (of) oranges and about twenty (**42**, Note) apples. 18. Some forty soldiers witness the execution of the traitor. 19. They need about twenty dollars to (para) complete the sum which [they] propose (se proponen) [to] raise. 20. Without money (the) honor is only a malady. 21. The hog is your (el) true gentleman, because he alone has nothing to do (**138**, 3).

13

350. Study **44** and **135, a** and **140**. Review present indicative and learn imperfect indicative (**136** and **142**).

1. Cuando yo estaba en el campo, vivía con mi tío (**302, a**).
 2. ¿Comía V. mucho fruto, cuando vivía en la Habana? 3. Sí, porque las frutas de aquel país eran excelentes y saludables. 4. En aquella época yo era joven y amaba con delirio á mi santa madre (¡ que Dios haya ! **137, c**). 5. Nuestra tía daba una tertulia todas las semanas, y yo bailaba con mi novia. 6. Ella era muy amable hacia todo el mundo (**132, 2d**), pero bailaba sólo conmigo (**58**).
 7. Nosotros éramos felices en aquellos días ; tocábamos el piano y el violín y cantábamos, recordando que dónde hay (**137, b, 3**) música, no puede (can) haber cosa mala. 8. Ustedes pasaban días enteros pescando en el arroyo, mientras esperaban el regreso de sus (your) compañeros. 9. Ellos tenían mucho que (**138, 3**) hacer, cada vez que llegaba el buque. 10. Una golondrina no hace verano.

NOTE. — Translate here all past tenses by the imperfect and put the pronouns of the second column immediately before the verb and *no* (not) before these pronouns, when the sentence is negative.

11. While I was-writing my exercise, he was-studying his lesson. 12. When we were (**139**) on (á) board (of) the steamer the food was bad, and [we did] not eat it (lo). 13. You (usted) used-to-tell me entertaining² stories¹ when I was sick ; I liked (gustar) them (**44**) very-much (**236, c**, Note). 14. If I liked the oranges and other fruits, [I] ate them, but [they] were² not¹ always good. 15. I was not thinking of (en) him nor (ni) of her when I was-speaking, but (sino) of you. 16. The gardener used-to-give us many flowers, and we gave them (**54**) to the children. 17. He was in the city (the) last week, but we [did] not know it (lo). 18. The letters which he wrote² [to] me¹ from Europe were interesting, and I read² them¹ with much pleasure. 19. We

bought a paper every morning and read it before (the) breakfast ; then gave² it¹ to our landlady. 20. He used-to-go (214) with us to the theater when [he] had sufficient time, but [he did] not always³ have² it.¹ 21. Certain men interest-themselves (150) so-much in what (lo que) the² ancients³ did¹ (hacían), that [they do] not know [how to] live with the moderns.

14

351. Study 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 59, 61, and review references for Exercise 13.

1. Usted se engaña pensando que yo le amaba, porque no es verdad. 2. Él me engañaba asegurándome (60) que no era casado. 3. Me lo dice (decir) pero no lo creo, porque yo no me fío de él. 4. Nosotros mismos (53) les enviábamos melocotones de nuestro huerto, cuando los (56) teníamos. 5. Hé aquí (137, d) la gramática española que yo compré (bought) ; ¿la quiere (209) usted? 6. No, no la quiero, porque tengo una que es mucho mejor ; sólo que no me pertenece á mí sino á mi sobrino quien me la presta. 7. Dios ayuda á los (those) que se ayudan á sí mismos. 8. La gloria es el heno con que se alimenta á la bestia humana. 9. La luna de la poesía es una imagen de la paz y de la ternura ; pero la luna de la ciencia se nos presenta como una soledad sin vida y sin encanto. 10. El hombre, que no tiene un dolor de dientes, no sabe lo (89, 5th) grande que es el placer de no tenerlo (60). 11. ¿Cuál es el refrán inglés correspondiente al español? : *Más vale pájaro en mano que buitre volando.*

12. He tells (195) it to me and thinks (164) that I believe it, but [he] deceives himself. 13. To be (el ser) [a] slave of oneself (53) is the worst kind of slavery. 14. He offers her his (la) hand, but she refuses it, because [she does] not love him. 15. Here I am (137, d) ; what [do] you wish of me (44)? Your teacher writes me that you [do] not come to (the) school every day ; how [do] you explain your absence? 16. I am asked (61, b) *whether [I] accept the conditions which are offered me (61, b).*

17. My friends are asked, whether [they] intend [to] travel in (por) Spain this year. 18. We are informed that the proposed tariff [does] not please² (them¹) (to) the Porto Ricans; and [they] consider it as a great injustice. 19. You are informed that the president is here and will remain (permanecerá) here for (por) two days. 20. (62). He comes (viene) to me and asks me why his proposition is not satisfactory.

15

352. Study 63, 64, 65, 71, 73, and the preterits of 136 and 142.

1. Los rosales de mi jardín principian á echar botones, y mis otras flores no tardarán (fut.) en mostrar los suyos (73). 2. Mis perritos ahuyentaron anoche á ciertos gatos que daban su concierto de costumbre en nuestro patio. 3. Su padre político de V. llegó esta tarde con su familia de él (65). 4. Entonces nuestras relaciones políticas eran excitadísimas á causa de lo (89) de Filipinas y Puerto Rico. 5. La pena tiene sus placeres, el peligro sus encantos. 6. Nadie sabe tan bien como un subordinado la cortedad de su superior. 7. Cuando un hombre se vuelve (226, 2) cristiano, su caballo es el primero que lo averigua. 8. Los antiguos consideraban á la culebra tragando su propia (66) cola como un perfecto símbolo de la eternidad. 9. Aun el insensato, cuando calla, es considerado por sabio; el que cierra sus labios es entendido. 10. Su hermana recién casada está pasando (140) la luna de miel en el mediodía de Francia.

NOTE. — In this exercise, use *usted* for *you* throughout.

11. The possessive³ adjectives¹ and pronouns² agree (conducen) in gender and number with their nouns. 12. A pupil of mine (67) learned the Spanish² conjugations¹ in [a] few days. 13. His exercise was well written (222), but yours (75) was badly written. 14. His photograph is not so good as yours, but is better than hers (73). 15. Your clothes (64) are finer than theirs, but

are not so durable. 16. A friend of ours (67) set-out yesterday in a balloon for (para) the North² pole.¹ 17. He took my overcoat and left his own. 18. [We] remained in his house (69) three days, and when the rain stopped, [we] continued our journey. 19. (The) patience is bitter, but its fruit (fruto) is sweet. 20. He washed his face and hands and trimmed his nails (71) and then went (fué) to (the) church. 21. He lost his (la) life (71) crossing the ocean. 22. The color of his hair and of mine (74) is chestnut, but yours (el de V.) is black. 23. Our [soldiers, 77] attacked the (al) enemy at (the) sunrise.

16

353. Study 78, 86, 88-88, 3d, and review preterits in 136 and 142.

1. Este libro me perteneció, pero ahora no es mío (76).
 2. Esta ropa sucia debió lavarse en casa. 3. Cuando V. encontró ese caballo, ¿dónde estaba? 4. Esa gallina pone un huevo todos los días. 5. Aquel gato es bueno, porque limpia la casa de ratas y ratones. 6. Eso es absurdo; no tiene cabal juicio. 7. En aquellos días había (137, b, 3) gigantes en la tierra. 8. Esos pasatiempos nos agradaron mucho más que los que tuvimos más tarde. 9. Éstos son mejores que éstos, pero yo prefiero éstos á aquéllos. 10. Lo de la libre acuñación (89) de la plata fué discutido en la última campaña presidencial. 11. Su cuñado y su tío son senadores de los Estados Unidos; éste es libre-cambista, y aquél favorece un arancel subido ó proteccionista. 12. Los periódicos de hoy y los de ayer no traen noticias fidedignas acerca del asunto.

13. This fountain-pen cost me two dollars and [a] half (41).
 14. These pencils were made (hechos) in Germany and had to (138, 3) pass through (por) the custom-house. 15. I bought those goods [near you] in a shop on (en) the corner of this street. 16. That schooner and that man-of-war anchored in the harbor last-night. 17. (86). This watch is mine, that-one [near you] is *his* (76), and *the-one-yonder* belongs to my sister-in-law. 18. The

two wives of Alfonso [the] twelfth (40, c) were Mercedes and Cristina: the former (87) died (murió) young, the latter is now queen-regent. 19. Yesterday we paid this bill and that of the contractor. 20. This letter and that which (88, 2d) arrived yesterday started from Madrid the same day. 21. Our newspapers and those of Spain differ very-much. 22. The manners of this gentleman and those of his friend are very pleasing.

17

354. Study 90, 91, 94, 95, and the futures of 136 and 142.

1. El pecado es el abismo que separa del ideal divino el carácter moral del hombre. 2. Es la libertad que da á la flor de la vida fugaz, su brillantez y fragancia, y sin ella somos malas yerbas. 3. Mark Twain propuso erigir un monumento al hombre que descubrió la ostra. 4. La hipocrisia es el tributo que el vicio pagará siempre á la virtud. 5. Guárdate (150, a) de la mujer á quien (92, 2d) no gustan las flores, y del hombre á quien no gustan las mujeres. 6. El centauro era un monstruo de la mitología antigua, el cual (94) se representaba mitad hombre y mitad caballo. 7. En su Arte poético dice (195) Horacio: quien (92, 3d) mezcla lo útil con lo dulce se llevará siempre el día. 8. Todos llegarán hoy, quiénes (92, 4th) por el ferrocarril, quiénes por el tranvía eléctrico. 9. Tendremos mañana por la tarde una exhibición de estatuas y pinturas, la cual gustará á ustedes sin duda alguna. 10. Á quien tiene la ictericia, todo le parecerá amarillo. 11. La duda es la niebla deslumbrante que se levanta entre la visión del hombre y la verdad eterna.

12. According-to Homer (the) religion is the chain of gold with which the earth is (está) suspended from the throne of the Eternal. 13. (The) men speak more often of the virtues which [they do] not have, than of those (88, 2d) which [they] have. 14. The officers who are now in [the] Philippines will remain there for (por) three months, and then will return to this country. 15. Even (the) honey will be bitter for (para) him who (92, 3d) has his (el)

stomach² full.¹ 16. Some (92, 4th) will live in the village, some will go (214) to (á) live in the country. 17. The man to whom (92, 2d) you spoke will represent the Society of the Red² Cross.¹ 18. [It] is the flower of the English² army¹ which (94) will perish in the Anglo-Boer² war.¹ 19. The general will select (13, Note) the man who (92, 1st) will carry the flag of truce. 20. Then [we] shall have a teacher whose (95) influence will produce the best results. 21. The Greeks, whose enlightenment [we] shall always admire, succumbed to the evil effects of (the) war. 22. The attorney-general, whose speech we listened to to-day, will take the floor again (227) to-morrow.

18

355. Study 99, 100, 101, 103, 105, 150, and review preterits and futures.

1. ¿Quién me ayudará en este asunto? 2. ¿Quiénes eran los abogados que hablaron en pro del preso? 3. ¿Cuántos regimientos enviará Inglaterra al África austral? 4. ¿Á cuál de los dos pretendientes preferirá usted? 5. ¿Sabe V. quién la acompañó al teatro? 6. ¿Qué comeremos en la cena esta noche? 7. ¿Por cuál médico mandaré yo? 8. ¿Qué juez de paz le condenó? 9. ¿Qué artistas trabajarán en la ópera? 10. ¡Qué feliz es el hombre que escapa á la censura de sus vecinos! 11. ¡Qué malos pensamientos abrigamos de vez en cuando! 12. ¿De quién son estas sortijas? 13. ¿En cuya tienda compró V. el papel y los sobres? 14. ¿Qué hora es? (*or* ¿qué horas son?). — Es la una, son las dos, las cuatro y cuarto, las cinco y veinte minutos, las seis y media, las siete menos cinco minutos, etc. 15. ¿Sabe V. qué tal tiempo tendremos mañana? 16. ¿Á qué hora se levanta V. cada día? — Me levanto entre las siete y las ocho.

NOTE. — Use *usted* for *you*.

17. "Who is your fat² friend¹?" asked Beau Brummel, speaking to (al) Lord Alvanley of the then Prince of Wales, who (quien)

was later George (Jorge) IV. 18. What city is the capital of Cuba? 19. In what street is (139) the townhall? 20. How many days [do we] need to (para) go from New (Nueva) York to (the = la) Habana? 21. Who is the governor-general, and where [does he] live? 22. What ocean is-there (hay) to the north and to the east of the Antilles? 23. What land was the first which Columbus² (Colón) discovered¹? 24. Which of the two fleets gained the victory in the battle of Santiago de Cuba? 25. What is astronomy?—[It] is the science which treats of the movements and structure of the heavenly² bodies.¹ 26. Of whose poems (102) were you speaking (imp.) when I entered (pret.)? 27. How much (105) money will you receive by (the) mail? 28. How long will they remain in the capital? 29. At what o'clock will you (pl.) go-to-bed to-night?—[We] shall go-to-bed at midnight.

19

356. Learn 107 and the Spanish examples of 111, 111 *a*, 112, 113, 114; review 136 and 142 to futures inclusive; also 150.

1. Somebody desires [to] see you (60), sir; [it] is the same gentleman who came (vino) here this morning. 2. Very well; [he] may (puede) enter, if [he] desires [to] consult me (60) about something important. 3. [Do] you know (211, *b*) anybody more contented and happy than he? 4. Nothing is more noble than (the) kindness, nothing more royal than (the) truth. 5. Each one of his sons received a prize in the school. 6. Is there (137, *b*, 3) anything more agreeable and profitable than a good book? 7. [We] shall not find any one (113) more fit for the employment. 8. If one (uno) is (está) discontented, [he] can² (puede) not¹ be happy. 9. Nothing is more certain in this world than (the) death and (the) taxes. 10. He retired from the position without saying (inf.) anything (111, *a*) to any one (113, *a*). 11. Of what [do] you speak?—I [do] not speak of anything important.

20

357. Learn 116 and the Spanish examples of 124, 126, 127, 128, 132, and the conditionals of 136 and 142.

1. When I left² him,¹ [I] hoped (that) [he] would live many years. 2. Some friends came (vinieron) to my house during my absence and said (dijeron) that [they] would return at four o'clock; but no one returned. 3. That (eso) would be foreign (117) to my intention. 4. I would remain here another hour, but in that (ese) case I should not arrive in (á) time. 5. Certain persons would prefer [to] attend to other-people's² affairs,¹ neglecting their own (73 and 66). 6. Few soldiers would be (estar) satisfied with a ration of embalmed² meat.¹ 7. In your place I should reject such conditions. 8. Every honorable² man¹ would scorn such [a] proposition. 9. If I should go (fuera) to San Juan, [I] should pass the whole summer there. 10. If [we] represented (representásemos) that drama, everybody and his wife would be present. 11. Our only (134) recourse would be [to] appeal to the Supreme² Court.¹

21

358. Review 136 and learn the three regular conjugations in accordance with the plan given in 145 for the formation of tenses. Students should be required to devote several recitations to writing verbs on the blackboard in the manner indicated, giving at the same time, as far as practicable, the meanings of each mood and tense. This will serve as an excellent exercise.

Imperative. — (Put the object pronouns **after** the verb in affirmative, and **before** in negative sentences.)

1. Hábleme V. con franqueza, ó no me hable del todo. 2. Tenga V. la bondad de decirme (60) quién llama á la puerta. 3. El rey es muerto; ¡ viva el rey ! 4. Esa fruta no es buena; no la coma V.; *coma más bien* esta banana. 5. Díganme ustedes (195) toda

la verdad, ó no me digan nada. 6. Marchémonos (151, *a*) en seguida, ó esperemos el próximo tren. 7. Tomad este libro y dadlo al maestro. 8. No, no quiero (209) tomarlo. — Pues, no lo toméis. 9. Dénsele (189) á él, si quiere aceptarlo; si no, no se lo den. 10. Cuando venga (202), dígame V. (195) que estoy en mi cuarto. 11. Vamos (214) á ver si el cartero ha llegado. 12. Séate la tierra leve, pobre amigo mío. 13. No seas tonto; pero está contento de lo que tú tienes.

(Study 60 carefully.) 14. Speak to them (44) of the affair, but don't reveal to them our secret. 15. Let (que) him enter (267, *d*, Note), I will speak to him now. 16. Let us give him the money before going-away (inf.). 17. [It] is eleven o'clock (355, 14); let us go-to-bed. 18. At what hour shall we rise? — Let us rise (149, *a*) at eight o'clock. 19. Let us go (214) to (á) take-a-walk after dinner. 20. Let (que) them get married (267, *d*, Note) if [they] love each other (152). 21. Have the goodness (358, 2) to pass me that plate. 22. Come (202) here and tell me (358, 10) what (lo que) you have heard. 23. Lend it to me, but don't lend it to him. 24. Pass me the butter, if [you] please. 25. Hear (194) what I have to say (138, 3) before pronouncing (inf.) the verdict. 26. Prepare your lesson before coming (inf.) to (the) class. 27. Let us return (to) home as soon as (como sea) possible. 28. When [they] come (subj. 202), give (189) them these flowers. 29. Do (197) me the favor to (de) listen to me a moment.

22

359. Learn 146–148; commit to memory the Spanish illustrative examples.

1. I am loved by my mother, and she is loved by her father. 2. (Imperf.) When we were children [we] were much (muy) loved by our parents (17, *a*). 3. (Pret.) This horse was sold by the dealer at a very² low³ price.¹ 4. The money will be loaned at (al) six per cent. 5. If they did² (hiciesen) it,¹ [they] would be abhorred by all (the) honest² men.¹ 6. You (usted) have been

more feared than esteemed by your pupils. 7. Few statesmen had been more honored and esteemed by their fellow-citizens. 8. The train having been held-up by the bandits, the passengers would have been robbed but-for the bravery of the guards. 9. It will be (*habrá*) ten years the fifteenth of the present month that he has been dead. 10. You (*ustedes*, fem.) would have been killed instantly, but-for the arrival of the patrol. 11. [We] shall be (*quedar*) satisfied if he finishes the task before (the) night. 12. [They] go (*andar*, 188) armed to (*hasta*) the teeth.

23

360. Learn 149–152. Commit to memory the Spanish examples. Translate *you* by *usted*.

1. All (the) good pupils behave themselves well, when [they] are (139) in (the) school. 2. [We] go-to-bed at eleven [o'clock] (355, 14) at (de) (the) night and rise at seven in (de) the morning. 3. Get-up; don't you know (211, a) that [it] is nine [o'clock]? 4. I shall rise within [a] few minutes; I wish [to] stretch myself and rub my (71) eyes first (*antes*). 5. I am going (215) to take-a-bath before dressing (*inf.*); and then I shall come-down the stairs. 6. Let us take-a-walk after breakfasting (*inf.*). 7. No; let us not take-a-walk this (*por la*) morning, but (*sino*) this afternoon; I have to (138, 3) write some important² letters.¹ 8. While you were washing and dressing, I wrote my letter, and [I] shall put it in the box after (the) breakfast. 9. Let him behave himself, or I shall punish² him¹ severely. 10. Let them not deceive themselves; [we] shall await the result, being (*estar*) sure that (*de que*) [they] are wrong (138, 2). 11. (152). We shall help each other the best (*lo mejor*) that [we] can (*subj.* 209). 12. Don't [you] congratulate each other yet.

24

361. Review formation of tenses (145) and reflexive verbs (149–152). Study 153–157; learn Spanish examples by heart.

1. (153). He has forgotten his handkerchief and has to (138, 3) buy another. 2. We imagine (that). [they] will devise other means. 3. (154, a). He has been informed of the measures adopted by the assembly. 4. (b). No smoking in this hall between nine and three o'clock (355, 14). 5. (c). All our goods are sold under guarantee of their quality. 6. Wanted, in a large establishment of ready-made² clothing,¹ a clerk who speaks (hable) Spanish. 7. (Note). My brother is asked whether he will accept the offer. 8. [We] ask ourselves whether the end will justify the means. 9. (155). They are hungry (138, 2) and devour their supper ravenously. 10. (156). During the whole night there is dancing, there is skating, there is joking, and there is laughing (182, a). 11. [We] shall remain there a week or two, if [it] is good weather (158, b).

25

362. Study 158-162. Learn by heart the Spanish examples.

1. It is drizzling now, but it will rain soon. [We] need rain very-much. 2. Usually, when [it] stops raining (inf.) the clouds disappear and the sun comes-out. 3. In the winter [it] hails and freezes and snows, but [it] rarely rains or thunders, especially in (the) northern² climates.¹ 4. [We] hope [to] arrive in Toledo at dawn and in Salamanca at nightfall. 5. *Hacer* is used (154, c) in certain idioms [in] speaking of the weather. 6. For (por) example: it is warm in this room; it was very good weather when we were (139) in the country; many years ago I received that letter from a friend of mine (67) who was then residing in Europe. 7. (160). It is said in Spanish: better is good repute than [a] golden² bed.¹ 8. [It] is necessary [to] accept what (the) Providence sends² us¹ without murmuring (inf.). 9. [They] say that a bad² man¹ can (puede) do us (60) much harm as [an] enemy, but much more as [a] friend.

REMARK. — As it is not practicable, in a short grammar, to give exercises on the numerous irregular verbs, it is suggested that the

teacher assign one or more of them to be studied for each recitation. One or more of the students, while the others are reciting, may be sent to the board to conjugate the irregular tenses in the form of sentences, as : —

Yo pienso que no es verdad.
 Tú piensas en tu amigo ausente.
 Él piensa hacer algunas visitas, etc.

The idioms given under certain verbs, as for instance under *dar* (189), might be assigned, from time to time, as special lessons.

26

363. Study the four verbs (209), and learn by heart the Spanish examples in 210–211, *b*.

1. (210). The firm can not pay its debts. 2. Can you lend me five dollars for (por) a week? 3. The Boers can not help submitting to [the] hard conditions. 4. [He] could not come this evening on account of the absence of his partner. 5. [They] consoled themselves as best [they] could. 6. Up-to the present [he] has not been able to collect (juntar) the necessary² funds.¹ 7. [They] assured us that [they] would not be able to collect (cobrar) the money. 8. [They] might have been able to continue their course but-for the fog. 9. [We] may have left it at home. 10. [They] might have accepted other terms. 11. (211). She can play the guitar and sing. 12. If we were attacked (acometiera) we should be able to defend ourselves. 13. (*a*). What do you know (of) new?— Absolutely nothing. 14. I do not know who (quién) has made the offer, but [it] is [a] good [one]. 15. (*b*). Do you know that gentleman?— Yes, I know him very well, and I know (*a*) that [he] belongs to a very good family.

27

364. Study 212–216, learning by heart the Spanish examples. Review the four verbs of 209.

1. Will you accompany me to the post-office? I wish to buy [some] postage-stamps and get a registered² letter¹ which [I] expect. 2. The king was willing to grant the petition under (bajo) certain conditions, which they would not accept. 3. If we were offered (ofreciera, 211) [the] immortality on (en) this earth, who would be willing to accept this sad gift? 4. (213). Even (hasta) (the) kings have to obey the rules of (the) grammar. 5. We were to go-driving yesterday, but it rained (158). 6. [They] have been compelled to abandon their trip around the world for (por) want of money. 7. He must have missed (errar) the train, for (porque) [he] is returning with his grip. 8. We had been obliged to pass the night in the waiting-room, where there was not (137, b, 3) [any] fire. 9. He who (88, 2d) does not wish to collect (cobrar) an enemy ought not to lend money to a friend. 10. (216). [We] have just returned from our country-seat, where we passed a delightful² time¹ (temporada). 11. They had just lost their father (285), and were wearing mourning.

28

365. Commit to memory all the examples in 226-228.

1. (226). On hearing the thunder [they] became (201) pale with (de) fear. 2. She became furious when I refused her (the) admittance. 3. (2). He got lazy after working (inf.) two or three hours. 4. He turned traitor when [he] reached the lines of the enemy. 5. (3). The situation is becoming more perilous for (para) us every hour. 6. (4). After much labor he became a noted lawyer. 7. (5). He is becoming (202) more famous every day. 8. She wishes to become a sick-nurse. 9. Japan (275, a), without doubt, will become one of the leading nations of the world. 10. What has become of all his bluster? 11. (6). [We] became satisfied that the danger had passed. 12. (227). Balzac, the French novelist, wrote and rewrote his novels several times (veces) before publishing (inf.) them. 13. (228). Formerly [they] punished (imp.) criminals [by] sending them (60) to [the] galleys. 14. The curate

baptized the little-child. 15. When the spring begins, the trees put forth leaves and flowers. 16. [We] miss our friends who returned to their home this morning. 17. An indulgent² mother¹ spoils (13, Note) her children. 18. [They] began to advance rapidly toward our right² wing.¹

29

366. Study 230-236, *e*. Review formation of tenses, 145.

1. Mi sobrina canta de una manera encantadora. 2. Emilio Castelar habló clara y elocuentemente. 3. (235). Llovió anoche y llueve ahora (158). 4. Hable V. más despacio. 5. (*a*). Ella se viste (181) á la española. 6. Á la larga los que más trabajan más ganan. 7. Yo iré (214) con usted de buena gana. 8. Cayó (192) de rodillas para recibir la bendición del Papa. 9. Á más andar alcanza el torpedero una velocidad de treinta nudos por hora. 10. (236, *a*). ¿Dónde encontraron al encargado de negocios? 11. Si V. quiere ir á caballo, aquí tiene V. un magnífico caballo de silla. 12. (*b*). ¿Cuándo ocurrió el suceso de que V. me informa? 13. ¿Cuántas veces ha estado ella en Madrid? 14. Desde entonces el caciquismo se ha desarrollado con una rapidez increíble. 15. Eso tendrá (will take) lugar tarde ó temprano. 16. (*c*). Buenas tardes, señor doctor (332, *f*); ¿cómo está usted?—Muy bien, gracias; ¿y usted? 17. (*e*). ¿Le mataron á sangre fría (243, *c*)?—Pienso que sí. 18. ¿Ustedes se marchan?—Sí que nos marchamos.

30

367. Study 237-242, *c*. Review passive voice, 146.

1. (237). How-much has [he] paid?—Nothing. 2. Nothing has [he] done (hecho) since yesterday. 3. Never have [I] seen such effrontery. 4. Has he ever believed in the free coinage of (the) silver?—Never. 5. [We] never accept aid from such men.—Nor do we either. 6. In [the] not distant future there will be (137, *b*, 3) war between (the) Japan (275, *a*) and (the) Russia.

7. His health is better than ever. 8. (238). He acted more wisely than before. 9. This proposition turned out more strictly true than the other. 10. (The) ignorance and cheek get-along in this world much more rapidly than (the) modest intelligence. 11. (239). [It] will grow better in (á) the shade than in the sun. 12. This author writes more than three books every year. 13. (240). He who is (está) most contented wants [the] least. 14. She plays (tocar) the best of all his pupils. 15. I read the least possible at (de) night. 16. (242). [He] speaks so fast that I [do] not understand him. 17. (a). He [does] not skate so well as his brother, but better than his cousin. 18. He [does] not progress so-much as [he] might (pudiera). 19. (c). The more [I] associate with (the) men, the more [I] respect (the) dogs (13, Note).

31

368. Study 243–244, c. Learn by heart the Spanish examples. Review reflexive verbs, 149.

1. (a). On the following day the troops retired from the trenches. 2. Early in April, the army broke (levantar) (the) camp to (para) begin the campaign. 3. (b). [They] started at dawn, and on their way captured a village halfway between the camp and the capital. Having arrived in (the) sight of the city [they] halted. 4. (c). Some came (202) on horseback, others on foot. The former, at the instance of the latter (87), dismounted. 5. (d). We offered [to] discount the draft at five per cent. 6. He buys his goods at wholesale and sells them at retail, but not on credit. 7. (244, a). At the moment when we were crossing the ford, the² axle³ broke,¹ throwing us into the (al) water. 8. [They] told (195) us that [they] would see us to-day fortnight. 9. (b). [We] passed the whole day at home. 10. [They] will be offered for sale in the bookstore on (de) the corner of this street. 11. (c). What can (209) [we] do for you, gentlemen? 12. He valued his library at two thousand (38) dollars.

32

369. Study **245–246**, *g*. Commit to memory the Spanish examples. Review impersonal verbs, **158**.

1. [We] started from Boston [on] the seventeenth (**40**, *d*) ultimo and arrived here [on] the twentieth instant. 2. (*b*). At night all (the) cats are gray. 3. In the country the farmers work from sun to sun. 4. (*c*). According-to our customs, a woman, when [she] loses her husband or other near² relative,¹ dresses in black. 5. He was sharp-witted and light-footed, but [he] allowed himself to be caught.* 6. (*d*). They were traveling in Europe when the war broke-out. 7. The enemy took a strong position on (á) the other side of the river. 8. (*e*). The two brothers went (**214**) as ambassadors, the one to France, the other to Spain. 9. (**246**, *a*). At that time he was working on (en) a newspaper which was published by the strikers; but the strike [did] not last for a long time. 10. (*b*). He who (**88**, 2d) does not enter the sheep-fold by the door is a robber. 11. The hare started-up and began to run across the field, followed by the greyhound. 12. (*c*). [We] can (**210**) send a letter to any (cualquier) part of the United States for two pennies. 13. (*d*). [He] lost his place by his negligence and laziness. 14. By a stroke of good luck [we] got-out of the house just as (**243**, *a*) the² roof³ fell¹ (**192**). 15. Orders to (por) [the] value of five dollars will be sent by mail, postage prepaid. 16. (*e*). [He] succeeded [in] escaping (inf.) from the burning² house,¹ but returned for his money and thus lost his (la) life. 17. At her death the mother promised her daughter that she would watch over her (**44**). 18. The lawyer pleaded for the acquittal of the accused, alleging self-defense as [the] motive of the murder. 19. (*f*). Wilt (**212**) thou take this woman to [to be] thy wife? 20. The father of the bride conducted her along (**246**, *b*) the aisle to the altar, where [they] met the groom and his best-men. 21. He was bitten by a rattlesnake and sent for a *surgeon*.

* Use active form.

33

370. Study **247–252**, learning by heart the Spanish examples. Review the verbs in **136**.

1. (**247, a**). These flowers are for the church, and those for the pastor's wife. 2. While preparing the charge for the tenth shot, the piece (la pieza) exploded, killing the gunner and two of his aids (sirvientes). 3. (**b**). Some [people] eat to live, others live to eat. 4. To please others [it] is necessary [to] be amiable and kind-hearted. 5. It is said (**160**) that the Filipinos are incapable of self-government; be that as it may (sea lo que fuere) [it] is certain that they are capable of (the) self-defense. 6. (**c**). By that hour [we] shall have finished all that (lo que) [we] have to do (**138, 3**). 7. In the future [they] will pass the winter in the city. 8. (**d**). The cruiser will start for Manila (the) next² week.¹ 9. (**e**). For those who live in the cities, (the) life in (de) the country has few charms. 10. (**f**). [He] has a large army, but many of his soldiers are (están) not fit for (the) service. 11. (**g**). She read the letter to herself and then tore it up. 12. To tell [the] truth, I had (imp.) other plans which [I] considered more feasible. 13. (**248**). Before the jury he denied all that (lo que) [he] had told (dicho) me. 14. We breakfasted before eight [o'clock]. 15. (**249**). In the absence of the colonel, the regiment started under the command of a captain. 16. My hat-box is under the bed. 17. (**250**). To (para) go from Boston to San Francisco a letter needs a two-cent stamp. 18. (**251**). I wished (pret.) to go with him (**44**) to the concert, but not having [any] money with me, [I] had to (tuve que) borrow some. 19. (**252**). I came (**202**) here against my will, and I shall go away willingly (**235, a**).

34

371. Study **253–266**. Commit to memory the Spanish examples. Review the formation of tenses, **145**.

1. (253). Since the Reformation many religious² sects¹ have sprung-up. 2. (255). *Between the sword and the wall* is said (160) in Spanish, but we say (195) in English: between the devil and the deep² sea.¹ 3. (256). She played the whole piece well except the *finale*. 4. Save the few errors almost inevitable in a first edition, the book is well printed (222). 5. (257). The bandits having been beaten retreated toward the mountains. 6. Our teacher is severe toward the pupils, but always just. 7. (258). The first (25) day even the infantry went (214) as far as the upper ford, where [they] bivouacked until (the) morning. 8. (261). According-to my humble opinion the remedy proposed is worse than the disease. 9. (262). The gods have given nothing valuable (111) to (the) man without much work. 10. (263). A detachment of the vanguard fell upon the rear-guard of the enemy and captured (hizo) over two hundred (38) prisoners. 11. Above my book-case [I] have a bust of Cervantes. 12. (264). Every rose conceals a thorn behind its beauty. 13. After many trials and tribulations [we] secured what [we] desired. 14. (265). The pale light of the moon penetrates between the rifts of the clouds. 15. The electric² wires¹ pass over the houses of the village. 16. (The) political² parties¹ are great conspiracies formed in-the-interest-of (en pro de) the few against (en contra de) the many.

35

372. Study 267-269, learning the Spanish examples by heart. Read carefully 270-274.

1. (267, a). The promoters of the French² Revolution¹ took for (por) [a] motto the words: *liberty, equality, fraternity*; but the liberty degenerated into license, the equality into vulgarity, and the fraternity was only (b) that which (88, 1st) exists amongst robbers. 2. There are (137, b, 3) many sects but a single religion. 3. (b). We are not the slaves of the king but his subjects. 4. A man, however great he may be (por grande que sea), is but a *little-mote lost* in the immensity of (the) matter. 5. (c). On

the (al) seventh or eighth (38) day either (ó) this man or another will be here to (para) accompany the travelers. 6. (d). [It] is perfectly certain that [he] will not appeal to [a] higher court, because [he] has no money. 7. (f). The Creator repented that [He] had made (197) (the) man, but not that [He] had made (the) woman. 8. (g). Ferdinand, king of Aragon, and Isabella, his wife, were the first king-and-queen (17, a) of (the) united² Spain.¹ 9. (h). If [it] is true (verdad) that (the) speech is silver, (the) silence is often pure² gold.¹ 10. (269). Scarcely was established our Republic when the evils of (the) bossism began to (á) gnaw its vitals. 11. Either the bosses will have to (deberán) take a back-seat, or (the) popular² government¹ will be worse than the most absolute despotism. 12. (The) true religion can (209) not be found in any (ningún) book; it dwells only in the human² heart.¹

36

373. Study 275-277. Learn by heart the Spanish examples and review formation of tenses, 145.

1. (275, a). Brazil and Peru are countries of South America.
2. Helicon, [a] mountain of Boeotia (Beocia), was the dwelling-place of the Muses, to which (adonde) [it] was supposed (se suponía) the poets went to (á) seek their poetic² inspiration.¹
3. (b). [We] shall receive our friends Tuesdays and Fridays.
4. (c). I bought this wheat at seventy-five cents a bushel. 5. A return-ticket will cost five cents a mile. 6. (d). The elephant is the largest (mayor) and most intelligent of the quadrupeds. 7. For the wages of sin is death. 8. In an assembly of asses kicks are cheap. 9. (e). Captain Eulate commanded the (el) Vizcaya in the battle of Santiago. 10. (f). We Spaniards are beginning to (á) learn that a nation can not live and prosper by backward² methods.¹ 11. (276, a). A poet may (puede) have [a] master; but to (el) be [a] poet is the gift of nature. 12. Being the nephew of a prime-minister [he] arrogates-to-himself certain special² privileges.¹ 13. (b and c). Charles [the] Second, the son and

successor of Felipe [the] Fourth, known also as the *Bedeveled*, died (178) [an] old [man] at the age of thirty-nine. 14. One of the Spanish (35, 2d) cruisers bears the name of Pelayo, the first king of Asturias. 15. (*d*). The noise and hubbub of a great city distract [any] one who is accustomed to the quiet of the country. 16. Because of the blundering or ignorance of his lawyer [he] lost his suit. 17. (*f*). The American army in the Philippines is under the command of General Otis. 18. The (las) Cortes passed (votar) the budget at the last hour of the session. 19. (277, *a*). The beautiful is merely the flower of the useful. 20. We ought (213) to cultivate *what is good*, for the good is the path which leads to the true. 21. (*b*). The affair of last² week¹ and that of to-day are (es) the (lo) same.

37

374. Study 278-282, *a*, learning by heart the Spanish examples. Study also 162-164.

1. (278, *a*). One of my brothers-in-law is a lawyer, the other is a doctor; the former (87) lives in San Juan, the latter in Ponce. 2. Goya, [a] celebrated Spanish painter, was an imitator of Velázquez. 3. (Note). The rose is a voluptuous² and³ fragrant⁴ flower¹; but she is not the prettiest inhabitant of Flora's (13) kingdom. 4. (*b*). Echegaray, a Spanish dramatist, has written (222) many plays, but few good [ones]. 5. (*c*). Such a noble action merits our highest praise. 6. In such a case [we] can only (267, *b*) choose the lesser evil. 7. For a like reason they refused to (á) promise their support. 8. He entered the fruit-store and bought half [a] dozen oranges. 9. What a pity! Surely [he] knew what (cuales) would be the consequences. 10. (*d*). The American colonies rebelled in order not to suffer a foreign yoke. 11. I doubt whether (que) there is (haya) a more² eloquent³ man¹ in the whole country. 12. (*e*). Price of subscription: eight dollars a year, postage prepaid. 13. My house is (at) a short (poca) distance from here. 14. (*f*). There-was (pret.) a reception at (en) [the] palace

last-night. 15. He will not take part in the campaign, but (sino que) like Achilles (Aquiles) will sulk in his tent. 16. (281). [He] drank a glass of beer and ate a couple of crackers. 17. The way to eternal² life¹ is narrow, and few find it. 18. (a). He enjoys a good reputation in our neighborhood, but he has not many intimate² friends.¹ 19. You change your opinion so often that [it] is difficult [to] know from day to day (244, a) *what* you think. 20. (282). We went to the custom-house this morning to (á) see if our boxes had arrived. 21. Sit down; he will return to the office shortly, and I think the matter can be settled without difficulty. 22. (a). The fear of something after death makes us bear rather the ills [we] suffer than fly-to (buscar) others of which [we] know² nothing.¹

38

375. Study 283-285, learning the Spanish examples by heart. Study also 166-167.

NOTE.—From now on, the student must determine for himself whether the subject pronouns are to be expressed or omitted. The rule is to omit them when they are not necessary for clearness or emphasis.

1. (283, a). The professor reproves the students because they do not behave themselves (150) well. 2. The soldiers defend their country against its enemies. 3. (b). Now (ya) I remember that I sent Joseph to the post-office an² hour³ ago.¹ 4. He meets his friend John and consoles him in his affliction. 5. (c). What I don't understand is, how they killed *him* and not the other [man]. 6. Those two men hate each other as only mortal⁴ enemies³ can¹ hate.² 7. (d). He does not find any one who is (está) disposed to (á) do it. 8. He who strives to (á) please everybody does not please anybody. 9. (e). He considers vain all my hopes. 10. The orphan calls his uncle father. 11. Flattery makes the fool vain. 12. (f). The verb governs (rige) another verb when the latter is [the] direct² object¹ of the former (87). 13. The calm follows the

storm. 14. (284, *a*). A man may (*puede*) mend his broken² reputation,¹ but his neighbors will not fail to (*de*) keep their (71) eyes on (*sobre*) the fracture. 15. The hunter is he (88, 2*d*) who caught the hare. 16. (*b*). If the army has not good officers, it can not gain victories. 17. (*c*). With fifty men he attacked two hundred (38) horsemen and routed them. 18. (*d*). The Gypsies stole the child from his parents (17, *a*). 19. The Moor enticed away (*llevársele*) from (*á*) Brabantio his daughter Desdemona. 20. (*e*). We cross the Pyrenees going (214) from France to Spain. 21. (*f*). A misogynist hates women. 22. (The) ancient Rome produced orators, poets, historians, and statesmen.

39

376. Commit to memory the Spanish examples in 286–293. Study 170, 171, 172.

1. An honest man is the noblest work of God. 2. Many men pass life chasing rainbows and despising the precious jewels which lie (*les quedan*) at the[ir] feet. 3. (287). The teacher and his wife are very charitable. 4. The pink and the violet are both pretty. 5. (Note). He showed a cheek and boldness very unusual. 6. (288). Iron and copper are not so precious as (27, *d*) gold and silver. 7. The mother and the daughter are both charming. 8. (289). The modern languages, French, Spanish, and Italian, are derived from the Latin, and are called Romanic² languages.¹ 9. (290). The lion, the tiger, and the hyena are carnivorous, but the horse, the ox, and the sheep are herbivorous. 10. (Note). These peaches and apples are delicious. 11. Some Europeans think (164) that American³ manners¹ and customs² are bold. 12. (292). The library has a reading-room ninety feet long, seventy wide, and forty-five high (38). 13. (170). This dog barks and shows his teeth (71), but he does not bite. 14. (171). Return to-morrow; I shall have more time, and we will discuss the question. 15. I have ransacked the whole house and have not been able (210) to

find it (lo). 16. Sugar, salt, and many minerals dissolve in water and other liquids. 17. (172). This room smells of (á) tobacco; open the windows and give (189) us [some] fresh² air.¹

40

377. Learn 294–300, Note. Commit to memory the Spanish examples. Learn also 173, 174, and 176.

NOTE.—The student should now pay particular attention to the rhetorical position of the words of the Spanish sentence and imitate the same in writing the exercises.

1. (295, *a*). The flock remained in the fold all (the) night. 2. The rabble applauds the vaporings of the demagogue. 3. (Note). But the greater part do not admit the possibility of his success. 4. Half of the flock fled before (ante) the wolves. 5. (*b*). A detachment of cavalry and of infantry advanced toward our left² wing.¹ 6. [A] crowd of people (personas) came (202) to (á) congratulate the old admiral. 7. (*b*, Note). [There] came to my office a dozen mendicants asking-for (181) bread. 8. The congress of South-American² nations¹ will meet in the city of Mexico next year. 9. (296). The revolution of the earth on (sobre) its axis, and its revolution around the sun are different. 10. Venus and Mars move in orbits of different² dimensions.¹ 11. (*a*). When we opened the door [there] came-up from the cellar a cold² draught¹ and a disagreeable² odor.¹ 12. The opening and closing [of] the eyes is involuntary. 13. (Note). The applause and evident satisfaction of the audience pleased the² actors³ much.¹ 14. (297). Neither the one nor the other obtained the place in the custom-house. 15. Neither the infantry nor the cavalry could cross the river. 16. (*a*). Either the Democrat or the Republican will be elected president. 17. (299). We, who have lost all our possessions, are (estar) not discouraged. 18. (300). We are the ones who deserve the honor of the victory. 19. (174). If they regret it as much as (242, *b*) I regret it, neither they nor I (297) will consent to

(en) repeat the experiment. 20. They did not consent to (en) it (44), because they suspected his motives. 21. (176). He who acquires a practical² knowledge¹ of a language learns it [by] speaking with the natives. 22. Children (275, *d*) acquire their native² language¹ in this way (233, *c*), but only after many years.

41

378. Study 301–302, Remark. Learn by heart Spanish examples. Study also 177–179.

1. (177). How-many hours do you sleep daily?—Usually I sleep seven hours, going-to-bed at eleven and getting-up at six. 2. Did you sleep well last night?—Yes, I went-to-bed very early and slept like a top, for I was (139) tired. 3. (178). The good Christian dies, hoping [to] awake in eternal² life.¹ 4. If they die on (en) the field of battle in defense of their country, [they] will not have died in vain. 5. The wounded died for (por) lack of care. 6. (Note). He was killed by a pistol-shot fired by it is not known (no se sabe) whom. 7. (301, *a*). How long have you (ustedes) been living in this city? 8. We have been living here for (desde hace) seven years, but not always in the same house. 9. (*b*). The bugle sounded and our cavalry advanced, attacked the right² flank¹ of the Moors, and retired, not losing a single man. 10. (*c*). I shall finish this task before night; if not, I shall remain later. 11. (302, *a*). When he was studying at (en) the University, he used to work fifteen hours daily. 12. He was dying, and [it] was impossible [to] do anything (nada) to (para) relieve him. 13. (*b*). They were beginning to (á) ascend the hill, when the besiegers opened fire. 14. (Note). We were returning, when we saw a squadron of horsemen trying to get between us and our camp. 15. (*c*). The large projectiles, which the gunners were hurling² [at] us,¹ as (mientras) we were advancing did not do (pret. 197) us any² damage.¹ 16. (*d*). The battle was ended. The field was strewn with (de) dead and wounded and presented a horrible² aspect.¹ The surgeons were running from place to

place (244, *a*) alleviating the sufferings as best they could (imp. 210). 17. (*e*). At dawn (243, *a*) of the following day the enemy were retreating toward the South. 18. (*f*). Before the arrival of our reinforcements they could dictate the conditions of our surrender. 19. (*g*). [It] had² already¹ been (*habido*) five days that they had been retreating, and we concluded that (*h*) we should not overtake them for (*antes de*) several days even [*by*] using our best cavalry.

42

379. Study 303-306. Commit to memory Spanish examples. Study also 180-183.

1. (303). The prince took the casket into his hand and contemplated it [*a*] long time (*rato*). Then he opened it, put his (*la*) hand into it (44) and took-out a snood which he kissed passionately. 2. (304). He has never (230) ceased to (*de*) regret the folly of his youth. He admits that he has spent more than (27, *b*, Note) one fortune during his lifetime, and for (*desde*) many years he has had (138, 3) to depend on (*de*) the charity of his relatives. Even to-day he has written to them letters, asking (181) aid. 3. (305). He had inherited a large fortune from an uncle of his (67), but he had spent it all before completing (*inf.*) his twenty-fifth (= five) year(s). 4. Shortly after, his father had died, leaving (*legar*) him another fortune which he had wasted in less than (27, *b*, Note) five years. 5. He then went to (*á*) live in the country with a maiden² aunt¹; but this quiet bucolic² life¹ was not to (*de*) his taste (*agrado*), and already he had been meditating (*b*) for (*desde*) some time on (*en*) an act of desperation which (*el que*) would have ended his shameful² life,¹ when I happened to (*á*) run-across him. 6. He was (139) much dejected and revealed to me his purpose. 7. He asked me for advice, and I tried to dissuade him [*from*] it (*lo*); but he insisted that (*en que*) he did not wish to live any-longer (*más*). 8. Then I changed tactics and told (195) him (that) I thought (that) he was right (138, 2). 9. I cited the example of Werther, alleging that suicide would be good for

(para) him also, since *he* might (pudiera) become (226, 5) the subject of a novel, and that moreover his friends and particularly his relatives' would rejoice at (de) his death; and finally that he would make a beautiful corpse. 10. [I] even induced him to (á) buy a pistol, and we fixed the day for the great event; but when (306) the day had come and after we had made all the preparations, his courage forsook him and he declared that he was not going to (á) kill himself to (para) please others. 11. From (desde) that (aquel) day he has never talked again (227) of suicide.

43

380. Study 307-311, *a*, learning the Spanish examples by heart. Review 180-183 and study 184-186.

1. I will ask pardon of (á) you, if you think (that) I ought to do it. 2. Yes, ask it [of] me; if not, I shall demand satisfaction on the field of (the) honor. 3. And he asked it [of] him, laughing; for, said he (302, *i*), according to Horace, we may (210) tell the truth in-a-laughing-strain (gerund). 4. Certainly; but when a man laughs, [it] is not always [a] sign that (de que) he is telling the truth; for he may be joking. 5. The wicked [man] flees, even when no-one pursues him. 6. Demosthenes fled from the battle of Chæroneæ, and defended his action [by] saying: "A man who runs away will be able (210) to fight another time." 7. The professor will instruct his class in the most important international² laws.¹ 8. The question of the Porto-Rican² tariff¹ will be argued shortly before (ante) the Supreme² Court¹ of the United States. 9. (307). Who can be knocking at the door? 10. It can not be three [o'clock] yet. 11. (308). We shall have received the news before (268) he returns (vuelta). 12. He will have been executed if the pardon does not arrive soon. 13. (*a*). Who can have told it to him (61, *a*)? He can not have guessed it. 14. (309, *a*). He declared that they would die before surrendering (322). 15. I was assured (154, *a*) that you would discount the note at six per cent (243, *d*). 16. (*b*). Yes, I would discount it, even at five per cent,

if it were properly indorsed, but I can not accept *that* (82) man ; he is bankrupt. 17. (c). He was crazy, of course, or he would not have done it. 18. (310, a). They told (195) me that the bank would have honored the draft. 19. (311).* "Come (2d sing.) here, little-girl," said the bishop ; "tell me where God is, and I will give thee an orange." — "Tell (usted) me where [He] is not, Monseñor, and I will give you two." 20. Bring me my overcoat and gloves. — Where are they? — I don't know ; look-for them [for] me. 21. Let (que) him go away ; I don't wish to see him. 22. Let us keep our word, although they have not kept theirs (73). 23. Abandon all hope, ye (44) who enter here. 24. Do (ustedes) me the favor to (de) pay (prestar) attention while I am talking. 25. (a). And lead (meter) us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. 26. And when ye fast, be not (p. 81) as the hypocrites.

44

381. Study 312–315, *b*, committing to memory the Spanish examples. Study also 188–188, Note.

1. (313). The general orders the first corps to advance as far as (258) the river. 2. We shall entreat them (44) to delay the matter for the present (235, a). 3. My attorney will insist that (en que) the surplus be equally distributed amongst the shareholders. 4. (b). The court will not permit the accused to give bail. 5. The court of appeals decides that the State shall refund the bail. 6. The defendant prays (pedir, 181) that the court dismiss the suit for want of jurisdiction. 7. (c). The plaintiff desires that he be granted (154, a) sufficient time to (para) procure the sworn² statement¹ of an absent² witness.¹ 8. The judge regrets that he can not extend the time (plazo). 9. For that reason (309, b) the plaintiff fears (that) he may lose his suit ; but in that case he will enter-an appeal. 10. (d). It is a disastrous² failure¹ ; the liabilities are (es) enormous, and we doubt whether the assets will suffice to (para)

* Read over Spanish of Exercise 21.

pay the depositors. 11. The board-of-directors denies that there is (137, *b*, 3) [any] fraud or misappropriation of funds, and we ourselves (53) do not think that such a thing is probable. 12. (*e*). The creditors believe it is necessary that a receiver be appointed, and it is possible that a meeting may be called to-day. 13. If it is desirable that this (*esto*) be done, it is very important that the meeting be held at once. 14. (315, *a*). There is a Spanish proverb which says: 'There is no evil which lasts³ a hundred¹ (39, *c*) years.'² 15. We have not in the store a hat which will fit you better. 16. (*b*). I want a suitor who will love my daughter for (*por*) herself (53) and not for her money. 17. If that man invents a watch that will wind itself up, he will have solved the problem of perpetual² motion.¹

45

382. Study 316–320, learning by heart the Spanish sentences. Study also 268.

1. In order that you may know the condition of the company, I have arranged that the members of the board and the manager shall be here to-morrow in my office. 2. I shall be here without fail unless something unforeseen shall happen. 3. (317). As to the other matter, if you will come to my house this afternoon at five [o'clock], we will discuss it thoroughly. 4. I shall be there at the hour agreed-upon, if the board shall have finished its deliberations; if not, a little later. 5. (318). We demanded that he should be treated justly (313). 6. He preferred that we should start that afternoon (*b*). 7. He wished him not to consent to it (*c*). 8. We doubted whether it would snow that night (*d*). 9. It was a pity he could not come (*e*). 10. He did not think there was a man who equaled him (315, *a*). 11. He was seeking a servant who would not get-drunk (*b*). 12. I should be back (*cond.*) before he arrived (316). 13. I should have been satisfied, provided he had finished it that day. 14. However rich he might have been, he would not have been contented. 15. (319). If we have nothing *better* (*más*) to do (138, 3) at night (246, *a*), we play cards, chess,

or dominoes. 16. If we had nothing better to do, we used to play cards, chess, or dominoes. 17. If you (shall) go-out to-day, have the goodness to buy [some] pens, paper, envelopes, postal-cards, and pencils; our supply has² almost¹ run-out. 18. He assured me that, if we should write him a letter on arriving (323, c) here, he would answer it by return-mail. 19. If Congress had passed a law dissolving the trust-companies, there would have been (137, b, 3) great rejoicing on (por) the part of those (los) who did not belong to these companies.

46

383. Study 321-324, learning by heart the Spanish examples.

1. To think of (en, 322) organizing a company without charter or (ni) by-laws is folly! 2. To women is imputed (61, b) as a great fault the frequent changing of opinion; but it is not so (55) according-to the proverb, which says: [it] is [the part] of the wise (pl.) to change [their] mind. 3. To preserve one's life is the first law of nature; consequently to commit-suicide is unnatural. 4. We should drink water with much more pleasure if it were [a] sin to (el) drink it. 5. (322). A minute after dying, man's soul will be what (89, 3d) it was a minute before being born. 6. He rejected my petition without reading it. 7. He thinks of (en) establishing a business-house in this city and opening a branch-office in Caibarién. 8. (323, a). But how carry-on a commission-business of that kind without having [a] large (buen) capital? 9. (b). That (82) man act as head-of-the-firm? Nothing could be more absurd. 10. (c). On seeing him stop at the door, I rose and welcomed him. 11. When going-to-bed last night I forgot to (de) close one of my windows and caught-a-cold during the night. 12. (d). If I had not raised my hands, the robbers would have killed me. 13. (324, a, 1). Metaphysics is the art of going-astray with [a] method. 14. Do me the favor to pass me those scissors. 15. He had the misfortune to lose his

parents when he was very young. 16. The desire of performing his duties conscientiously made (imp.) him go-out often, when he should have (213) stayed at home. 17. (a, 2). A movement of concentration from (desde) the Rio Grande toward (al) Cape Horn is not difficult to observe. 18. Yes, but it is to be taken into account that paper-money is merely a species of promissory-note and has no intrinsic value. 19. (b). His disposition to re-assert his individuality cost him his position. 20. (c). Always it will be for me a consolation to know that she does not belong to another. 21. It is idle to waste words with such a man. 22. It is honorable to die for one's (la) country. 23. It is sad to hate the person who has saved our life.

47

384. Study 325-326. Review formation of tenses, 145.

1. The undersigned does not remember to have heard used (usarse) the words: *dude*, *crank*, or *humbug*. 2. I knew that if (319) he did not abstain from drinking and going (andar) in bad company, he would die some day by a running²-noose.¹ 3. They did not cease before midnight to discuss the question which they were considering. 4. He will not fail to make-your-hair-stand-on-end by his pranks and inconsiderate² actions.¹ 5. He excused me from witnessing the parade because of the inclemency of the weather. 6. She swears that she will give him the mitten, if he does not propose shortly. 7. I doubt that he will try to support his misfortune with greater resignation. 8. (326). The bookkeeper endeavors to unravel the complicated² account,¹ but he does not succeed in doing it. 9. He is learning to keep (llevar) books *in order to* (325) aid his father in his business. 10. The young-man who aspires to master the intricacies of bookkeeping has to (138, 3) learn at (desde) the outset the fundamental distinction between debit and credit. 11. I will venture to suggest that, if it begins to rain, we ought (213) to invite the strangers to seek-shelter under our roof. 12. He gave me to understand that he

had decided to turn-into-cash all his personalty-and-realty and invest the proceeds in government-bonds, which (los cuales) he can now buy at par. 13. I am told (154) that he is getting ready to speculate-in-stocks. 14. Yes, a friend of his (67), who has been "bearing"-and-"bulling"-the-market and won a good-deal-of money, has induced him to try (buscar) [his] fortune. 15. What folly! Still, it does not surprise me. You know the old adage: *every hog to his sty*. His father lost a large fortune in the stock-exchange. 16. Or we might express it by two² other¹ sayings, namely: *they are wolves of the same flock*, and: *he who (quien) goes (188) with the wolves learns to (à) howl*.

48

385. Study 327-327, b. Review auxiliary verbs, 136.

1. (327). I am accustomed to go to the produce-exchange every day, but since the panic I am not buying nor selling; but when the crisis passes, I shall begin again (227) my operations.
2. It suffices to say that he is a member of the Chamber-of-Commerce and he ought to know what (cuales) commercial-paper (pl.) it is proper to buy.
3. He says he did not advise to make the purchase.
4. We have heard it said (327, a) that the Board-of-Directors of the Central Railroad does not expect to pay the coupons this year.
5. Do you know why? — Yes, on account of the falling-off of the earnings. Last year the earnings were big, but since then the losses are such that they have wiped-out all the surplus.
6. It is [a] great pity, because our city-government has just (216) bought for its sinking-fund a considerable batch of the shares of this road.
7. The mayor and councilmen determined to buy them (44) in spite of the protest of the daily-papers.
8. I asked the mayor this morning how he intended to explain this in his campaign for reëlection; but he only shrugged-his-shoulders and did not condescend to answer me.
9. It is better to hold-one's-tongue than to excuse oneself; for he who (quien) excuses himself accuses himself.
10. He deserves to be beaten

and he will need to "orate" a good-deal before (antes que, 316) he will succeed [in] convincing the people that (de que) he could not have prevented the purchase. 11. It seems to be probable that he did not venture to oppose the councilmen, fearing not to receive their support in the primary election. 12. I had offered to go to visit my friend in his hotel, but he preferred to come to see me in mine (73). 13. We promised them (44) to send (poner) a telegram and regretted not to be able to do it. 14. I send herewith a draft in payment of my subscription to the *Critical*² *Review*¹; please acknowledge-reception.

49

386. Study 328-331, c. Review modal auxiliaries, 209.

1. (328). The manuscript existing in the National² Museum¹ of Mexico contains all the poems. 2. Obeying the (al) mandate of the Constitution, I send herewith my annual message. 3. Two sailors arrived at Boston coming from Newport. 4. (329, a). Having killed the bear, he fell fainting from (por) loss of blood. 5. Having missed the train, he had to wait until (á que) another³ should¹ go-out.² 6. (b). By moving in elliptical² orbits,¹ the² sun³ being¹ in one of the foci, the planets are nearer their primary when they are in their perihelion than when in their aphelion. 7. The radius-vector of a planet passing over equal areas in equal portions of time, the radius²-vector³ being¹ a line drawn from the sun to the planet, the planet must (debe de) go faster when it is near the sun than when it is more distant. 8. Having given the first² two¹ laws of Kepler, we shall now give the third, the latter (87) not being so easy to understand (324, a, 2) as the former. 9. Here you² have¹ the third law: the squares of the times of revolutions of the planets around the sun are proportional to the cubes of their mean² distances¹ from the sun. 10. These laws laid the foundation of modern² astronomy,¹ Newton³ completing¹ them² by his grand discovery of universal² gravitation.¹ 11. (d). And putting his hand into his (71) pocket he took-

out a small coin. 12. (330). Having been routed in the first attack, the enemy, reënforced by two regiments, fell upon our left center with renewed impetus. 13. (331, *a*). The religious ceremony having been finished, there will be a reception at (en) the residence of the bridegroom's (13) mother. 14. (*b*). After having written the letter I went (325) to put it into the box.

XIII

SPANISH READINGS

387. Study 47-50 and 332-332, *m*.

NOTE.—The small figures set to the right of the Spanish proverbs indicate that their English equivalents will be found at the end of the ESCENAS. The student, however, should be required to work out their literal meaning by means of the vocabulary.

ESCENAS SOCIALES

I

(Don Benito (Benedict) encuentra á su amigo, don Diego (James)
en la calle.)

DON B. ¡Hola, don Diego! ¿Qué tal (sigue V.)?

DON D. Muy bien, para servir á V. Y ese cuerpo ¿cómo está?

DON B. No mal, gracias. ¿Cómo se hallan (están) en su casa?

DON D. Tal cual; sólo que mi mujer está un poco indispuesta desde ayer. Tiene un resfriado y le duele la cabeza.

DON B. Lo siento mucho. Quizás sea trancazo. Se me ha dicho que desde algunos días se han declarado unos cuantos casos en la ciudad.

DON D. Es posible que sea trancazo lo que tiene mi esposa, pero pienso que no. Los síntomas no lo indican.

Por lo menos espero que no lo sea, porque es una terrible enfermedad, y parece que se va poniendo más peligroso y mortífero cada año.

DON B. Sí; sobretodo para los ancianos. Usted sabe que mi pobre padre (q. e. g. e.) murió de él el invierno pasado. La humedad de nuestro clima no permite esperar su pronta extirpación, una vez que echa raíces aquí.

DON D. Tiene V. razón, visto que los médicos son absolutamente impotentes para curarlo. La última vez que tuve el trancazo, probé todos los remedios que me sugirieron mi médico y mis amigos, resultando que yo fuí durante meses enteros una especie de botica andante, siendo el hazmerreír de todo mi vecindario. Y lo gracioso del caso es que no hallé alivio alguno antes de la llegada del verano. — ¡Ah! hé ahí que viene un caballero que conozco, el señor Martínez. — Buenos días, señor Martínez, (*ofreciéndole la mano*) ¿cómo lo pasa V. esta mañana?

EL SEÑOR M. Excelentemente bien, para servir á usted. ¿Y usted?

DON D. Yo no podría mejorar de salud, gracias. (*Volviéndose á don B.*). Este caballero es un amigo mío. Permítame se lo presente. — Señor Martínez, tengo el honor de presentar á usted mi amigo, el señor don Benito Pérez y Sellés, de quien V. ha oído hablar sin duda.

DON B. Caballero, celebro muchísimo la ocasión de conocer á usted.

EL SEÑOR M. Y yo tengo mucho gusto en conocer á usted, caballero. Puedo decir que le conozco indirectamente, para decirlo así, siendo su señor padre corresponsal de nuestra casa de banca.

DON B. Ah! ¿V. es banquero?

EL SEÑOR M. Sí señor; tenemos un banco de depósitos en esta ciudad y sucursales en otras ciudades. Yo soy el

gobernador. Si V. tiene operaciones bancarias que ajustar, seremos muy felices en servir á usted.

DON B. Le agradezco á V. infinito. Aprovecharé su buena oferta, si tuviere ocasión de hacerlo.

EL SEÑOR M. (*mirando su reloj*). Son las nueve y media ; tengo que marcharme. Pues, caballeros, ¡qué ustedes lo pasen bien! Me llevo la esperanza, don Benito, de que volveremos á reanudar nuestro conocimiento. Reconózcame V. por su servidor. ¡Adiós, caballeros!

DON B. y DON D. ¡Vaya V. con Dios, caballero!

DON D. Es un perfecto caballero y muy hombre de mundo. Hice su conocimiento hace dos años, cuando estábamos veraneando mi mujer y yo en las montañas. — Eso me hace pensar en que se aproxima el verano. ¿Adónde va V. á veranear este año?

DON B. No sabemos todavía. Todo lo dejo á la discreción de mi mujer, opinando que es, si no la sola, á lo menos, la mejor filosofía para un hombre á quien gusta la paz y tranquilidad. Los maridos nos lisonjeamos de que gobernamos en nuestro reynecito, la casa ; pero nada y nada. No somos sino tenientes gobernadores. La mujer sale siempre con la suya. Por consiguiente, cuando llega el verano, yo digo á mi *media naranja* : “¿Adónde quieres tú ir á veranear?” — Si opta por las montañas, no me opongo ; si prefiere ir á orillas de la mar, la digo : ¡*corriente* ! Como nuestro primer padre, Adán, me cómo el fruto que se me ofrece.

DON D. Por supuesto piensa su señora que V. es un marido modelo. — Se me ocurre el cuento del filósofo francés á quien se vino á decir que un incendio se había declarado en su casa y respondió : “Eso no me importa ; vaya á decírselo á mi mujer. Yo no me mezclo jamás en *los asuntos de familia*.”

DON B. ¡Ja! ¡ja! ¡ja! Eso es impagable. Aquel hombre había alcanzado el verdadero nirvana de los indios. Aun Sócrates, con toda su abnegación de sí mismo, no llevó su filosofía tan lejos; porque volvía á casa de vez en cuando sólo por el placer de hacerse reprender por su *cara mitad*. — Pues ¿por qué está V. tan meditabundo?

DON D. Estoy pensando en lo que V. me ha referido. Dudo que esa filosofía sea la mejor, sobretudo cuando recuerdo lo que ha dicho otro filósofo, á saber, que la mujer es como la dinamita, porque jamás se sabe lo que hará, conocidas las circunstancias.

DON B. Dispénsese V., amigo mío. Temo que V. no me haya comprendido. — Cuando yo dije que concedía á mi mujer una licencia completa, hablaba sólo de los asuntos domésticos. Casa afuera yo mantengo mi autoridad y derechos. Nunca permito á mi mujer que se meta en mis negocios. Eso sería volver el mundo patas arriba. (*Dan las diez en la torre de la iglesia de Nuestra Señora.*) ¡Diablo mil veces! ¡Cuánto tiempo hemos estado charlando! ¡Qué habladores somos los hombres! Me voy con la música á otra parte!¹ Salí á hacer compras para mi mujer, y estoy seguro de que me reñirá cuando vuelva á casa. ¡Abur! — V. vendrá al Círculo esta noche ¿verdad?

DON D. Sí que vendré, y acabaremos el partido de billar que comenzamos ayer y no acabamos.

DON B. Eso sí, lo haremos. Hasta la vista. Póngame a los pies de su señora. (*Sale*).

DON D. (*Solo*). ¡Qué gurrumino es aquel hombre! Á que en casa no dice esta boca es mía.² Me hace gracia, cuando habla de su autoridad de casa afuera. Por aquel lado adelanta como el cangrejo.³ (*Reparando en una*

señora que viene por la calle). ¡Caramba! Allí está mi mujer que viene. Voy yo también tomar las de Villadiego.⁴ (*Se va á todo escape*).

II.

388. Review 47-50 and 332-332, m.

(Una dama, la señora María Mendoza de Auñón, está haciendo visitas, y su coche pára delante de una casa grande, la de la señora Isabel Díaz de Blanco. Se apea y se acerca al pórtico donde está el chico de la casa con su chucho. El perro se levanta erizándose.)

LA DAMA. Chico, tu perro va á morderme.

EL CHICO. No señora. No muerde sino cuando come.

LA DAMA. ¡Pero si me muestra los dientes!

EL CHICO. Eso no lo niego; y si V. tuviera dientes tan blancos y bellos como los de mi perro, los mostraría también.

LA DAMA. Eres tú un mal muchachito. — ¿Está tu señora madre?

EL CHICO. Sí, señora; está con otra señora; pero dudo que esté para usted. Voy á preguntárselo.

LA DAMA. No; espera. Voy á llamar yo misma. (*Empuja el botón y suena el timbre eléctrico. La criada viene á abrir*). ¿Está en casa la señora?

LA CRIADA. Sí, señora; tenga V. la bondad de entrar. (*Trae la tarjeta á su ama, quien viene á encontrar á la visita, dándole la mano, diciendo*):

LA SRA. DÍAZ. Sea V. la bienvenida, doña María. Dichosos los ojos que ven á usted. ¿Cómo ha estado V. desde la última vez que tuve el gusto de verla?

LA SRA. MENDOZA. Medianamente, mil gracias. ¿Y cómo se encuentra V., doña Isabel?

LA SRA. D. Oh! en cuanto á mí, yo estoy siempre

buena. Venga que la quiero presentar á mi buena amiga, la señora Oñate. — Señora Oñate, tengo el gusto de presentar á V. la señora doña María Mendoza de Auñón.

LA SRA. O. (*Levantándose*). Á mí me es muy grato hacer su conocimiento, señora Mendoza.

LA SRA. M. Muchísimas gracias. Me considero muy dichosa en hacer el de usted.

LA SRA. D. Pero, siéntense VV., señoras, y continuemos nuestra plática. — Hablábamos del baile de anoche. No tuvimos el honor de ver á V., doña María.

LA SRA. M. No, no podía venir, porque tenía á mi hermana muy mala.

LA SRA. D. ¿Su señorita hermana estaba mala? ¿Qué tenía?

LA SRA. M. Tenía una tos y gran calentura, y estaba obligada á hacer cama.

LA SRA. D. Lo ~~siento~~ ^{siento} muchísimo y espero que se halle mejor hoy.

LA SRA. M. Por supuesto. Á no estarlo ella, yo no estaría aquí. — Ustedes hablaban del baile de la ministra, me decía V. ¿Fué tan frecuentado como de costumbre?

LA SRA. O. Que sí, que sí, y aun más, visto que revestía más importancia que de ordinario. Se dió la función especialmente en honor de la segunda hija de los ministros. Fué su primer baile, y era un contento verla, rodeada, como lo estaba, por jóvenes y ancianos, grandes y pequeños, bailando como Terpsícore y sonriendo y ruborizándose como Aurora.

LA SRA. D. Pero V. da en el lirismo, amiga mía.

LA SRA. O. ¡Qué mucho, si me corre en las venas! Mi pobre padre (que la santa gloria haya) era un poeta de los más sublimes. Además, la ocasión hace al ladrón, como se dice. ¿Quien pudiera menos de entusiasmarse

hablando de aquella divina criatura, hermosa como un ángel de la gloria.

LA SRA. D. Dale con Juana. — Naturalmente yo no quiero decir que la chiquilla no sea todo lo que V. dice; sólo que lo expresaría de otra manera.

LA SRA. M. ¿Y esa Juliana estuvo en el baile?

LA SRA. O. Por sabido, con su narigón y ojos de bitoque. ¡Jesús, que coqueta! ¡Y cuántas locuras cometió anoche!

LA SRA. M. ¡Válgame Dios! Parece mentira que á su edad no tenga todavía la muela del juicio.

LA SRA. D. Sí, sí, la tiene, pero es postiza. (*Todas ríen á carcajadas*).

LA SRA. M. Pero chanzas aparte, señoras; ¿no han echado VV. de ver que todos sus dientes superiores son artificiales?

LA SRA. D. Cabal! Se ríe por nada, como ustedes saben, pero jamás abre la boca, temerosa de perder su dentadura postiza, que no la viene bien.

LA SRA. O. Eso puedo yo afirmar con certidumbre y al mismo tiempo relatar á ustedes un incidente que de seguro las hará reír. — Estábamos yo y nuestra amiga en una reunión de media docena de personas algunas semanas há. Alguien contó un chiste de lo más ridículo. Á la pobre de Juliana se la olvidaron los dientes, y rió á mandíbula batiente. Cayeron en la alfombra en donde jugaba un gatito, que pensando eran un ratón se los asió y fué al patio á todo correr. Siendo de noche, cuando, según el refrán, todos los gatos son pardos, tuvo el criado mucho que hacer antes de que pudiera devolver á la pobrecita sus preciosos dientes. Entre tanto ella estaba entre la espada y la pared;⁵ porque, aunque tiene malas pulgas, como es sabido, no podía ni quejarse ni mostrarnos los dientes, no

teniéndolos, ni en fin abrir una boca, que, aun con su dentadura de á cien reales, con perdón sea dicho, deja mucho de ser encantadora.

LA SRA. M. El cuentecito es divertido ; pero baste de Juliana y volvamos al baile. ¿Qué traje lucía la señora Aguilar de Cerón ?

LA SRA. D. Oh ! el de siempre por supuesto. No tiene otro que el que compró hace dos años. Sólo que el viejo trapo ha sido reformado por segunda vez este invierno, queriendo imitar los de última moda.

LA SRA. O. No puede hacer otra cosa, como que su marido es cesante desde dos años y medio, y no hay perro ni gato que no sepa que está, como la manga de un chaleco, completamente á seco. Y cuando uno no tiene monises, su mujer no puede pintar la mona.

LA SRA. M. Ni el *águila* tampoco, si ustedes quieren excusar el juego de palabra. Cerón es inimitable como callejero. Se le encuentra en todas partes buscando influencia política, según dice. Azotar calles puede ser agradable para quien ama la ociosidad, pero no hace cocer el puchero.

LA SRA. D. ¡Oh que no ! En estos días de Dios se necesita mucho dinero para proveer á los gastos ordinarios y extraordinarios que exige nuestra vida de alta presión.

LA SRA. M. Es verdad ; y no comprendo que la señora Aguilar se hubiese divertido tanto anoche. Dicen que bailó, sonrió y chanceó como la que más.

LA SRA. O. ¿Por qué no ? Diz que la invitación es señal de que su marido será rehabilitado dentro de poco.

LA SRA. M. ¡Á que no ! Eso es imposible. El ministro actual tiene tantos amigos á quienes lo debe todo, que no puede pensar en dar un puesto á uno á quien no debe nada.

LA SRA. O. No le hace. El arma formidable que más garantiza el triunfo en las lides políticas, dice mi esposo, es la osadía, y al señor Cerón no le falta aquella arma. . . . (*Entra el señor Blanco*).

EL SR. B. Á los pies de ustedes, señoras.

LA SRA. O. Beso á V. la mano, caballero.

LA SRA. M. ¿Qué tal sigue V.; don José? ¿V. vuelve de su despacho?

EL SR. B. No, señora. Hoy es día festivo. Yo estaba en la habitación vecina.

LA SRA. O. Entonces, V. nos acechaba. Quien escucha su mal oye.⁶

EL SR. B. Dispénsese V., señora; yo no oí mi mal, sino el de mis amigos. ¿Pluguiera á Dios que no fuese así! (*Todas se miran desconcertadas, y don José, como si hablara para sí, sigue diciendo*): Es una gran lástima que las malas lenguas no sean postizas como los dientes de nuestros amigos. En ese caso podría suceder que cayeran al suelo al reír los *hombres*, y minino, á no ser por el veneno que contienen, pudiera comérselas.

LA SRA. D. No te pasas de cortés hoy, amigo mío.

EL SR. B. ¿Y por qué no, gloria mía? — Yo hablaba de los *hombres*. No hay malas lenguas mujeriles. Ustedes las mujeres son todas ángeles. (*Aparte*). Sólo que en la mujer no se sabe donde el ángel finaliza y el diablo principia.

LA CRIADA. (*Entra y dice á su ama*): Señora, la merienda está servida. (*Sale*).

LA SRA. D. (*Á las sras. M. y O.*). Dispénsennos. ¿Ustedes gustan, verdad?

LAS SRAS. M. Y O. (*Levantándose*). Muchas gracias. Estábamos para marcharnos. ¡Que aproveche á VV.! Y trate V., doña Isabel, de corregir á ese mal hombre.

EL SR. B. Digan VV. más bien : *á ese mal salvaje.*

LA SRA. D. Oh, mi marido no es malo. Perro que ladra no muerde jamás. — Pues ¡vayan VV. con Dios!

LAS SRAS. M. Y O. ¡Y queden VV. con Dios! Eso no lo decimos con lenguas postizas, señor don Satírico Blanco. (*Salen*).

EL SR. B. ¡Dios mío! ¡Qué mujeres tan comadreras! Y yo no comprendo, querida, que tú puedas consentir en tijerear con aquellas atolondradas.

LA SRA. D. Oh! la mujer que no chismeas no vive. Además, quien con los lobos anda, á aullar se enseña.⁷ Mejor sería no estar en el mundo que no saber lo que sucede en él. La vida mujeril es tan estrecha, tan vacía que moriríamos las mujeres, si no pudiésemos poner la lengua en nuestros amigos. En cambio, nos pagan en la misma moneda, y así somos tales para cuales.

EL SR. B. (*Aparte*). Hay un fondo de verdad en lo que dice. (*Alto*). ¡Qué parlera eres tú!

LA SRA. D. Yo no hago sino imitar el ejemplo de las que conmigo frecuentan la alta sociedad. Dime con quién andas, y te diré quién eres.⁸ En todas partes cuecen habas.⁹ ¿Cómo puedes esperar que tu mujer sea distinta de las con quienes se acompaña? Y además, yo confieso que el charlar de vez en cuando con mis amigas es para mí un pasatiempo sumamente grato, sea lo que fuere el sujeto de la conversación. — ¡Ea José! tú oíste lo que dijo la Mendoza acerca de su ausencia del baile ¿verdad? — Pretendió que su hermana estaba enferma; pero nada de eso. La verdadera causa era de que no recibió invitación.

EL SR. B. ¿Y por qué no la recibió, vista su posición social?

LA SRA. D. Voy á decirte lo que me contó la señora Oñate.

EL SR. B. Ahora no. Tengo un hambre de todos los diablos, y si no cómo en el instante (*haciéndola caricias*), habrá aquí repugnantes escenas de canibalismo. Vamos á merendar, y tú me lo contarás comiendo. (*Empuja las puertas corredizas y se ve el comedor.*)

III.

389. DICHOS, PEPE (JOE) Y EL PERRO.

(Padre y madre se sientan en la mesa. Pepe entra con el perro.)

PEPE. (*Tirando una silla hacia la mesa.*) ¡Ven acá, Toto!

LA SRA. D. ¿Qué vas á hacer, chiquillo?

PEPE. Voy á ponerlo en la silla, para que coma á mi lado.

LA SRA. D. ¡Á que no! Eso no lo permito nunca jamás.

PEPE. Pues, si mi Toto no puede comer conmigo, yo no cómo tampoco.

LA SRA. D. Que sí que tú comes, pero no con el chucho.

PEPE. Yo no cómo un bocado, si no con Toto. (*Yiéndose furioso con el perro.*)

EL SR. B. Tú vas á hacer enfermo al chico. Sabes que es enfermizo y que no ha comido desde esta mañana. Vuelve, Pepe, con tu chucho. Váis á sentaros á mi lado y no al de esa mala mamá.

LA SRA. D. Y tú vas á echar á perderle, y yo seré la que tendrá que sufrir la consecuencia.

EL SR. B. Y con justicia. Le cogí ayer un cigarro en la boca y me dijo que tú se lo habías comprado, cuando fuisteis á pasear.

LA SRA. D. ¿Tú dijiste al papá que te compré el

cigarro? ¿No te dije que no debieras decírselo? ¡Es muy malo chismear!

PEPE. Papá me dice que no debo jamás mentir, y no lo hago.

LA SRA. D. La verdad es que era una flaqueza de mi parte. El chico me atormentaba, diciendo que quería aprender á fumar como sus compañeros, y cedí á sus ruegos.

EL SR. B. ¡Á otro perro con ese hueso!¹⁰ El caso es que tú no ejerces la debida autoridad en la casa.

LA SRA. D. Á no ser por mí, no tendríamos casa alguna. Á principios de nuestro matrimonio, tú empezaste á soltar la perra, y si no fuera por mis esfuerzos sobrehumanos, tú hubieses gastado toda nuestra fortuna, y ahora no tendríamos una perra chica. ¿No es verdad, mi señor?

EL SR. B. Acabemos, señora, de una vez, esta deliciosa escena de familia, y prestemos atención á aquel chocolate humeante.—Ven, Pepe; siéntate con Toto.

LA SRA. D. ¿Tú consientes en que acerque el perro á la mesa?

EL SR. B. ¡Sí! ¡que lo ponga en donde quiera! Yo soy de la opinión de Rousseau, á saber, que el perro es la más sublime expresión de la perfección humana. No hay cuadrúpedo más noble, ni bípedos que le igualen. Á la vez que es muy fiel, es también el más imprudente de los seres, visto que no se informa jamás de si su dueño tiene razón ó no; no se inquieta de si éste sube ó baja la escalera de la vida; no pregunta si es rico ó pobre, tonto ó sabio, pecador ó santo. Es él su dueño y compañero. Eso le basta; y venga lo que viniere, la dicha ó la desdicha, buen renombre ó malo, honra ó vergüenza, se arrima á su amo para alegrarle, guardarle, y, si es necesario, sacrificarle su propia vida.—¿En dónde encontrarás un hombre siempre agradecido, siempre cariñoso, jamás egoísta, olvidando las

injurias y recordando sólo los beneficios? No le busques; sería inútil. Pero toma al primer perro que viniere, y desde el momento en que te adopta, tú hallarás en él todas esas cualidades. Te amará sin reserva. Su mayor felicidad la encontrará estando contigo; y, si tú fueses reducido á pedir el pan cotidiano, no sólo te ayudará, sino que no te abandonará ni siquiera para seguir un rey á su palacio. — Además, el perro no chismea como nuestros llamados amigos; no divulga nuestros secretos de familia como los criados (*mirando á la criada*); no se obstina como los malos muchachitos (*sonriendo á Pepe*); no hace preguntas indiscretas como las mujeres (*fixando los ojos en su mujer*); nunca regatea sobre su salario como los hombres; y al fin y al fallo, está siempre listo para triscar y regocijarnos. — Toda familia debiera tener un buen perro y tratarle como un príncipe.

PEPE. (*Dando palmadas*). ¡Bueno por papá! ¡Un aplauso á mi papá! Y mirad á Toto. Escucha como si entendiera todo lo que decía.

LA SRA. D. ¿Qué nos cuentas tú? ¡El perro comprender todo ese chapurrado con que acaba de inundarnos tu papá! Temo que salga malo como ese tu padre.

EL SR. B. Que sí me entiende el chuchó; ¿verdad, Toto? (*El perro colea*). ¿No ves que dice que sí con la cola? ¡Vamos! ¿Puedes decirme por qué el perro meneá la cola?

LA SRA. D. Dispensa. Yo no me entusiasmo por tus tonterías.

EL SR. B. La respuesta es sencilla, como vas á ver. Es porque el perro es más fuerte que la cola. Si no lo fuera, la cola menearía al perro. La cola es la lengua del perro, y sabe gobernar esta lengua mejor que gobiernan su lengua *ciertas mujeres (con intención)* que conozco.

LA SRA. D. Puesto que das en los enigmas, ¿quieres tú decirme qué diferencia hay entre un espejo y un hombre?

EL SR. B. Nada de más fácil. El espejo refleja las vanidades de la mujer y el hombre no lo hace.

LA SRA. D. Nada de eso. La diferencia es de que el espejo es siempre pulido y que el hombre no lo es.

EL SR. B. Y dime por tu turno qué diferencia hay de un espejo á una mujer.

LA SRA. D. Te lo digo sin vacilar. Es de que el espejo refleja todo lo feo moral y físico del hombre y que la mujer pasa por encima de ello á ojos cerrados.

EL SR. B. Eso sí que no, sino que el espejo refleja sin hablar y que la mujer habla sin reflejar.

LA SRA. D. Lo que prueba la corrección de mi respuesta. Pero prescindamos de comparaciones que, según el barbero de *Don Quijote*, son odiosas y mal recibidas, y hablemos de algo más divertido. — Te prometí decirte lo que me contó doña Anita acerca de la señora Mendoza. — Dicen que ella y ese *pollo* de la Embajada francesa se dan citas en el parque, y que la ministra acertando á pasar en coche por la glorieta, no há muchos días, vió á los dos paseándose de bracete y cuchicheándose como dos novios, y que por eso no la envió invitación. — ¿No es una vergüenza?

EL SR. B. ¿Y lo sabe su marido?

LA SRA. D. Sí; la aplanchadora me dijo que ella estaba en la cocina, cuando estalló el furor de Auñón. Habló de romper la crisma al joven, afirmando que derramaría la última gota de su propia sangre antes de sufrir tal ultraje. Pero es sabido que los que hablan de sacrificar su última gota de sangre, están siempre escasos de la primera.

EL SR. B. Verdad. Pero no extraño de que su esposa se haya conducido de esa manera. Auñón es graduado de la Universidad y estudioso, lo cual equivale á decir:

Bachiller en artes y burro en todas partes.¹¹ Está siempre lleno de sus libros. No sale jamás con su mujer, y apenas la habla en casa. Una mujer, que tiene tanta beldad y atractivos como ella, necesita diversiones. Cuando no las halla en casa, las busca afuera; y no faltan aventureros que la tienten. El hombre es fuego, la mujer es estopa; viene el diablo y los sopla.

LA SRA. D. ¡Cuán indulgente eres tú para con otras mujeres! ¿Qué harías, si yo me portase de la misma manera?

EL SR. B. Te mataría á sangre fría y pegaría un tiro al miserable que osara violar de tal modo la santidad de mi casa.

LA SRA. D. (*Chanceando*). Veremos. Al freír será el refr.¹² (*Todos se levantan de la mesa*).

EL SR. B. No hablemos ligeramente de cosas serias. (*Enciende un puro y se pone el sombrero*).

LA SRA. D. ¿Tú sales? ¿Adónde vas?

EL SR. B. Tengo que poner un telegrama á mi corredor.

LA SRA. D. ¿Por qué no telefonas por un mandadero? El servicio se paga mensualmente, y menester es usarlo.

EL SR. B. No; prefiero salir á estirar las piernas.

LA SRA. D. Confiesa que quieres ir á aquel horrible Círculo en donde pasas tanto tiempo, dejando á solas tu pobre mujercita.

EL SR. B. Es posible que vaya al Club, pero te prometo estar de vuelta dentro de hora y media.

LA SRA. D. Pues, como que quieres de todos modos salir, haz el favor de pasar por la tienda del mercader de vinos y decirle que envíe una caja de vino de pasto, que no tenemos más en la bodega.

PEPE. Papá ¿puedo ir contigo?

EL SR. B. No; quédate en casa para estudiar tus lecciones.

PEPE. (*Haciendo pucheros*). Estoy seguro de que mamá va á reñirme, cuando esté á solas con ella.

EL SR. B. El gato escaldado del agua fría huye.¹³ — Pues, pon tu gorro. Temo, según dice la mamá, que salgas malo como tu malhadado padre.

PEPE. (*Saltando de gozo*). ¡Victoria! ¡Ven acá, Toto! ¡Salta! (*El perro salta por encima de una silla y con la cola arroja al suelo una preciosa jícara, haciéndola añicos*).

LA SRA. D. ¡Qué animalucho! — ¡La última del juego de tacitas que me dió mi santa madre (que en gloria esté)! (*Á su esposo*). ¿Quién ahora echa á perder al chico? — Y la próxima vez que pronuncies tu discurso kilométrico sobre las perfecciones de ese bruto, ¡no olvides esta su hazaña!

EL SR. B. Siento en el alma que haya hecho pedazos tu jícara. Pero ¡á lo hecho pecho!¹⁴ Te compraré otro juego más bonito. (*Sale con Pepe y el perro*).

390.

IV.

LA SRA. DÍAZ: EN SEGUIDA LA LAVANDERA.

LA SRA. D. (*Sola*). ¡Dulce Jesús de mi alma! ¿Qué haremos de aquel chico? Es voluntarioso cual una mula y ho hay bribonada que no aprenda en las calles. Mi marido tiene mucho de calavera, y Pepe le sale más y más cada día. Es bien el caso de decir: de tal padre, tal hijo. — Con todo nos ama á ambos con delirio mi José, y no hay nada que no quisiera hacer por nosotros. Verdaderamente yo creo que si aquel chico tuviera el capricho de poseer la luna como juguete, y es capaz de ello, trataría su padre de ir á descolgársela. ¡Qué padre! ¡qué muchachito!

LA CRIADA. (*Entrando*). Señora; es la lavandera que viene por la ropa.

LA SRA. D. ¡ Bien ! ¡ que pase ! — Ya puedes levantar la mesa.

LA LAVANDERA. (*Entrando*). ¡ Buenos días, señora ! He venido por el lavado. No he podido venir ayer por la enfermedad de mi niño que tiene el sarampión y está muy malo.

LA SRA. D. Lo siento mucho, y espero que esté mejor hoy. Afortunadamente mi hijo lo tuvo el año pasado. — Aquí tiene V. la lista. Todas las piezas están marcadas con nuestras iniciales, para que no se confundan con la ropa de otros. — Á propósito, mi esposo se quejó la semana pasada de que las pecheras de las camisas y los puños y cuellos no quedaban bastante tiesos. Usted debiera usar más almidón.

LA LAVANDERA. Dispense V., señora ; creo que no es mía la falta sino de la aplanchadora.* — Rocía demasiado la ropa y la deja mojada durante horas ; de manera es que se disipa el almidón, y los cuellos y puños no quedan bastante duros.

LA SRA. D. Puede ser. Hablaré á la aplanchadora. — Pues, trate de traerlo todo el viernes á más tardar.

LA LAVANDERA. Sí, señora ; yo haré cuánto se pueda, aunque tal vez, á causa de mi chica, no lo traiga antes del sábado. — ¡ Buenas tardes, señora ! (*Sale. Se oye un ruido estrepitoso*).

LA SRA. D. (*Volviéndose hacia la mesa*). ¿ Qué es eso, Juana ?

LA CRIADA. La ensaladera que se me escapó de la mano y cayó al suelo.

LA SRA. D. (*Con ironía*). ¿ Y por qué no bajas á recogerla antes de que se quiebre ?

* In Spain, washing and ironing are distinct trades and are not usually done by one and the same person.

LA CRIADA. (*Con inocencia*). Ya está hecha pedacitos, señora.

LA SRA. D. ¡Hecha pedacitos aquella ensaladera que me costó un ojo! — Ya voy á decirte, Juana, que no estoy contenta de tí. Desde que recibes las atenciones de aquel joven, no tienes la mente en nada. No cumples con tus deberes como antes, y vas por la casa sembrando la ruina y el destrozo detrás de tí. — ¿Para cuándo es la boda?

LA CRIADA. Dentro de poco, espero.

LA SRA. D. Y yo también. ¡Ojalá que fuese hoy! Porque si tú continuás rompiendo las cosas, como vienes haciéndolo desde algunas semanas, no habrá en la casa más que quebrar.

LA CRIADA. Tanto va el cántaro á la fuente que al fin se quiebra.¹⁵

LA SRA. D. Es una impertinencia que profieres, Juana, y no me gusta nada. Te advierto que desde hoy te busques otra plaza ó te despediré al fin del mes.

LA CRIADA. No se lo dije para gustar á usted, señora, sino á mí misma.

LA SRA. D. (*Con enojo, dejando el comedor y avanzando en la sala*). ¡Dios mío! ¿En dónde van á parar esas ideas democráticas que debemos á los americanos. — Hace muchos años que los criados vienen dándose aires de príncipe. Se visten á la última moda, y usan del *don* y *doña* entre sí; de manera que en los paseos públicos es casi imposible distinguirlos de entre sus amos. — (*Va á sentarse en el taburete del piano y toca una de las "CANCIONES SIN PALABRAS" de Mendelssohn. Después de acabada la pieza, dice*): ¡Qué compositor tan fino era aquel hombre! Su música no tiene la voluptuosidad de la de Mózar, ni la majestuosa grandeza de la de Beéthoven, pero sí la ternura y riqueza de armonía que concuerda perfectamente con la

índole española. (*Ejecuta unas gamas en las teclas del piano, entonándolas al mismo tiempo con la voz. Se levanta*). Hoy no puedo tocar ni cantar; estoy demasiado agitada. (*Sale, corriéndose el telón*).

391.

V.

(La escena pasa en el CÍRCULO COLÓN.

Al subirse el telón se ven unos doce ó quince caballeros jugando, quiénes al ajedrez, quiénes á los naipes, otros al dominó ó al billar).

EL SR. B. (*Entrando con Pepe y el perro*). ¡Buenos días, caballeros! No les pregunto cómo lo pasan. Los hombres que se divierten, como VV. lo hacen, ó deben de estar buenos y felices ó rezando por sus pecados. (*Él y Pepe se sientan en una mesa, donde hay un pollo puesto á lo Pompadour, fumando un cigarro y acariciando un bigotito de los más delgados*). ¡Mozo!

EL MOZO. ¡Ya voy, señor! (*Después de breve rato se acerca á la mesa*). ¿Qué se le ofrece al señorito?

EL SR. B. Tráigme un rabo de gallo de ginebra y un buen tabaco. — Y tú, Pepe, ¿qué tomas?

PEPE. Lo mismito. (*Los caballeros sueltan la carcajada, y Pepe mira desconcertado en torno suyo*).

EL SR. B. ¡Cómo! ¡Fuego de Dios! ¡qué guasa! Se me cae la cara de vergüenza. Verdaderamente tú haces adelantos. ¡Ayer un cigarillo, y hoy un rabo de gallo y de ginebra!

EL POLLO. La cabra tira siempre al monte.¹⁶

EL SR. B. No, Pepe, tú tomas una gaseosa que conviene más á tu edad.

PEPE. Pero, papá, la gaseosa no es sino viento endulzado y no tiene nada de sustancioso.

EL SR. B. Pues, escoge entre gaseosa y limonada.

PEPE. No las quiero; son bebidas de niño.

EL SR. B. ¡Caramba y caracoles! —Ven acá, Toto! Te tomamos por juez. Tú escogerás la bebida por tu amo. El *cocktail*, ¡dos golpes de cola en la alfombra! Gaseosa ó limonada, ¡tres! ¡Ea! (*El perro da tres golpes*).

PEPE. (*Furioso*). ¡Fuera de aquí, bruto! No te quiero más. (*El perro baja la cola y se esconde debajo de la mesa*). Me marcho. ¡Adiós, caballeros!

EL SR. B. ¡Vamos, chiquillo! ¿Te contentarás con una copa de cerveza blanca?

PEPE. ¿Y una cajita de cigarrillos?

EL SR. B. Sí; pero no digas nada á la mamá. (*Pepe vuelve á sentarse en la mesa. El mozo trae lo pedido, y el Sr. B. le entrega una propina*).

UN CABALLERO. Blanco, tú tienes una verdadera joya en ese chico.

EL POLLO. No dejaría de llevarse el primer premio en una exhibición de bebés.

PEPE. (*Poniéndose ceñudo y furioso*). Y usted, señor, con su bigote de solterona, se llevaría el primer premio de vanidad en una exhibición de tontos. (*Algunos caballeros dejando sus juegos rodean la mesa*).

UNO DE ELLOS. (*En chanza*). Pero, señores, esto es de lo más serio. Este lance debe de servir de base á un duelo de los más formidables. Mas, si cabe, evitémoslo. Es una mala inteligencia, sin duda.

PEPE. (*Meneando la cabeza airadamente*). Yo no soy un *pollito*, y no me dejo insultar por el primero que venga. Desde que estoy aquí, ese tipo no cesa de mirarme como si yo tuviera alguna danza de monos en la cara. Al fin me fatiga. (*El pollo, viendo las risas supresas de los otros, no sabe que semblante tomar. Al fin cede á los ruegos burlescos del caballero y consiente en pedir perdón á Pepe*).

EL POLLO. (*Hablando en tono algo cómico*). Don Pepe,

le pido á V. perdón, y confieso que no tenía la menor intención de ofender la dignidad de un caballero que honro y respeto como el que más. (*Se dan las manos, y Pepe bebe su cerveza de un trago. Festivas risas entre los asistentes*).

UN CABALLERO. Alguien ha dicho que los refranes son la sabiduría de las naciones, y podríamos verificar el dicho en este caso, si dijéramos que padre é hijo son lobos de la misma camada.¹⁷ — Blanco no puede contar sus duelos en los dedos de sus manos. Ya recuerdo uno de ellos. — Él y su contrario, que era agregado militar á la legación rusa, habían reñido por una actriz, de la cual éste estaba enamorado, y el amor y la guerra, como es sabido, son una misma cosa. — Fuimos al campo. Yo servía de padrino á Blanco. Se batían á espada y no andaban en chiquitas. El ruso, un loco de atar, se abalanzaba, pensando hender la cabeza á Blanco. Éste paró el golpe, lo que hizo resbalar á su contrincante; y como un rayo la espada de Blanco le atravesaba el corazón.

OTRO CABALLERO. ¡Demonio! ¡que V. tiene interesante hoja de servicio, don José!

EL SR. B. Diga V. más bien: *desgraciada*; porque yo no ceso de sentir la muerte de aquel hombre que tenía familia. Al regresar nosotros del campo, nos encontraron su mujer y niñita, y era desgarradora la escena que se verificó. — Poco después me casé y renuncié al duelo.

EL CABALLERO. Y bien hizo V., visto que nuestros duelos no son farsas como la mayor parte de los de los franceses. — Hoy mismo leía en el *Madrid Cómico* un parte divertido de un duelo francés. Los dos combatientes estaban el uno enfrente de un árbol corpulento y el otro cerca de un pozo. Al primer disparo, éste saltó en el pozo, y aquél, detrás del árbol. Después de disipado el humo, los padrinos miraron en torno suyo y, no viendo á nadie, exclamaron: “¡Muy

bien, caballeros! La honra está satisfecha. Ustedes se han aniquilado." — Durante la escena algo violenta que acabamos de presenciar, yo no pude menos de recordar esto de los franceses aniquilados, (*en tono festivo*) sea dicho con perdón, don Pepe.

OTRO CABALLERO. ¡Cuidado, don Enrique! V. no va sobre seguro. Lo atrevido de su discurso me pone carne de gallina. Por lo visto, don Pepe no es hombre de aguantar mofas. Sería capaz de desafiar á todo un regimiento de cazadores, y aquí sólo somos una docena de pisaverdes.

EL POLLO. (*Pensando que se hace referencia á él le interrumpe*): Hable V. en singular, si gusta, caballero.

PEPE. (*Enfadado*). Caballeros, VV. dispensen. Yo estoy cansado de sus burlas y tonterías. Ahora no soy capaz de desafiar un regimiento de cazadores, pero un día que otro lo estaré bastante para batirme con todo el género humano; y entonces ¡cuidado!

UN CABALLERO. Blanco, á tu estirpe no le faltarán guerreros que defender su honor.

EL SR. B. ¡Á Dios no plazca que haya de qué! — Pero amigos míos, echemos la plática á otra parte, si os gusta. Temo que excitéis demasiado al chico. — ¿Qué hay de nuevo, don Rufino?

DON RUFINO. Nada que sepa. ¿V. sabe que hoy salió la lista grande?

EL SR. B. Sí; lo sé por mi criada que jugó medio duro; pero no le tocó nada, como sucede casi siempre. ¿No es de extrañar cuánta confianza tienen en la lotería aún personas inteligentes?

DON R. Sí. Todos, quién más, quién menos, confían en que la suerte cambie y esperan poder exclamar en presencia de la simpática lista: ¡Cielos! ¡por fin! Pero ya

verá V. como les toca y no les toca á veces. — Por de pronto, hay que desconfiar de la lista que sale momentos después del sorteo. — Por ejemplo, aparece en ella premediado el número que V. posee. El júbilo se apodera de su corazón y abraza V. á mujer y niños, prometiéndoles un sinnúmero de pequeñeces y placeres. Amigos descarrilados vienen á pedirle prestado dinero, lo que no les rehusa, temeroso de ser considerado por un miserable rico; pero al fin y al cabo resulta que en la imprenta han puesto un 9 en vez de un 6 ó un 5 en vez de un cero.

EL SR. B. ¡Qué decepción!

DON R. Sí, decepción cuando está equivocada la lista; pero cuando no lo es, ¡qué regocijo! — Hace dos años, á mi mamá política, Matilde, la tocó el segundo premio y cobró unos seis mil duros; y era de ver como derrochó aquel dinero. Entre bailes y tertulias, y romerías y yo no sé qué, no le quedaba un maravedí dentro de menos de un año. Cuando yo me burlé de ella sobre su locura, se encogió de hombros y me dió por toda respuesta: “Pero, hombre, yo *viví* mientras duró.”

EL SR. B. ¡Lo española que debe de ser doña Matilde! Así vivimos los españoles de día en día, dejándolo todo á Dios quien es viejo santo. Viene la desgracia, la sonreímos, esperando que mañana será otro día;¹⁸ y así continuaremos hasta el fin del tiempo.

DON R. ¿Y por qué no? Según mi humilde parecer, este mundo no es sino un juguete del Eterno — una especie de bola de billar que tiró en el principio y se divierte de vez en cuando golpeándola con el taco para darle nuevo ímpetu. Los hombres, unos microbios arrastrándose en la superficie, pensamos que el juego es serio. Pero el Todopoderoso se ríe de nosotros en su capote, y tiene razón. — Visto lo cual ¿por qué no gozarnos, *juvenes dum sumus*,

como cantábamos en nuestros convites de la Universidad? (*Chupa en su pipa*). ¡Diantre! Mi cachimba se ha apagado mientras yo peroraba.

EL SR. B. Tiene V., don Rufino, unas ideas estrambóticas sobre nuestras relaciones con esta bola en que habitamos. Cuando un español de su ilustración profiere tales opiniones, no hemos de halagarnos con respecto al porvenir de nuestro país.

DON R. Créame, amigo mío, no tiene porvenir. En los primeros meses de nuestra desgracia,* yo, como muchos otros, tuve momentos de expansión y esperanza y formé castillos en el aire. El gobierno prometió dedicar todos sus esfuerzos á la regeneración del país. Tuvimos confianza en las promesas. Se reunieron las cámaras de Comercio y de Productores para buscar solución á la situación que atravesábamos. En ellas se abominó á los oradores y políticos, y cada asambleísta que se levantó para hablar se convirtió en orador, filósofo, literato y parlanchín igual á los que trató de censurar.—No hay remedio humano—y parece que, á pesar de toda nuestra religión, Dios nos ha abandonado—no hay, repito, remedio humano de conseguir que los españoles hablemos menos y obremos más. Todos estamos educados en la misma escuela y no podemos prescindir de la oratoria. Conozco que el mal no tiene remedio, y por tanto no hago caso de tantos locos que ahora tratan de regenerarnos.—En cuanto á las promesas de los gobernantes, como la gaseosa de nuestro amiguito, Pepe, no son sino viento endulzado. Regalan un momento el paladar, eso sí, pero después de bebidas muchas, no contiene el estómago nada de sustancioso.—Se ha dicho más de una vez que no se puede gobernar sin partidos. Se puede; pero esto nos lo enseña la experi-

* Reference to the result of the Spanish-American war.

encia, á saber, que los partidos políticos no son sino grandes conspiraciones organizadas por los politicastros en pro de sí mismos y en contra de los demás de sus conciudadanos. Por eso, nuestras elecciones son meras farsas, porque no indican los verdaderos sentimientos de los electores sino el poder del dinero corruptor cuyo reino va extendiéndose en todas partes. Sí, señores, estamos en época en que el becerro de oro y la fuerza bruta están llegando á ser los casi exclusivos objetos de universal adoración. La honra y la virtud se compran y se venden como los valores en la bolsa, y aun la religión está de venta al mayor postor. Una Virgen que no se viste á la última moda ya está anticuada, y tanto más se venera un Cristo cuantos más quilates de oro macizo tenga su cruz y más diamantes su corona. — ¡Santo Dios! ¿Cuándo vendrá el reino de tu hijo? Y hasta que venga ¿qué hemos los desheredados de esperar? ¡Nada! ¡mil veces nada! Sólo que podemos consolarnos teniendo presente que la situación en otros países no se diferencia sino un tantito de la del nuestro, y podemos aplicarle el famoso dicho del satírico francés, de que en la desgracia de nuestros amigos hay algo que no nos desagrada. — (*En tono festivo*). En prueba de todo lo cual firmo la presente con mi puño y letra y la hago sellar con el gran sello del CÍRCULO COLÓN. (*Se sienta. Palmadas entre los asistentes*).

DON ENRIQUE. ¡Caballeros! Propongo que brindemos á la salud de nuestro afamado orador. (*Todos, Pepe incluso, se levantan y chocan y vacían, de un trago, sus copas. Mientras cae el telón, se oye la primera estancia de la canción estudiantina*):

Gaudeamus igitur,
Juvenes dum sumus.

—S. G.

392.

PROVERBS

1. I must be going, must be off.
2. He dares not open his mouth at home.
3. Along that line he loses more than he gains.
4. I, too, am going to take French leave.*
5. She was between the devil and the deep sea.
6. Listeners hear no good of themselves.
7. Birds of a feather flock together.
8. Show me your company, and I will tell you who you are.
9. People are about the same everywhere.
10. Tell that to the marines.
11. He is a man of learning, but is lacking in experience and common sense.
12. The proof of the pudding is the eating of it.
13. A burnt child fears the fire.
14. What can't be cured must be endured.
15. The pitcher goes to the well until it is broken
16. As the twig is bent, the tree is inclined; *or*, murder will out.
17. He is a chip of the old block.
18. To-morrow we shall have better luck.

393.

BATALLA DE TETUÁN

À eso de las diez se saludaron al fin los dos ejércitos. Una de las *Lanchas Cañoneras* que subían por el Martín,

* *Tomar las [calzas] de Villadiego*, "to put on Villadiego breeches," *i.e.* such breeches as were worn by the Jews of this village, which, by their form and color, showed that they were specially protected by the king's privilege (granted them by Ferdinand III. in 1223). Whenever any Jew did not have on his protective breeches and was threatened with persecution, he would rush off to get them. Hence the expression, in common parlance, came to mean: run away hastily. See *Modern Language Notes*, XX., 64.

protegiendo nuestro flanco izquierdo contra el daño que á mansalva hubiera podido hacérsenos desde el lado allá del río, avistó algunos moros que venían por aquel lado, y les hizo fuego. — Este primer cañonazo bastó para alejarlos; pero, como si aquélla hubiese sido una señal aguardada con impaciencia, á nuestro disparo respondieron inmediatamente los cañones de las trincheras moras, y dióse por principiada la batalla.

Los gruesos proyectiles que nos lanzaba el enemigo alcanzaban á nuestros batallones, si bien no les causaban gran daño. Los artilleros marroquíes tiraban por elevación, y las balas caían en los claros de nuestras filas. — Seguimos, pues, caminando, sin atender á aquel mal dirigido fuego ni contestarle por entonces.

Así llegamos á situarnos á unos mil setecientos metros de las baterías contrarias. — Su cañoneo era cada vez más vivo; la *Torre de Jelelé* había unido sus disparos á los de la llanura; los globos de plomo pasaban zumbando sobre nuestra frente, como aerolitos atraídos por la tierra; las columnas de aire que conmovían, azotaban á veces nuestro rostro, y el golpe brusco y ahogado que daban al sepultarse en el suelo se parecía al último resoplido del toro cuando fenece ó de la locomotora cuando se pára.

Los moros, entre tanto, viendo que nuestro movimiento era siempre de frente, y con dirección al extremo Sur de sus trincheras comprendieron en parte nuestro plan; y, dejando á sus cañones y á sus infantes el cuidado de defender los amenazados campamentos, avanzaron por nuestro flanco derecho en número de cuatro ó cinco mil jinetes, con el visible propósito de interponerse entre nosotros y el terreno que acabábamos de abandonar, y atacarnos por retaguardia cuando más empeñados estuviésemos *por el frente*.

Pero al General O'Donnell no le inquietó aquella manio-
bra. Lo admirable de su plan era haber adivinado y pre-
venido todo lo que los mahometanos habían de intentar
hoy. El CUARTO CUERPO, que permanecía inmóvil y sobre
las armas en el *Reducto de la Estrella*, tenía precisamente
otro encargo que evitar: el que los moros nos envolviesen
de la manera que ya procuraban hacerlo. Dejó, pues, el
Conde de Lucena al General Ríos el cuidado de enten-
derse con la caballería marroquí, y continuó marchando
hacia el campamento de Muley-el-Abbas.

Llegamos, en fin, á encontrarnos á un kilómetro de las
baterías enemigas, y sólo entonces se mandó hacer alto á
nuestras masas y avanzar á la *Artillería de Reserva*. —
Diez y seis cañones ocuparon instantáneamente la van-
guardia, y rompieron vivísimo fuego contra la posición
enemiga. Densa cortina de humo nos robó un instante la
vista del campamento moro; largo trueno ensordeció el
espacio, y la salvaje soledad de los montes circunvecinos
se estremeció hondamente con el fragor de la descomunal
batalla.

¡Magnífica, soberbia sinfonía; digno prólogo de la
espantosa tragedia que se preparaba!

Ya en adelante, la ruidosa tempestad fué aumentando
en rápido *crescendo*. Á la *Artillería de Reserva*, que em-
pezó á ganar terreno, marchando por baterías, unió pronto
sus bárbaros estampidos la *Artillería Rayada* de á cuatro,
de la que un regimiento entero salió al galope por nuestra
izquierda, principiando á batir el flanco derecho de los
atrincheramientos marroquíes.

Aflójó, en su consecuencia, un poco el fuego de las
piezas enemigas. El nuestro, en cambio, se duplicó en
breves instantes. Dos nuevos regimientos de artillería
entraron juntos en fuego, vomitando granadas encendidas,

mientras que dos baterías más, del Segundo Regimiento Montado, cañoneaban el extremo Norte del campamento moro y rechazaban las fuerzas de infantería y caballería que bajaban á apoyar á los seis mil jinetes agrupados en torno de las posiciones del General Ríos.

Por lo que allí pudiera acontecer, mandó entonces el Conde de Lucena al Brigadier Villate que se corriese por aquel lado con sus escuadrones de lanceros, y obrase en combinación con el CUERPO DE RESERVA si los moros insistían en atacar nuestra retaguardia; dispuesto lo cual, nosotros continuamos marchando por nuestra parte en el seno de una verdadera tormenta.

Aun no se había disparado un tiro de fusil ó de espingarda. — Sólo el cañón tronaba reciamente en la llanura. — Así llegamos á unos seiscientos metros de las fortificaciones enemigas.

En este momento se presentaron por nuestra izquierda, siguiendo el curso del Guad-el-Jelú, algunos moros de á pie y de á caballo; pero el General Mackenna se adelantó á su encuentro con dos batallones, y el fuego de nuestras guerrillas bastó para rechazar á los agarenos hacia la Plaza. Sin embargo, el bravo General (ya protegido por la *Brigada de Lanceros*, que mandaba en persona el General Galiano) permaneció hasta el fin del combate en aquella comprometida posición, interpuesto entre la ciudad y el campo de batalla.

En el interín, el TERCER CUERPO se adelantaba al SEGUNDO, que habia vuelto á hacer alto; seguía un recodo del Martín; rebasaba denodadamente el ángulo de la trinchera enemiga; hacía un cambio de frente sobre la derecha, y amenazaba el flanco izquierdo de los moros, á cuatrocientos metros de distancia de sus cañones.

Á igual altura se puso por el frente el SEGUNDO CUERPO.

— Es decir, que el campamento de Muley-Ahmed estaba medio envuelto. ¡Acercábase por tanto el momento de la suprema embestida! . . . Nuestras columnas se pararon por tercera vez.

Tratábase de apagar los fuegos de la artillería enemiga antes de emprender la lucha de unos infantes contra otros. Pero las trincheras de los musulmanes, construídas con tierra y arregladas á los adelantos del arte, no permitían á nuestras piezas desmontar las suyas. Causaban, sí, grandes destrozos en las fortificaciones; introducían la muerte y el espanto en los que las custodiaban; hacían callar á veces á todas sus bocas de fuego . . . mas al poco rato volvían éstas á bramar sedientas de matanza, mientras que desde la *Torre de Jelelé*, desde la Alcazaba de *Tetuán*, y desde las artilladas puertas de la misma Plaza nos enviaban una incesante lluvia de sólidos proyectiles.

Nuestros bizarros artilleros no desisten, sin embargo, de su propósito; y, adelantados á todo el ejército, á pecho descubierto (y no detrás de espesas murallas, como los marroqués), colocan en batería cuarenta piezas, y rompen un cañoneo horroroso, cerrado, incesante, contra los fuertes enemigos. — ¡Nunca faltan del aire diez ó doce granadas! — ¡Nunca se interrumpe el prolongado trueno de los bronces!

En esto principian á alzarse nubes de polvo revueltas con el humo de las baterías contrarias. . . . ¡Es la trinchera que se derrumba! — Además, muchas granadas entran en el campo contrario y revientan á nuestra vista, incendiando las tiendas y destrozando á los hombres, cuyos cuerpos vemos volar en pedazos. . . . ¡Todo inútil, sin embargo! ¡Nada quebranta hoy el desesperado valor de los agarenos!

De pronto, elévase una anchísima, densa y aplomada

columna de humo, que arrancando de entre las tiendas islamitas, sube á nublar el infinito cielo; y un estruendo nunca oído superior al estampido de mil truenos, resuena al mismo tiempo en aquel lugar, haciendo estremecerse hasta el húmedo suelo que pisamos. — ¡Oh ventura! Es que una granada nuestra ha caído en un repuesto de pólvora y lo ha volado! — ¡Que regocijo en nuestras filas! ¡Cómo se adivinan los estragos que habrá producido esta catástrofe en el ejército enemigo!

Y nuestra artillería avanza siempre, corriendo y disparando, estrechando cada vez más en un círculo de bronce el codiciado campamento. . . . — Las *Baterías de á caballo* se baten en guerrilla. . . . Hay una, la del capitán Alcalá, que gallardea vistosamente delante de los cañones marroquíes. . . . En pos de ellas avanzan las restantes con pasmosa serenidad. Y por los claros de las piezas adelántanse también los batallones, *paso á paso*, porque así lo mandan los jefes; pero agitados, impacientes, fogosos, enardecidos hasta el frenesí por el olor de la pólvora, por el estallido de los cañones, por la proximidad de la presa.

— *¿Cuándo? ¿Cuándo?* — parece que dicen nuestros soldados, nuestros bizarrísimos infantes, requiriendo sus bayonetas. . . .

— *¿Cuándo? ¿Cuándo?* — parece que preguntan Ros de Elano y Prim, refrenando sus impacientes bridones, á la cabeza de las ordenadas tropas.

¿Cuándo? ¿Cuándo? exclama todo el mundo, viendo caer deshechos á algunos de nuestros soldados bajo las ponderosas balas de los cañones enemigos.

— *¡Ahora!* — *¡Ya!* — *¡Viva la Reina!* — *¡Á la bayoneta!* — *¡Á ellos!* — grita de pronto el General O'Donnell, cuando calcula que nuestra infantería puede llegar de un

solo aliento, de una sola carrera, á las trincheras moras, y saltarlas, y penetrar en los campamentos.

—¡*Á la bayoneta!* ¡*Á ellos!* contestan veinte mil voces.

Y todas las músicas, todas las cornetas, todos los tambores repiten la señal de ataque; y los treinta y dos batallones, y la caballería, y el Cuartel General, y la artillería, y los ingenieros, ¡todos en fin! acometen furiosamente á las posiciones enemigas, como impulsados por un solo y mágico resorte, como un pantano que rompe su dique, como la mar, cuando la vuelca sobre la playa un terremoto.

¡Oh momento! ¡Yo no sé describirlo! Su mero recuerdo inflama mis sentidos y agolpa á mis ojos lágrimas de entusiasmo. . . .—¡Qué embriaguez! ¡que vértigo! ¡qué locura aquélla!—¡La alegría, el furor, la soberbia española, el miedo de que los moros tuvieran tiempo de rehacerse y nuestros soldados para cansarse; la súbita aparición de la Patria, regocijada por tan hermoso triunfo; la admiración y la gratitud que los unos sentíamos hacia los otros; la curiosidad de conocer el campamento árabe: todo nos enardecía, todo nos arrebatava á tal punto, que jóvenes y viejos, próceres y reclutas, nos saludábamos y hablábamos sin conocernos, como para transmitirnos tanta felicidad!

¡Y, sin embargo, aquel momento era horrible, mortal, desastroso! Corriendo, como íbamos, entre músicas y aclamaciones, entre *vivas* y jubilosa fiesta, mil y mil tiros nos recibían á boca de jarro.—¡Treinta mil enemigos guarnecían las dilatadas trincheras! ¡treinta mil espingardas nos apuntaban al corazón!

Y ¡cómo caían nuestros jefes, nuestros oficiales, nuestros soldados! ¡Cuántos, cuántos, Dios mío!—Fueron

treinta minutos de lucha; treinta minutos solamente . . . ¡y más de mil españoles se bañaban ya en su sangre generosa!

Pero ¿qué importaba? — ¿Ni quién reparó en ello? — ¿Qué importaba, si nuestras tropas habían acometido de frente y de flanco, escalado el muro de tierra con manos y pies, derribado á las numerosas huestes que lo guardaban, tomado los cañones á la bayoneta (después de recibir sus últimos y mortíferos disparos á quemarropa), invadido el campamento como una inundación, luchado cuerpo á cuerpo fuera y dentro de las tiendas, sembrado de muertos su triunfal camino, y puesto en vergonzosa fuga á todo el ejército mahometano?

¿Y he de decir quién mereció más, quién penetró el primero, quién derramó más sangre enemiga? — ¡Todos fueron iguales! ¡Todos eran uno solo! ¡Todos acometieron con igual brío! ¡Nadie pensó en sí propio, sino en el resto del ejército! ¡Nadie deseó triunfar por sí mismo, sino que triunfase España! ¡Nadie trató de llegar al término de aquella carrera, sino de que llegase el Estandarte Nacional!

* * * * *

Y, con todo, ¿cómo pasar en silencio los más culminantes episodios de la jornada? ¿Cómo callar los hechos inmortales que he tenido la felicidad de ver?

Diré, pues, en primer lugar, el arrojo y bravura del General en Jefe, de D. Leopoldo O'Donnell, del héroe de la batalla. . . . — Desde el día de los *Castillejos*, nadie le había vuelto á ver convertido de ordenador de la lid en instrumento de ella, de jefe supremo en batallador, de caudillo en soldado. . . . — ¡Hoy, sí! ¡Hoy volvió el entusiasmo á su alma, el fuego bélico á sus venas, la ardiente poesía del combate á su corazón. — ¡Hoy, como nunca, inflamado,

vehemente, impetuoso, dominaba con su talla marcial y arrogante las masas de infantería y caballería; hoy, como en sus heroicos tiempos de coronel, de brigadier y de mariscal de campo, lanzábase á las balas con el acero desnudo, buscando al enemigo, arengando á las tropas, lleno de actividad y fuerza, resplandeciente el rostro de júbilo y ternura, con el llanto del amor patrio en los ojos!

— ¡ *En avant!* ¡ *En avant!* (¡adelante! ¡adelante!)
¡ *Viva la Reina!* — gritaba, saltando la trinchera, metiendo su caballo en lo más recio de la lid, y penetrando de los primeros en el campamento enemigo.

— ¡ *Soldados!* ¡ *Viva España!* — exclamaba otras veces, dirigiéndose á los que luchaban y á los que morían.

— ¡ *Viva la Infantería española!* — añadía por último, volviéndose hacia el Cuartel General, también entusiasmado al ver la violencia irresistible de nuestros batallones.

Y la voz, el gesto, la actitud del noble capitán nos arrebatában á todos; nos subyugaban materialmente; nos hubieran hecho despreciar mil vidas que tuviéramos.

— ¡ *Viva O'Donnell!* — gritaban Generales y soldados.

— ¡ *Viva la Reina!* — gritaba el General en Jefe.

— ¡ VIVA EL DUQUE DE TETUÁN! — se oyó por primera vez en las filas de no sé qué regimiento.

— ¡ VIVA EL DUQUE DE TETUÁN! — repitieron mil y mil voces, saludando espontánea y cariñosamente al antiguo vencedor de Lucena, al actual vencedor del moro.

Y los acordes de la Marcha Real, confundidos con el toque de ataque que resonaba en una extensión de legua y media, solemnizaban aquella augusta aclamación; la más verdadera, la más legítima y soberana de cuantas he presenciado en toda mi vida.

— PEDRO ANTONIO DE ALARCÓN.

394.

PARTE DEL COMBATE DE SANTIAGO DE
CUBA

EL ALMIRANTE (CERVERA) AL GENERAL EN JEFE (BLANCO)

Excmo. é Ilmo. Sr.: En cumplimiento de las órdenes de V. E. I., con la evidencia de lo que había de suceder y tantas veces había anunciado, salí de Santiago de Cuba con toda la Escuadra que fué de mi mando, en la mañana del 3 del corriente Julio.

Las instrucciones dadas para la salida eran las siguientes: El *Infanta María Teresa*, buque de mi insignia, había de salir el primero, siguiéndole sucesivamente el *Viscaya*, *Colón*, *Oquendo* y destructores. Todos los barcos tenían todas sus calderas encendidas y con presión. Al salir el *Teresa* empeñaría el combate con el enemigo que estuviera más apropiado, y los que le seguían procurarían dirigirse al Oeste á toda fuerza de máquina, tomando la cabeza el *Viscaya*. Los cazatorpederos habían de mantenerse, si podían, fuera del fuego, expiar un momento oportuno para obrar, si se presentaba, y tratar de escapar con su mayor andar, si el combate nos era desfavorable. — Los buques salieron del puerto con una precisión tan grande, que sorprendió á nuestros enemigos, quienes nos han hecho muchos y muy entusiastas cumplimientos sobre el particular. Tan pronto como salió el *Teresa* rompió el fuego á las 9^h 35^m sobre un acorazado que estaba próximo, pero dirigiéndose á toda fuerza de máquina sobre el *Brooklyn*, que se encontraba al SO. y que nos interesaba tratar de poner en condiciones de que no pudiera utilizar su superior andar. Los demás buques empeñaron el combate con los otros enemigos que acudían de los diversos puntos donde estaban apostados. La Escuadra enemiga constaba

aquel día de los siguientes buques frente á Santiago de Cuba: *New-York*, insignia del Contraalmirante Sampson, *Brooklyn* insignia del Comodoro Schley, *Iowa*, *Oregon*, *Indiana*, *Texas* y varios buques menores, ó mejor dicho, trasatlánticos y yates armados. — Realizada la salida se tomó el rumbo mandado, y el combate se generalizó con la desventaja, no sólo del número, sino del estado de nuestra artillería y municiones de 14 centímetros que conoce V. E. por el telegrama que le puse al quedar á sus órdenes. Para mí no era dudoso el éxito, por más que alguna vez creí que no sería tan rápida nuestra destrucción.

Al *Infanta María Teresa*, un proyectil de los primeros le rompió un tubo de vapor auxiliar, por el que se escapaba mucho, que nos hizo perder la velocidad con que se contaba; al mismo tiempo otro rompía un tubo de la red de contra incendios. El buque se defendía valientemente del nutrido y certero fuego del enemigo, y no tardó mucho en caer entre los heridos su valiente Comandante Capitán de Navío D. Víctor M. Concas, que tuvo que retirarse, y como las circunstancias no permitían perder un segundo, tomé por mí mismo el mando directo del buque, esperando ocasión de que pudiera llamarse al segundo Comandante, pero ésta no llegó, porque el combate arreciaba, los muertos y heridos caían sin cesar, y no había que pensar en otra cosa que en hacer fuego en tanto que se pudiera.

En tal situación, teníamos fuego en mi cámara, donde debieron hacer explosión algunos de los proyectiles que allí había para los cañones de 57 mm.; vinieron á participarme haberse prendido fuego al cangrejó de popa y caseta del puente de popa, al mismo tiempo que el incendio iniciado en mi cámara se corría al centro del buque con gran rapidez, y como no contábamos con agua, fué tomando cada vez más incremento, siendo impotentes nosotros para atajarlo.

Comprendí que el buque estaba perdido y pensé desde luego en dónde lo vararía para perder menos vidas, pero continuando el combate en tanto que fuera posible.

Desgraciadamente, el fuego ganaba terreno con mucha rapidez y voracidad, por lo que envié uno de mis Ayudantes con la orden de que se inundasen los pañoles de popa, encontrándose éste ser imposible penetrar en los callejones de las cámaras á causa del mucho humo y del vapor que salía por la escotilla de la máquina donde también le fué absolutamente imposible penetrar, á causa de no permitir la respiración aquella abrasadora atmósfera; por tanto fué necesario dirigirnos á una playita al O. de Punta Cabrera, donde embarrancamos con la salida, al mismo tiempo que se nos paraba la máquina; era imposible subir municiones ni nada que exigiera ir bajo la cubierta acorazada, sobre todo á popa de las calderas, y en tal situación no había que pensar más que en salvar la parte que se pudiera de la tripulación, de cuya opinión fueron el segundo y tercer Comandantes y los Oficiales que se pudieron reunir, á los que consulté si creían que podía continuar el combate, contestando que no.

En tan penosa situación, habiendo empezado las explosiones parciales de los depósitos de las baterías, dí orden de arriar la bandera é inundar todos los pañoles; la primera no pudo ejecutarse á causa del terrible incendio que había en la toldilla, habiéndose quemado al poco rato. — Ya era tiempo: el fuego ganaba con mucha rapidez y apenas hubo el suficiente para abandonar el buque, cuando ya el fuego llegaba al puente de proa, y eso ayudados por dos botes americanos que llegaron como tres cuartos de hora después de la embarrancada.

Entre los heridos están el Teniente de Navío D. Antonio López Cerón y Alférez de Navío D. Angel Carrasco y

faltan el Capitán de Infantería de Marina D. Higinio Rodríguez, al que creo mató un proyectil, el Alférez de Navío D. Francisco Linares, el segundo Médico D. Julio Díaz del Río, el Maquinista Mayor de primera clase D. Juan Montero y el de segunda D. José Melgares, cuyo cadáver salió á la playa. —El salvotaje se hizo tirándose al agua los que sabían nadar, intentando tres veces llevar una guía á tierra, lo que sólo se consiguió á última hora y ayudados por los dos botes americanos de que llevo hecho mención. Nosotros arriamos un bote que parecía bueno é inmediatamente se fué á pique, y se echó al agua un bote de vapor, que sólo pudo hacer un viaje, porque también se fué á pique por efecto de las averías que tenía, al intentar volver á bordo segunda vez, quedando agarrados á él los tres ó cuatro hombres que lo llevaban y que se salvaron unos á nado y otros los recogió un bote americano.

El Comandante, ayudado por buenos nadadores, había ido á tierra; el segundo y tercero dirigían á bordo el embarco, y necesitándose dirección en tierra, cuando ya venían los botes americanos, yo me fuí á nado, ayudado por dos cabos de mar llamados Juan Llorca y Andrés Sequeiro y mi hijo y Ayudante, Teniente de Navío D. Ángel Cervera.

Concluido el desembarco de la gente, fuí invitado por el Oficial americano que mandaba los botes de seguirle á su buque, que era el yate armado *Gloucester*, á donde fuí acompañado de mi Capitán de bandera, herido, de mi hijo ayudante y del segundo del buque, que fué el último que lo abandonó.

Durante este período, el aspecto del buque era imponente, porque se sucedían las explosiones y estaba para aterrorizar á las almas mejor templadas. — Nada absolutamente creo que pueda salvarse del buque, y nosotros lo hemos perdido

todo, llegando la inmensa mayoría absolutamente desnudos á la playa. — Pocos minutos después que el *Teresa*, embarrancaba el *Oquendo* en una playa como á media legua al Oeste de él, con un incendio parecido al suyo, y se perdieron de vista por el Oeste el *Viscaya* y el *Colón*, perseguidos por la Escuadra enemiga. — Según me ha manifestado el Contador del *Oquendo*, único Oficial que está en el mismo buque que yo, la historia de este desgraciado buque y su heroica tripulación es la siguiente, que tal vez se rectifique algo, pero sólo en detalles, no en el fondo de los hechos.

El desigual y mortífero combate sostenido por este buque, se hizo más desigual aún porque al poco tiempo de comenzado, un proyectil enemigo entró en la torre de proa matando á todo el personal de ella, menos un artillero que quedó muy mal herido. — Á la batería de 14 cm., barrida por el fuego enemigo desde el principio, sólo le quedaron dos cañones útiles con los que continuó defendiéndose con una energía incomparable. — También la torre de popa quedó sin su Oficial-Comandante, muerto por un proyectil del enemigo que entró al abrir la puerta para poder respirar, porque se asfixiaban dentro. — No conoce el Contador la historia de la batería de tiro rápido, y sólo sabe que disparaba, seguramente, lo mismo que toda esta valiente tripulación. — Hubo dos incendios: el primero, que se dominó, ocurrió en el sollado de proa, y el segundo, que se inició á popa, no se pudo dominar, porque ya no daban agua las bombas, quizá por las mismas causas que en el *Teresa*.

Los ascensores de municiones de 14 cm., faltaron desde el principio, pero no faltaron municiones en la batería, mientras que pudo batirse, por los repuestos, que á prevención, se habían puesto en todos los buques. — Cuando el valiente Comandante del *Oquendo* vió que no podía dominar el incendio y no tenía ningún cañón en estado de servicio,

fué cuando se decidió á embarrancar, mandando previamente disparar todos los torpedos, menos los dos de popa, por si se acercaba algún buque enemigo, hasta que llegado el último extremo, mandó arriar la bandera, minutos después que el *Teresa* y previa la consulta á aquellos Oficiales que estaban presentes. Los Comandantes segundo y tercero y tres Tenientes de Navío habían ya muerto. El salvamento de los supervivientes fué organizado por su Comandante, que ha perdido la vida por salvar la de sus subordinados. Hicieron una balsa, arriaron dos lanchitas, únicas embarcaciones que les quedaban útiles, y últimamente fueron auxiliados por embarcaciones americanas, y según me dijo un insurrecto con quien hablé en la playa, también les auxilió un bote que éstos tenían. — Sublime era el espectáculo que presentaban estos dos buques; las continuas explosiones que se sucedían sin cesar, no acobardaban á estos valientes, que han defendido sus buques hasta el punto de no haber podido ser hollados por la planta de ningún enemigo. — Cuando fuí invitado por el Oficial americano á seguirlo, según digo á V. E. I. anteriormente, di instrucciones para el reembarco al tercer Comandante D. Juan Aznar, á quien no he vuelto á ver desde entonces. — Al llegar al buque americano, que era el yate armado *Gloucester*, encontré allí una veintena de heridos, pertenecientes en su mayor parte á los cazatorpederos, los Comandantes de éstos, tres Oficiales del *Teresa*, el Contador del *Oquendo* y nos reunimos entre todos hasta 93 personas, pertenecientes á las dotaciones de la Escuadra. — El Comandante y Oficiales del yate nos recibieron con las mayores atenciones, esforzándose por atender á nuestras necesidades, que eran de todo género, porque llegábamos absolutamente desnudos y hambrientos; me manifestó el Comandante, que como su buque era tan pequeño, no podía

recibir aquella masa de gente, é iba á buscar un buque mayor que los embarcara. — Los insurrectos, con quienes yo había hablado, me habían dicho que con ellos tenían unos 200 hombres, entre los que había cinco ó seis heridos, y me añadieron de parte de su Jefe que si queríamos irnos con ellos, les siguiéramos y nos auxiliarían con lo que ellos tenían, á lo que les contesté que dieran las gracias á su Jefe y le dijeran que nosotros nos habíamos rendido á los americanos; pero que si tenían Médico, les agradecería que curara á una porción de heridos que teníamos en la playa, algunos de ellos muy graves.

Al Comandante del yate le comuniqué esta conversación con los insurrectos y le supliqué reclamara nuestra gente, lo que me prometió, enviando al efecto un destacamento con bandera. También envió algunos víveres de que tan necesitados estaban en la playa.

Seguimos después hacia el O. hasta encontrar el grueso de la Escuadra, de la que se destacó el crucero auxiliar *Paris*, y nuestro yate siguió hasta frente á Cuba, donde recibió órdenes, con arreglo á las que, unos fuimos trasbordados al *Iowa* y otros lo fueron á otros barcos, de ellos, los heridos al buque hospital.

Durante mi permanencia en el yate, pedí á los Comandantes de los cazatorpederos noticia de la suerte que les había cabido, teniendo el sentimiento de saber su triste fin.

De lo ocurrido al *Furor*, puede V. E. I. enterarse detalladamente por la adjunta copia del parte de su Comandante; en él encontró una muerte gloriosa el Capitán de Navío D. Fernando Villaamil, y el número de bajas acredita cómo se ha conducido este pequeño buque, cuyo Comandante también fué herido levemente.

También acompaño á V. E. I. copia del parte que me ha producido el Comandante del *Plutón*, quien también está

herido en un pie y cuyo buque tiene en este día una historia tan gloriosa como su compañero, y ambos como no puede pedir más ni el más exigente.

* * * * *

Réstame decir á V. E. I., para completar los rasgos característicos de esta lúgubre jornada, que nuestros enemigos se han conducido y se conducen actualmente con nosotros, con una hidalguía y delicadeza que no cabe más; no sólo nos han vestido como han podido, desprendiéndose de efectos no sólo del Estado, sino de propiedad particular, sino que han suprimido la mayor parte de los “hurra” por respeto á nuestra amargura; hemos sido y somos objeto de entusiastas felicitaciones por nuestra acción, y todos, á porfía, se han esmerado en hacernos nuestro cautiverio lo más llevadero posible.

Ignoro aún las pérdidas de gente, por estar repartidos en diversos buques, pero estarán en las ideas que hace concebir el telegrama antes inserto.

En resumen: la jornada del 3 ha sido un desastre horroroso, como yo había previsto; el número de muertos es, sin embargo, menor del que yo temía; la Patria ha sido defendida con honor y la satisfacción del deber cumplido deja nuestras conciencias tranquilas, con sólo la amargura de lamentar la pérdida de nuestros queridos compañeros y las desdichas de la Patria.

* * * * *

Dios guarde á V. E. I. muchos años. — En la mar, á bordo del *San Luis*, 9 de Julio de 1898.

— PASCUAL CERVERA.

395. UN MONSTRUO DEL MAR

En Chatham (Inglaterra) fué lanzado al agua ayer tarde un enorme acorazado de primera clase, el mayor de la flota

inglesa. Bautizóle con el nombre de *Magnificent* la condesa Spencer, esposa del jefe del Almirantazgo.

Esta asombrosa máquina de guerra, cuyas condiciones justifican su nombre, mide 370 pies de eslora, 75 de manga y $27\frac{1}{2}$ de puntal, desplazando 14,900 toneladas.

Su andar ordinario es de $16\frac{1}{2}$ nudos por hora, pero con tiro forzado puede alcanzar una velocidad de $17\frac{1}{2}$.

En la batería principal se colocarán cuatro cañones de á 12 pulgadas, recubiertos de alambre, y colocados, dos en barbeta en la parte anterior y dos á popa. La batería auxiliar se compondrá de seis cañones de á 6 pulgadas de tiro rápido y la batería secundaria de 16 de á 12 libras y doce de á tres, también de tiro rápido. Llevará cinco tubos lanza-torpedos, cuatro de los cuales podrán descargarse debajo del agua. Los cañones de á 12 pulgadas se colocarán de modo que sea fácil cargarlos en todas posiciones, á mano ó por maquinaria, y protegidos por planchas de tres pulgadas de diámetro colocadas de modo que giren con el cañón. La construcción de este buque empezó hace sólo un año y los trabajos se han llevado á cabo con rapidez notable.

396.

LA PÓLVORA INGLESA

La pólvora infume que usan los ingleses es la llamada "cordita," mezcla íntima de 58 partes de nitro-glicerina, 37 de algodón-pólvora y 5 de vaselina, y se llama cordita porque para comprimirla y secarla se presenta en masas gelatinosas en forma de cuerdas. Se inflama en un mínimo de 180 grados cuando está en grano, y en temperaturas más elevadas cuando en forma de cuerdas de 50 centímetros de largo y centímetro y medio de grueso. La fábrica de Waltham Abbey manufactura unas mil toneladas al año. Al decir de un colega francés, la cordita se ase-

meja á la pólvora francesa conocida bajo la denominación "B," aunque la inglesa tiene menos potencia explosiva y desarrolla más calor, lo que ofrece el inconveniente de deteriorar rápidamente las piezas. La lyddita, que según el mismo colega, no es otra cosa que la melinita, cuyo secreto robaron los ingleses á Francia, sólo se emplea en la carga de bombas y granadas.

397.**EL COMERCIO ESPAÑOL EN AMÉRICA**

La Cámara de Comercio española de Buenos Aires continúa en su meritoria labor de abrir nuevos mercados en América á los productos españoles.

Al efecto ha dirigido cartas á las Cámaras de Comercio españolas y á los centros de producción, manifestándoles que el Consejo directivo de dicha Cámara insiste en su laudable propósito de celebrar en aquella república una exposición de productos españoles y argentinos. En dichas cartas se hace constar que los argentinos y los españoles allí residentes, en vista de las desgracias que pesan sobre España con la pérdida de las colonias, quieren poner todo su empeño en protegerla y dan cabida en sus regiones á los productos de nuestra patria.

No solamente en la Argentina, sino en otras repúblicas sud-americanas hay también el propósito de estrechar los lazos comerciales con España, fomentando allí la venta de los artículos españoles.

Importantes casas de Valparaíso están decididas á pagar, para reembolsarse después de la venta, los derechos de aduanas y otros gastos que originen las remesas de mercaderías, debiendo ser enviadas libres hasta el puerto.

Crean los conocedores de aquellos mercados que lo más rápido y seguro para abrirlos á la exportación española

sería el envío de medianas remesas en consignación, forma que daría lugar á que sin pérdida de tiempo y en terreno práctico se pudieran hacer algunas operaciones.

Los artículos de más fácil y segura venta, según la nota enviada, son : —

Aceite de oliva, aguardiente embotellado, alambre, alambrados, almendras, alfombras, arroz, azúcar refinado, barajas, calzado para niños, camisas, cepillos, chocolate, clavos de todas clases, colchas, cominos, conservas, corbatas, tapones, cortinas y transparentes, cristalería surtida, cueros bayos, charoles, drogas, efectos para el culto divino, encordaduras, escopetas, cobertores, géneros de punto en general, guitarras, jabón común y perfumado, ladrillos y azulejos, loza y porcelana, mantas, mantones, chales y pañuelos, paños y cachemires, papelería en general, paraguas, perfumería, pimienta, pistolas y revólvers, rifles y carabinas, sardinas, sillas de madera curvada, sombreros de lana y fieltro, toallas, velas de esperma y composición, artículos para cazar.

398.

BOLSA DE MADRID

Empezó la contratación de la semana con alguna paralización y pesadez en las operaciones; pero luego mejoró algún tanto el aspecto del mercado, debido á la mejor fisonomía que ofrecían los del extranjero.

Resultado de esta mejor disposición de los hombres de negocios es el alza que ofrece el cuadro comparativo, observándose que se han repuesto los valores, siendo los más favorecidos los de Aduanas, y los que no han tenido alteración, los de Filipinas.

La situación de la plaza no se ha modificado en lo esencial; sigue abundando el dinero para colocaciones lucrativas, y *no aspiran* más los capitalistas que á un interés que se

aproxime al 5 por 100, admitiendo hasta el 4½ siempre que se cuente con firmeza y alguna esperanza de alza que aumente el capital.

En la semana han circulado rumores que pudieron alarmar á los tenedores de valores, como el de que se iban á rebajar los intereses de las obligaciones del Tesoro y de las demás operaciones del mismo; pero este rumor ha sido rectificado de un modo terminante por el ministro de Hacienda, manifestando que no tiene semejante propósito, entre otras razones, porque no podría imponerse por una ley la rebaja, puesto que dependerá de que los acreedores la admitiesen ó que el Tesoro tuviera fondos para reembolsarles sus créditos, y no ocurre lo uno ni lo otro.

En cambio, las noticias que circulan sobre las economías efectivas que se introducen y de la combinación financiera que se prepara, para encomendar á una Sociedad el pago de los haberes de las clases pasivas mediante un canon fijo, permiten esperar que los gastos del presupuesto se rebajarán en unos sesenta millones, y esto asegura la nivelación y aún la posibilidad de suavizar los impuestos que puedan ser más gravosos, con lo cual podría restablecerse la normalidad financiera y darse alguna satisfacción á los que piden alivio en los tributos.

Sin embargo, esta perspectiva halagüeña viene á turbarla la actitud de resistencia que mantienen los industriales de Barcelona, y que en otras poblaciones quieren imitar, porque hasta que no termine ese conflicto, que puede hacer necesario el empleo de la fuerza, si no hay medio de resolverlo en forma conciliadora, no sólo no habrá tranquilidad completa en el mercado bursátil, sino que pueden surgir alteraciones violentas, si ocurre algún suceso desagradable.

Por eso la contratación de valores se halla, al presente, en circunstancias especiales, que exigen prudencia y no

dejarse impresionar sin motivo justificado, teniendo la seguridad de que en definitiva el afianzamiento y la mejora del crédito es un hecho que se impone por el conocimiento que se va teniendo de las fuerzas del país y por la tendencia que existe de acometer empresas que desarrollen la riqueza y engendren el movimiento industrial.

Los valores mercantiles siguen siendo predilectos, por que se capitalizan al 5 por 100 y se tiene la seguridad de que reditúan más con los dividendos que se vislumbran.

El cambio internacional ha descendido porque ha cesado el acaparamiento de oro para la guerra del Transvaal, y hay más papel de que disponer sobre las plazas extranjeras. No sabemos si en esto habrá influido también algún cambio en el comercio exterior, y habrá que esperar á la publicación de la estadística para conocer ese dato.

Hé aquí la cotización comparada de la semana:—

	DÍA 14 OCTUBRE	DÍA 22. OCTUBRE	DIFERENCIAS EN LA ÚLTIMA SEMANA
VALORES DEL ESTADO			
4 por 100 interior	64.80	65.00	+ 0.20
4 por 100 exterior	71.00	71.30	+ 0.30
4 por 100 amortizable	72.30	72.55	+ 0.25
Billetes de Cuba, 1886.	72.75	72.90	+ 0.15
Ídem, 1890	60.80	61.10	+ 0.30
Obligaciones de Aduanas	96.10	96.50	+ 0.40
Ídem de Filipinas	78.90	78.90	0
VALORES MERCANTILES			
Banco de España	424.00	427.25	+ 3.25
Compañía de Tabacos.	348.00	354.00	+ 6.00
Cédulas Banco Hip. al 5	103.00	102.90	— 0.10
Cédulas al 4	100.00	100.00	0
CAMBIOS			
Londres	32.45	31.55	— 0.90
París	28.40	25.00	— 3.40

399.

ANUNCIOS

Fonda Leones de Oro, situada en la calle del Carmen 30, próximo á la Puerta del Sol. Tiene hospedaje desde 20 reales diarios, chocolate, almuerzo y comida, todo servido á la hora que les convenga. Hay restaurant en la planta baja, donde se sirven almuerzos y comidas desde 8 reales en adelante.

JORGE BLANCO Y CÍA.,
IMPORTADORES, FABRICANTES Y DETALLISTAS.

GRAN SURTIDO DE

GÉNEROS DE PRIMAVERA Y VERANO

en estilos de alta novedad y absolutamente
correctos.

Telas de Seda, Lana, Lino y Algodón,

Vestidos para Señoras, Señoritas y Niñas.

Abrigos, Impermeables, Encajes, Corsés, Sombreros, Calzado y
Guantes, Ropa Interior, Manteles, Frazadas,
Platería y Tapicería.

ROPA HECHA PARA NIÑOS

Y

ARTÍCULOS PARA CABALLEROS,

PARAGUAS, SOMBRILLAS

para Señoras y Señoritas.

Un escogido y elegante surtido de Sedas para vestidos, chaquetas y adornos,
y géneros blancos de todas clases. Sección especial de confecciones
para señoras y niños. Precio fijo invariable. Hay ascensor.

Se despachan pedidos por Correos y por Expreso.

Se envían muestras y catálogos.

Arañas bronce y cristal, de nuestra fabricación, para iglesias y salas. Objetos para regalos de utilidad y adorno. Lámparas de comedores, gabinetes y todo uso. Mueblecitos y otros mil artículos de fantasía. Instalaciones de campanillas eléctricas, teléfonos, telégrafos, pararrayos, luz eléctrica y gas y construcción de todo aparato de alumbrado. Calle Mayor 10, Pérez Hermanos.

Un Médico Especialista garantiza la cura perfecta de todas las enfermedades de la piel, del pecho, del corazón, del hígado, del estómago, dolores musculares y de la cabeza, falta de memoria, cansancio, debilidad orgánica, tumores, cáncer, palidez, etc. Todas las enfermedades nerviosas, gota, reumatismo, epilepsia, apoplejía, etc. Los defectos de nacimiento, lombriz solitaria, todas las formas de hernia, etc. Emplea los mejores aparatos eléctricos para el tratamiento de las enfermedades nerviosas. Cura

TODAS LAS ENFERMEDADES

en pocos días. El envenenamiento de la sangre y todas las afecciones cutáneas. Los males de garganta, boca, nariz y oídos.

GARANTIZA EN TODOS LOS CASOS UNA CURA PERFECTA.

TRATAMIENTO ESPECIAL DE LAS ENFERMEDADES CRÓNICAS.

Examen y tratamiento científico.

EXAMEN PERSONAL GRATIS. CONSULTAS POR CORRESPONDENCIA.

HORAS DE CONSULTA:

De 9 á 1 y de 5 á 8. Domingos, de 8 á 10 y de 2 á 4 y por convenio.

400. LETTERS AND BUSINESS FORMS *

CARTA DE COMERCIO

CEBALLOS Y CÍA.,

NEW YORK.

Cable: CEBALLOS.

Setbre. 9, 1895.

SRES. B. SÁNCHEZ Y CÍA.,

Habana.

Muy Sres. nuestros : —

Confirmamos n/. anterior de 5 del cte. y acusamos recibo de su aple. del 1º, de cuyo contenido quedamos impuestos y seguiremos sus instrucciones respecto al embarque de las sillas para el Sr. D. Julio Sánchez.

Ahora tenemos el gusto de acompañar factura correspondiente al embarque que hemos hecho en el vapor *City of Washington* de 200 rollos alambre para cercas, cuyo importe de \$646.65 dejamos cargado á VV. en cuenta.

Somos sus muy atos. S. S.,

Q. B. S. M.

* See page 242 for all abbreviations hereinafter found.

FACTURA

FACTURA de lo siguiente embarcado por CEBALLOS Y Cía.,
por el vapor *City of Washington* con destino á la
Habana de orden y cuenta de B. SÁNCHEZ Y Cía. y
á la consignación de los mismos.

B. S. y Cía.
Habana.

No. 598.

200 rollos alambre para cercas Brutas 20,000 lbs., Netas 19,000 lbs., @ 2.15	\$408.50	
Descuento 2 %	8.17	
GASTOS		\$400.33
Seguro marítimo s/ \$715 @ $\frac{1}{2}$ % . .	\$3.57	
Despacho de aduana y menudos . . .	3.50	
Flete s/ conocimiento	220.00	
Factura consular	3.50	230.57
		\$630.90
Comisión $2\frac{1}{2}$ %		15.75
		\$646.65
AL DEBE de la cuenta de los SRES. B. SÁNCHEZ Y Cía.		

S. e. ú. o.

NEW YORK, 9 de Setbre., 1895.

CEBALLOS & Cía.

CARTA DE COMERCIO

CEBALLOS Y CÍA.,

NEW YORK.

Cable: CEBALLOS.

Agosto 15, 1897.

SRES. B. SÁNCHEZ Y Cía.,

Habana.

Muy Sres. nuestros :—

Confirmamos n/. anterior del 6 de Julio ppdo. y carecemos de sus apbles. á que referirnos.

Ahora tenemos el gusto de acompañar la c/venta de 11 balas caucho y 7 sacos café por el vapor *City of Washington*, cuyo líquido producido de \$489.26 dejamos abonado á VV. en cuenta.

Sentimos que no hayamos podido sacar mejor partido por el café pero su calidad era tan inferior que no pudimos vender el artículo por mejor precio.

Nos repetimos sus muy atos. S. S.,

Q. B. S. M.

CUENTA DE VENTA

No. 952.

CUENTA DE VENTA de lo siguiente recibido por vapor *City of Washington* llegado Julio 7, 1897, y vendidos por CEBALLOS & Cía. por orden y cuenta y riesgo de los Sres. B. Sánchez y Cía.

A—A

A

J—S

7 Balas caucho 648 $\frac{21}{8}$ lbs. @ 51 $\frac{1}{2}$. . .	\$322.90	
4 ídem ídem 356 $\frac{11}{8}$ ídem 45	155.25	
		\$478.15
7 sacos Café 1189 17 $\frac{1}{2}$ 1171 $\frac{1}{2}$ @ 6 $\frac{1}{2}$. . .	76.15	
Menos 2 % descuento	1.52	74.63
		\$552.78
GASTOS		
Seguro marítimo s/. \$600 á $\frac{1}{2}$ %	\$3.00	
Flete caucho y café (\$10.46)	31.13	
Gastos de Aduana	3.60	
Conducción al almacén	1.75	
Almacenaje y trabajadores	.56	
Pesar	3.63	
Seguro de incendio	.50	
Corretaje 1 % s/. \$552.78	5.53	
Comisión 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ %	13.82	63.52
Líquido producido		\$489.26
AL HABER de la cuenta de los		
SRES. B. SÁNCHEZ Y CÍA.		

S. e. á. o.

NEW YORK, Agosto 15, 1897.

CEBALLOS & Cía.

LETRA DE CAMBIO

HABANA, 26 de Marzo, 1897.

Por \$150.24 cy.

Á cinco días vista de esta Primera de Cambio (no habiéndolo hecho por la Segunda ó Tercera) se servirán VV. mandar pagar á la orden de los SRES. CEBALLOS Y CIA. la cantidad de

Ciento cincuenta $\frac{24}{100}$ pesos currency.....
 valor recibido que cargarán VV. en nuestra cuenta, según aviso de

Á los

S. S. Q. B. S. M.

SRES. ÁLVARO BAZÁN Y Cía.,
 563 Pearl Street,
 NEW YORK.

B. SÁNCHEZ Y CIA.

UN PAGARÉ

Vence en 23 de Octubre de 1903.

Por \$1575.57 oro americano.

Pagaremos en esta Ciudad prefijamente el día Veintitrés de Octubre de Mil Novecientos tres á la orden de los Sres. Ceballos y Cía. la cantidad de Un mil quinientos setenta y cinco $\frac{57}{100}$ pesos en oro americano, ó su equivalente en oro español, valor por saldo de nuestra cuenta corriente, según convenio, con intereses al seis (6 %) por ciento desde esta fecha hasta el día de su vencimiento.

HABANA, 23 de Octubre, 1898.

B. SÁNCHEZ Y Cía.

401.**QUIEBRA INDUSTRIAL**

La firma de A. D. & Son de Nueva York se ha declarado en quiebra con un pasivo que se hace subir á \$500,000.

Dedicábase la sociedad á diversos negocios, pero con especialidad á la fabricación de fieltros para pianos y cajas para los mismos.

En sus talleres trabajaban unos mil obreros, y setenta empleados en sus almacenes y escritorios.

Atribúyese la quiebra á la imposibilidad en que se encontró la firma de levantar fondos con su papel, pues aunque gozaba de buen crédito, los rumores de guerra que han causado tanta perturbación en los negocios, le imposibilitaron hacerse con el numerario indispensable.

Dícese que la firma espera poder continuar más tarde sus operaciones.

ENGLISH VOCABULARY

All nouns are preceded by the definite article to indicate their gender. In writing the sentences, this article must be used or omitted, according as it is required by the syntax or not.

A dash (—) means the repetition of the English word previously defined in Spanish.

A

abandon (to), abandonar.
 abhor (to), detestar.
 able (to be), poder (209).
 about, acerca de.
 absence, la ausencia.
 absent, ausente.
 absolute, absoluto, -a.
 absolutely, absolutamente.
 absurd, absurdo, -a.
 accept (to), aceptar.
 accident, el accidente.
 accompany (to), acompañar.
 according to, según.
 account, la cuenta; on — of, á
 causa de.
 accuse (to) oneself, acusarse.
 accused, el reo.
 accustomed, acostumbrado, -a.
 acknowledge reception, acusar recibo.
 acquittal, el descargo.
 act, el acto.
 act (to), obrar; (*discharge func-*
tions), actuar.
 action, la acción.
 activity, la actividad.
 actor, el actor.
 adage, el adagio.
 adjective, el adjetivo.

admiral, el almirante.
 admire (to), admirar.
 admit (to), admitir.
 admittance, la entrada.
 adopt (to), adoptar.
 advance (to), avanzar.
 advice, el consejo.
 affair, el asunto.
 affliction, la aflicción.
 after, después de.
 afternoon, la tarde.
 against, contra.
 age, la edad.
 ago, hace (*before the expression of*
time, as: hace un año, a year ago).
 agreeable, agradable.
 agreed upon, convenido, -a.
 aid (*help*), la ayuda; (*pecuniary*),
 el auxilio.
 aid (to), ayudar.
 air, el aire.
 aisle, la nave.
 all, todo, -a; all that, todo lo que.
 allege (to), alegar.
 alleviate (to), aliviar.
 allow (to), dejar.
 almost, casi.
 alone, solo, -a.
 already, ya.

also, también.
 altar, el altar.
 although, aunque.
 always, siempre.
 American, americano, -a.
 amiable, amable.
 an, un, una.
 ancestors, los antepasados.
 anchor (to), fondear.
 ancient, el antiguo.
 ancient, antiguo, -a.
 and, y (*é before i- and hi-*).
 Anglo-Boer, anglo-boer.
 animal, el animal.
 annual, anual.
 another, otro, -a.
 answer (to), responder; (*a letter*), contestar.
 Antilles, las Antillas.
 antiquity, la antigüedad.
 any one (*after negat.*), nadie.
 aphelion, el afelio.
 appeal (to), apelar.
 appeals, la apelación.
 applaud (to), aplaudir.
 applause, el aplauso.
 apple, la manzana.
 appointed (to be), nombrarse.
 April, (el) abril.
 Aragon, (el) Aragón.
 area, el espacio.
 argue (to), argüir (186).
 army, el ejército.
 around, alrededor de.
 arrange (to), componer (201); (*dis-
 pose*), disponer (201).
 arrival, la llegada.
 arrive (to), llegar.
 arrogate to oneself, arrogarse.
 art, el arte.
 as, como; (= so), tan; as to, en
 cuanto á.

ascend (to), subir.
 ask (*as a question*), preguntar; ask
 for, pedir (181); (= *to beg*), pedir.
 aspect, el aspecto.
 ass, el burro.
 assembly, la reunión; (*deliberative*),
 la asamblea.
 assets, el activo (*used in singular*).
 associate (to), acompañarse.
 assure (to), asegurar.
 astronomy, la astronomía.
 at, á.
 attack, el ataque.
 attack (to), atacar.
 attend (to), atender.
 attention, la atención.
 attorney, el procurador; — ge-
 neral, el procurador general.
 audience, el auditorio.
 aunt, la tía.
 author, el autor.
 await (to), esperar.
 awake (to), despertar (164).
 axis, el eje.
 axle, el eje.

B

back-seat, el postrer lugar.
 backward, atrasado, -a.
 bad, malo, -a (25).
 badly, mal.
 bail, la fianza.
 balloon, el globo.
 bandit, el bandido.
 bank, el banco.
 bankrupt (to be), estar en quiebra.
 banquet, el banquete.
 bark (to), ladrar.
 basin, la jofaina.
 batch, la porción.
 bathroom, el cuarto de baños.
 battle, la batalla.

- be (to), ser, estar (136); — back, estar de vuelta.
 bear (to *suffer*), sufrir; (to *carry*), llevar.
 bear, el oso.
 bear and bull (to) the market, jugar (168) á la baja y al alza.
 beat (to), batir.
 beaten, batido.
 beautiful, bello, -a; the —, lo bello.
 beauty, la beldad.
 because, porque.
 because of, á causa de.
 become (to), llegar á ser, meterse á (226).
 bed, la cama.
 Bedeviled, el Hechizado.
 bedroom, la alcoba.
 beer, la cerveza.
 before (*prep.*), antes de; (*adv.*), antes.
 begin (to), principiar.
 believe (to), creer (206).
 belong (to), pertenecer (143, a).
 besieger, el sitiador.
 best, mejor; best man, el padrino.
 better, mejor; is better, más vale.
 between, entre.
 big (*earnings*), pingüe.
 bill, la cuenta.
 biped, el bípedo.
 bird, el pájaro.
 bishop, el obispo.
 bite (to), morder (170).
 bitten, mordido, -a.
 bitter, amargo, -a.
 bivouac (to), vivaquear.
 blood, la sangre.
 blundering, el desatino.
 bluster, la jactancia.
 board, la junta; — of directors, la junta directiva, el consejo administrativo.
 body, el cuerpo.
 Boers, los boers.
 bold, osado, -a.
 boldness, la osadía.
 book, el libro.
 bookcase, la biblioteca.
 bookkeeper, el tenedor de libros.
 bookkeeping, la teneduría de libros.
 bookstand, el estante.
 born (be), nacer (143, a).
 borrow (to), pedir prestado.
 boss, el cacique.
 bossism, el caciquismo.
 both, ambos, -as.
 box, la caja; (*letter*), el buzón.
 branch office, el sucursal.
 brave, valiente.
 bravery, la valentía.
 bread, el pan.
 break (to), romper, quebrar (164); (*burst, break out*), estallar.
 breakfast, el almuerzo.
 breakfast (to), almorzar (143, 4, 167).
 bride, la novia.
 bridegroom, el novio.
 bring (to), traer (193).
 broken, quebrantado, -a.
 brother, el hermano.
 brother-in-law, el cuñado.
 brush, el cepillo.
 bucolic, bucólico, -a.
 budget, el presupuesto.
 bugle, la corneta.
 burning, abrasador, -a.
 business, los negocios; — house, la casa de negocios; — man, el hombre de negocios.
 bust, el busto.
 but, pero; but for, á no ser por.

butter, la mantequilla.
 buy (to), comprar.
 by, por.
 by-laws, el reglamento.

C

call (to), llamar; be called, llamarse;
 be called (*of a meeting*), convocarse.
 calm, la bonanza.
 camellia, la camelia.
 camp, el campamento.
 campaign, la campaña.
 can, poder (209).
 capable, capaz, -ces.
 Cape Horn, el Cabo de Hornos.
 capital (*city*), la capital; (*money*), el capital.
 captain, el capitán.
 card (*playing*), el naipe.
 cardinal, cardinal.
 care, el cuidado.
 carnivorous, carnívoro, -a.
 carry (to), llevar; carry on, llevar, hacer (197).
 case, el caso.
 casket, la cajita.
 cat, el gato.
 catch (to), coger; — a cold, resfriarse.
 cavalry, la caballería.
 cease (to), cesar.
 celebrated, célebre.
 cellar, el sótano.
 cent, el centavo.
 center, el centro.
 central, central.
 century, el siglo.
 ceremony, la ceremonia.
 certain, cierto, -a.
 certainly, por cierto.
 Chæroneæ, Querónea.
 chain, la cadena.
 chair, la silla.
 chamber of commerce, la cámara de comercio.
 change (to), cambiar de; — one's mind, mudar de consejo.
 changing, el cambiar.
 charitable, caritativo, -a.
 charity, la caridad.
 Charles, Carlos.
 charm, el encanto.
 charming, encantador, -a.
 charter, la escritura de fundación.
 chase (to), cazar.
 cheap, barato, -a.
 cheek, el descaro.
 cheese, el queso.
 cherry, la cereza.
 chestnut (*color*), castaño, -a.
 chess, el ajedrez.
 chickpea, el garbanzo.
 child, el niño.
 chin, la barba.
 choose (to), escoger.
 Christian, el cristiano.
 church, la iglesia.
 cite (to), citar.
 city, la ciudad; — government, el ayuntamiento.
 civilization, la civilización.
 class, la clase.
 clerk, el dependiente.
 close (to), cerrar (164).
 closing, el cerrar.
 clothes, los vestidos.
 clothing, la ropa.
 cloud, la nube.
 coffee, el café.
 coin, la moneda.
 coinage, la acuñación.
 cold, frío, -a.
 collect (to get together), juntar.

- colonel**, el coronel.
colony, la colonia.
color, el color.
comb, el peine.
come (to), venir (202); — **down**, bajar; — **out**, salir (199); — **up**, subir.
command (to), mandar.
commercial paper, los valores endosables.
commission business, los negocios de comisión.
commit (to), cometer; — **suicide**, el suicidarse.
common, común; (*pl.*) comunes.
company, la compañía, la sociedad.
complete (to), completar.
complicated, complicado, -a.
conceal (to), ocultar.
concentration, la concentración.
concert, el concierto.
conclude (to), comprender.
condition, el estado, la condición.
conduct (to), conducir (207).
congratulate (to), felicitar; — **each other**, felicitarse.
congress, el congreso.
conjugation, la conjugación.
conscientiously, concienzudamente.
consent (to), consentir (174).
consequence, la consecuencia.
consequently, por consiguiente.
consider (to), considerar; (*deliberate over*), tener (136) sobre el tapete.
considerable, considerable.
consolation, el consuelo.
console (to), consolar (167).
conspiracy, la conspiración.
constitution, la constitución.
consult (to), consultar.
consumption, el consumo.
contain (to), contener (136).
contemplate (to), contemplar.
contented, contento, -a; **to be** —, estar contento, -a.
continue (to), continuar.
contractor, el contratista.
converse (to), hablar.
convince (to), convencer.
cook, la cocinera.
copper, el cobre.
corner (street), la esquina.
corps, el cuerpo.
corpse, el cadáver.
cost (to), costar (167).
councilman, el vocal.
country (general), el país, (*pl.*) los países; (*in contrast to town*), el campo; (*fatherland*), la patria.
country-seat, la finca.
couple, el par.
coupon, el cupón.
courage, el valor.
course, el rumbo; **of** —, por supuesto.
court, el tribunal.
cousin, el primo, la prima.
cover (to), cubrir (222).
cow, la vaca.
cracker, el bizcocho.
crank, el chiflado.
crazy, loco, -a.
Creator, el Criador.
credit, el haber.
creditor, el acreedor.
crime, el crimen.
criminal, el reo.
crisis, la crisis.
critical, crítico, -a.
cross (to), cruzar.
crowd, la multitud.
cruiser, el crucero.
cube, el cubo.
cultivate (to), cultivar.

cultured, culto, -a.
 cup, la taza.
 curate, el cura.
 custom, la costumbre.
 custom-house, la aduana.

D

dahlia, la dalia.
 daily, cada día; — papers, la
 prensa.
 damage, el daño.
 dance (to), bailar.
 danger, el peligro.
 daughter, la hija.
 day, el día; every —, todos los días.
 dead, muerto, -a.
 dealer, el traficante.
 dear, caro, -a.
 death, la muerte.
 debit, el debe.
 debt, la deuda.
 deceive (to), engañar; — oneself,
 engañarse.
 decide (to), decidir.
 declare (to), declarar.
 deep, profundo, -a.
 defend (to), defender (166).
 defendant, el demandado.
 defense, la defensa.
 degenerate (to), degenerar.
 dejected, abatido, -a.
 delay (to), delatar.
 deliberation, la deliberación.
 delicate, delicado, -a.
 delicious, delicioso, -a.
 delightful, delicioso, -a.
 deliver (to), librar.
 demagogue, el demagogo.
 demand (to), exigir.
 democrat, el demócrata.
 Demosthenes, Demóstenes.
 deny (to), negar (143, 2, 164).

depend (to), depender.
 depositor, el depositante.
 derived (to be), derivarse.
 deserve (to), merecer (143, a).
 desirable (to be), ser de desear.
 desire, el deseo.
 desire (to), desear, querer (209).
 desperation, la desesperación.
 despicable, despreciable.
 despise (to), menospreciar.
 despotism, el despotismo.
 detachment, el destacamento.
 devil, el diablo.
 devise (to), inventar.
 devour (to), tragar.
 dictate (to), dictar.
 die (to), morir (178).
 differ (to), diferir (174).
 different, distinto, -a, diferente.
 difficult, difícil.
 difficulty, la dificultad.
 digestion, la digestión.
 dimension, la dimensión.
 dining-room, el comedor.
 dinner, la comida.
 direct, directo, -a.
 disagreeable, desagradable.
 disappear (to), desaparecer.
 disastrous, desastroso, -a.
 discontented, discontento, -a.
 discount (to), descontar.
 discouraged, desanimado, -a.
 discover (to), descubrir.
 discovery, el descubrimiento.
 discuss (to), discutir.
 disease, la enfermedad.
 dismiss (to), sobreseer.
 dismount (to), apearse.
 disposed, dispuesto, -a.
 disposition, la disposición.
 dissolve (*active tr.*), disolver (171);
 (*neuter*), disolverse.

dissuade (to), disuadir.
 distance, la distancia.
 distant, distante.
 distinction, la distinción.
 distract (to), molestar.
 distribute (to), distribuir (185).
 divide (to), dividir.
 do (to), hacer (197).
 dog, el perro.
 dollar, el duro, peso.
 domestic, doméstico, -a.
 dominoes, el dominó (*used in sing.*).
 done, hecho, -a.
 door, la puerta.
 double, doble.
 doubt (to), dudar.
 doubt, la duda.
 dozen, la docena.
 draft, la letra, libranza.
 drama, el drama.
 dramatist, el dramaturgo.
 draught, el golpe.
 drawn, tirado, -a.
 dream, el sueño.
 dress (to), vestirse (181).
 drink (to), beber.
 duck, el pato.
 dude, el pollo.
 durable, duradero, -a.
 during, durante.
 duty, el deber.
 dwell (to), residir.
 dwelling-place, la morada.

E

each, cada.
 early (very), con las gallinas.
 earn (to), ganar.
 earnings, las ganancias.
 earth, la tierra.
 easily, fácilmente.
 East, el este.

easy, fácil.
 easy-chair, la butaca.
 eat (to), comer.
 eatables, los comestibles.
 edition, la edición.
 effect, el efecto.
 effrontery, el descaro.
 egg, el huevo.
 eight, ocho.
 eighteen, dieziocho.
 elect (to), elegir (143, 8, 181).
 election, la elección.
 electric, eléctrico, -a.
 elephant, el elefante.
 eleven, once; — o'clock, las once.
 elliptical, elíptico, -a.
 eloquent, elocuente.
 embalmed, embalsamado, -a.
 employment, el empleo.
 end, el fin.
 end (to), terminar.
 ended, terminado, -a.
 endorse (to), endosar.
 enemy, el enemigo.
 engine, la máquina.
 English, inglés, inglesa; (*language*), el inglés.
 enlightenment, la ilustración.
 enormous, enorme.
 enter (to), entrar en; — an appeal, interponer (201) una apelación.
 entertaining, entretenido, -a.
 entreat (to), suplicar.
 envelope, el sobre.
 equal (to), igualar.
 equal, igual.
 equality, la igualdad.
 equally, igualmente.
 escape (to), escapar.
 especially, sobre todo.
 establish (to), establecer (143, a).
 established, establecido, -a.

establishment, el establecimiento.
esteemed, estimado, -a.
eternal, eterno, -a; **the Eternal**, el Eterno.
Europe, (la) Europa.
European, europeo, -a.
even, aun.
evening, la tarde.
event, el suceso.
ever, nunca.
every, cada; — **body**, todo el mundo.
evident, evidente.
evil, el mal.
evil (*adj.*), malo, -a (25).
example, el ejemplo.
exceedingly, sumamente.
excuse (to) oneself, excusarse.
execute (to), ejecutar.
execution, la ejecución.
exercise, el ejercicio.
exist (to), existir.
expansion, la expansión.
expect (to), esperar.
experiment, la experiencia.
explain (to), explicar.
explode (to), reventar (164).
express (to), expresar.
exquisite, exquisito, -a.
extend, prorrogar.
extremity, la extremidad.
eye, el ojo.

F

face, la cara, el rostro.
fail (to), dejar de.
fail, (la) falta.
failure, la quiebra.
faint (to), desmayarse.
faithful, fiel.
fall (to), caer (192).
falling off, la rebaja.
family, la familia.

famous, afamado, -a.
farmer, el labrador.
fast (to), ayunar.
faster, más de prisa.
fat, grueso, -a.
father, el padre.
fault, la falta.
favor, el favor.
fear (to), temer.
fear, el miedo, terror.
feared, temido, -a.
feasible, hacedero, -a.
fellow-citizen, el conciudadano.
few, pocos, -as.
field, el campo.
fifteen, quince.
fifteenth (*date*), el quince.
fifth, quinto, -a.
fight (to), batirse.
finale, el final.
finally, por terminar.
find (to), encontrar (167), hallar.
fine, fino, -a.
finer, más fino, -a.
finish (to), acabar.
fire, la lumbre.
fired, tirado, -a.
firm, la razón.
first, primero, -a (25).
fish, el pez, los peces.
fit (to), venir á (202).
fit, apto, -a.
five, cinco.
fix (to), fijar.
flag of truce, la bandera de parlamento.
flank, el flanco.
flatter (to), lisonjear.
flattery, la lisonja.
flee (to), huir (185).
fleet, la escuadra.
flesh, la carne.

flock (*in proverb*), la camada; (*otherwise*), el rebaño.
floor (*in a meeting*), la palabra; **to take the** —, tomar la palabra.
Flora, Flora.
flower, la flor.
fly to (to), buscar.
focus (*pl. -ci*), el foco.
fog, la niebla.
fold, el corral.
follow (to), seguir (143, 10, 181).
followed, seguido, -a.
following, siguiente.
folly, la locura.
food, el alimento.
fool, el necio.
foot, el pie.
for (*prep.*), para.
for (= *because*), porque.
ford, el vado.
forget (to), olvidar, olvidarse.
fork, el tenedor.
form (to), formar.
former, aquél, -la, aquéllos, -as.
formerly, en tiempos pasados.
forsake (to), abandonar.
fortnight, quince días.
fortune, la fortuna.
forty, cuarenta; — **-three**, cuarenta y tres.
found (to be), encontrarse (167).
foundation, el fundamento.
fountain-pen, la pluma de fuente.
four, cuatro; — **o'clock**, las cuatro.
fourteenth, decimocuarto, -a.
fourth, cuarto, -a.
fracture, la fractura.
fragrant, fragante.
France, (la) Francia.
fraternity, la fraternidad.
fraud, la estafa.
free, libre.

French, francés, francesa; (*language*), el francés.
frequent, frecuente.
fresh, fresco, -a.
Friday, el viernes.
friend, el amigo, la amiga.
from, de.
fruit, el fruto, (*in general*) la fruta.
fruit-store, la frutería.
fruit-tree, el árbol frutal.
full, lleno, -a.
fund, el fondo.
fundamental, fundamental.
furious, furioso, -a.
furnish (to), proporcionar.

G

gain (to), ganar.
garden, el jardín.
gardener, el jardinero.
gender, el género.
general, el general.
generally, generalmente.
gentleman, el caballero.
Germany, (la) Alemania.
get (to), buscar; — **oneself**, ponerse (201); — **along**, adelantarse; — **drunk**, embriagarse; — **married**, casarse; — **out**, salir (199); — **rich**, enriquecerse; — **up**, levantarse.
gift, el regalo, el don.
give (to), dar (189).
glass, la copa, el vaso.
glove, el guante.
gnaw (to), roer (219).
go (to), ir (214), andar (188); — **astray**, engañarse; — **away**, irse; — **down**, bajar; — **driving**, ir, andar en coche; — **to bed**, acostarse: (167); — **out**, salir (199); — **up**, subir.

God, Dios; god, el dios (*pl.* -es).
 gold, el oro.
 golden, dorado, -a.
 good, bueno, -a (25); good deal of (*adj.*), mucho, -a.
 goodness, la bondad.
 goods, los géneros.
 goose, el ganso.
 government bonds, los valores del estado.
 governor-general, el gobernador general.
 grammar, la gramática.
 grand, grandioso, -a.
 grant (to), conceder.
 grape, la uva.
 gravitation, la gravitación.
 gray, pardo, -a.
 great, grande (25, c).
 greater, mayor.
 Greeks, los griegos.
 greyhound, el galgo.
 grip, la maleta.
 groom, el novio.
 grow (to), crecer (143, a).
 guarantee, la garantía.
 guard, el guarda.
 guess (to), adivinar.
 guitar, la guitarra.
 gunner, el artillero.
 Gypsy, (el, la) gitano, -a.

H

hair, el pelo.
 half (*noun*), la mitad; (*adj.*), medio, -a.
 hall (*room*), la sala; (*entrance*), el vestíbulo.
 halt (to), hacer (197) alto.
 hand, la mano; (*of a watch*), la manecilla.
 handkerchief, el pañuelo.

happen (to), acertar (164); (*impersonal*), suceder.
 happy, feliz (*pl.* -ces).
 harbor, el puerto.
 hard, duro, -a.
 hare, la liebre.
 harm, el daño.
 hat, el sombrero.
 hatbox, la sombrerera.
 hate (to), aborrecer; — each other, aborrecerse.
 have (to), tener, haber (136); to have to, tener que.
 he, él; he who, el que.
 head, la cabeza; — of the firm, el jefe de la casa.
 health, la salud.
 hear (to), oír (194).
 hearing, el oído.
 heart, el corazón.
 heavenly, celeste.
 held (to be), verificarse; held up, detenido, -a (detener, 136).
 hen, la gallina.
 her (*poss. adj.*), su, sus; (*pronoun*), ella; (*obj. of verb*), la.
 herbivorous, herbívoro, -a.
 here, aquí.
 herewith, con esto.
 higher, superior.
 highest, más alto, -a.
 hill, la colina.
 him, él; (*obj. of verb*), le.
 his, su, sus (71-72).
 historian, el historiador.
 hog, el cerdo.
 hold one's tongue (to), callarse.
 home, la casa; at —, en casa; (to) home, á casa.
 Homer, Homero.
 honey, la miel.
 honor, el honor.

honor (to), honrar; — (*a draft*), aceptar.
honorable (honored), honrado, -a; honorable.
hope (to), esperar.
hope, la esperanza.
Horace, Horacio.
horrible, horroroso, -a.
horse, el caballo.
horseman, el jinete.
hotel, la posada.
hour, la hora; **hour-hand**, el horario.
house, la casa.
how, como; —? cómo; — **much**, cuanto, -a; — **much**? cuánto, -a; — **many**? cuántos, -as; — **long**? cuánto tiempo.
howl (to), aullar.
hubbub, el bullicio.
human, humano, -a.
humble, humilde.
humbug, el charlatán.
hunt (to), cazar.
hunter, el cazador.
hurl (to), tirar.
husband, el marido.
hyena, la hiena.
hypocrite, el hipócrita.

I

idiom, el modismo.
idle, ocioso, -a.
if, si.
ignorance, la ignorancia.
ills, los males.
imagine (to), figurarse.
imitator, el imitador.
immensity, la inmensidad.
immortality, la inmortalidad.
impetus, el ímpetu.
important, importante.

impossible, imposible.
imputed (to be), imputarse.
in, en.
incapable, incapaz (*pl. -ces*).
incident, el incidente.
inclemency, la inclemencia.
inconsiderate, inconsiderado, -a.
individuality, la individualidad.
indulgent, indulgente.
infantry, la infantería.
influence, la influencia.
inform (to), informar.
inhabitant, el habitante.
inherit (to), heredar.
injury, la injuria.
injustice, la injusticia.
ink, la tinta.
innocent, inocente.
insist (to), insistir.
inspiration, la inspiración.
inspire (to), inspirar.
instant, del actual.
instantly, en el acto.
instruct (to), instruir (185).
intelligence, la inteligencia.
intelligent, inteligente.
intend (to), pensar (164).
intention, la intención.
interest (to), interesar; — **oneself**, interesarse.
interesting, interesante.
international, internacional.
intimate, íntimo, -a.
into, en.
intricacies, las dificultades.
intrinsic, intrínscico, -a.
invent (to), inventar.
invention, la invención.
invest (to), invertir (74).
involuntary, involuntario, -a.
iron, el hierro.
island, la isla.

it, *m. le, lo, f. la; (neuter), lo (when obj. of a verb), ello (when obj. of a prep.).*

Italian, el italiano.

its, su, sus.

J

jewel, la alhaja.

jocularly, jocosamente.

joke (to), burlarse, chancear.

journey, el viaje.

judge, el juez.

juice, el jugo.

jurisdiction, la jurisdicción.

jury, el jurado.

just, justo, -a.

justify (to), justificar.

justly, con justicia.

K

keep (to), fijar; — (*word*), cumplir con; to be kept, guardarse.

kicks, las coces.

kidney bean, el frijol.

kill (to), matar; — oneself, matarse.

kind, la clase, especie.

kind-hearted, benévolo, -a.

kindness, la amabilidad.

king, el rey, -es.

kingdom, el reino.

kiss (to), besar.

kitchen, la cocina.

knee, la rodilla.

knife, el cuchillo.

knock (to), llamar.

know (to), saber (211, a); conocer (211, b).

knowledge, el conocimiento.

known, conocido, -a.

L

labor, la labor.

lack, la falta.

lamb, el cordero.

land, la tierra.

landlady, la huéspeda.

language, la lengua.

large, grande; (*bulky*), grueso, -a.

last, pasado, -a; último, -a; last

night, anoche.

last (to), durar.

late, tarde.

later, más tarde.

Latin, el latín.

latter, éste, ésta.

laugh (to), reír (182, a).

laughing strain (in a), riendo.

laundress, la lavandera.

law la ley, -es.

lawyer, el abogado.

lay (*to establish*), echar.

laziness, la pereza.

lazy, holgazán, holgazana.

lead (to), llevar, conducir (207); (*into temptation*), meter.

leading, principal.

learn (to), aprender.

leave (to), dejar; (*by inheritance*), legar.

left, izquierdo, -a.

leg, la pierna.

lend (to), prestar.

lentil, la lenteja.

Leo, León.

less, menos.

lesser menor.

lesson, la lección.

letter, la carta.

liabilities, el pasivo (*used in sing.*).

liberty, la libertad.

library, la biblioteca.

license, la licencia.

lie down (to), acostarse (167).

lieutenant, el teniente.

life, la vida.

lifetime, la vida.
 light, la luz.
 like, como.
 lily, el lirio.
 line, la línea.
 lion, el león.
 lip, el labio.
 liquid, el líquido.
 listen to (to), escuchar.
 little (*adj.*), poco, -a.
 little (a), un poco (de); the —, el poco (de).
 little girl, la chiquita, niña, muchachita.
 little mote, la motita.
 live (to), vivir.
 loan (to), prestar.
 locomotive, la locomotora.
 long, largo, -a.
 look for (to), buscar.
 Lord, (el) lord.
 lose (to), perder (166).
 loss, la pérdida.
 lost, perdido, -a.
 love (to), amar, querer (209).
 low, bajo.
 lower, inferior.

M

machine, la máquina.
 made, hecho, -a.
 maiden, soltera.
 mail, el correo.
 make (to), hacer (197); make (one's) hair stand on end, ponerle (201) (á uno) el cabello de punta.
 malady, la enfermedad.
 man, el hombre; man-of-war, el buque de guerra.
 manager, el gerente.
 mandate, el precepto.
 manners, los modales.
 manuscript, el manuscrito.

many, muchos, -as.
 mariner's compass, la brújula.
 mark (to), marcar.
 Mars, Marte.
 master (to), vencer.
 master, el señor; (*teacher*), el maestro.
 masticate (to), masticar.
 masticated, masticado, -a.
 matter (*thing, affair*), el asunto; (*material*), la materia.
 may (to), poder (209).
 mayor, el alcalde.
 meal, la comida.
 mean, medio, -a.
 meaning, la intención.
 means, los medios.
 measure, la medida.
 meat, la carne.
 meditate (to), pensar (164).
 meet (to), encontrar (167); (*to assemble*), reunirse.
 meeting, la junta.
 member, el miembro; (*of a council*), el vocal.
 mend (to), componer (201).
 mendicant, el mendigo.
 mere, mero, -a.
 merely, meramente.
 merit (to), merecer (143, a).
 message, el mensaje.
 metaphysics, la metafísica.
 method, el método.
 Mexico, México or Méjico (*spelling with x is preferred, but pronunciation is always that of j*).
 midnight, (la) media noche.
 mineral, el mineral.
 minute, el minuto.
 minute-hand, el minutero.
 misappropriation, la malversación.
 misfortune, la desgracia, el infortunio.

misogynist, el misógino.
miss (to), errar (165).
mistake, la falta.
mistress, la señora.
mitten (the), calabazas.
modern, moderno, -a.
modest, modesto, -a.
moment, el momento.
Monday, el lunes.
money, el dinero.
month, el mes (-es).
moon, la luna.
Moor, el moro.
morality, la moralidad.
more, más.
moreover, además.
morning, la mañana.
mortal, mortal.
most, más.
motion, el movimiento.
motive, el motivo.
mother, la madre.
motto, el mote.
mountain, la montaña.
mourning, el luto.
mouth, la boca.
move (to), moverse (170).
movement, el movimiento.
much (adv.), mucho; **so** —, tanto.
much, mucho, -a.
murder, el asesinato.
murmur (to), murmurar.
muses, las musas.
museum, el museo.
music-teacher, el maestro de música.
mustache, el bigote.
my, mi, mis.

N

nail (of finger), la uña.
name, el nombre.
namely, á saber.

napkin, la servilleta.
narrow, estrecho, -a.
nation, la nación.
national, nacional.
native (adj.), maternal.
native, el natural.
nature, la naturaleza.
navigator, el navegante.
Neapolitan, neapolitano, -a.
near (prep.), cerca de.
near (adj.), cercano, -a.
nearer, más cerca de.
necessary, necesario, -a.
need (to), necesitar.
neglect (to), descuidar de.
negligence, la negligencia.
neighbor, el vecino.
nephew, el sobrino.
never, nunca (*verb preceded by no*).
new, nuevo, -a.
news, la noticia.
newspaper, el periódico.
next (adv.), después; (*adj.*), que viene, entrante.
night, la noche.
nightfall, la caída de la noche.
nightmare, la pesadilla.
nine, nueve.
no one, nadie.
noble, noble.
noise, el ruido.
noon, el mediodía.
North, el norte.
northern, septentrional.
nose, la nariz.
not, no.
note (promissory), el pagaré.
noted, famoso, -a.
nothing, nada.
noun, el nombre.
novel, la novela.
novelist, el novelista.

now, ahora.

number, el número.

O

object (*gram.*), el régimen.

observe (to), observar.

obtain (to), conseguir (143, 10, 181).

occupy (to), ocupar.

ocean, el océano.

o'clock, la (*sing.*), las (*followed by the number of the hour or hours*).

of, de.

offer, la oferta.

offer (to), ofrecer (143, a).

office, el despacho.

officer, el oficial.

often, á menudo.

old, viejo, -a.

old-age, la vejez.

on, sobre; on account of, á causa de.

once (at), en seguida.

one, un(o), -a; one's, su, sus.

only (*adv.*), sólo.

open (to), abrir (222); open fire, romper el fuego.

opening, el abrir.

operation, la operación.

opinion, el parecer.

oppose (to), oponerse á (201).

or, ó; á (*before o or ho*).

"orate" (to), orar.

orator, el orador.

orbit, la órbita.

orchard, el huerto.

order (to), mandar.

organ, el órgano.

organize (to), formar.

ornament, el adorno.

orphan, el huérfano.

other, otro, -a.

ought (to), deber (213).

our, nuestro, -a.

outset, el principio.

over, sobre.

overcoat, el abrigo, sobretodo.

overtake (to), alcanzar.

ox, el buey.

P

painter, el pintor.

palace, el palacio.

palate, el paladar.

pale, pálido, -a.

panic, el pánico.

pantry, la despensa.

paper (*material*), el papel; (*news-*) el periódico; paper money, el papel moneda.

par (at), á la par.

parade, la revista.

pardon (to), perdonar.

pardon, el perdón.

parents, los padres.

parlor, la sala.

part, la parte.

particularly, particularmente.

partner, el socio.

partridge, la perdiz.

party, el partido.

pass (to), pasar; — (*a law*), votar.

passenger, el pasajero.

passionately, apasionadamente.

pastor, el pastor.

path, la senda.

patience, la paciencia.

patrol, la ronda.

pay (to), pagar; — (*attention*), prestar.

payment, el pago.

pea, el guisante.

peach, el melocotón.

pear, la pera.

pen, la pluma.

pencil, el lápiz, -ces.

penetrate (to), penetrar.

- people**, el pueblo.
per cent, por ciento.
perfect, perfecto, -a.
perfectly, absolutamente.
perform (to), cumplir con.
perihelion, el perihelio.
perilous, peligroso, -a.
perish (to), perecer (143, a).
perpetual, perpetuo, -a.
person, la persona.
personalty and realty, los bienes muebles é inmuebles.
petition, la petición.
Philippines (islands), las Filipinas.
photograph, la fotografía.
piece, la pieza.
pineapple, la piña.
pink, el clavel.
pistol, la pistola.
pistol-shot, el pistoletazo.
pitcher, el jarro.
pity, (la) lástima.
Pius, Pío.
place, el lugar, la plaza; (*occupation*), el puesto.
plaintiff, el demandante.
plan, el plan.
planet, el planeta.
plate, el plato.
play (drama), el drama.
play (to), tocar (*music*); — (*a game*), jugar á (168).
plead (to), abogar.
pleasant, agradable.
please (to), agradar, gustar á, com-
 placer (143, a).
pleasing, agradable.
pleasure, el placer.
plum, la ciruela.
pocket, el bolsillo.
poem, el poema.
poet, el poeta.
poetic, poético, -a.
point, el punto.
pole, el polo.
political, político, -a.
pond, el estanque.
Pope, (el) Papa.
popular, popular.
portion, la porción.
Porto-Rican, portorriqueño, -a; **the Porto-Ricans**, los portorriqueños.
position, la posición, el puesto.
possessions, los bienes.
possessive, posesivo, -a.
possibility, la posibilidad.
possible, posible.
postage prepaid, franco, -a de porte.
postage-stamp, el sello (de correo).
postal-card, la tarjeta postal.
post-office, el correo.
potato, la patata, papa.
pour (to), derramar.
practical, práctico, -a.
praise, la alabanza.
prank, la calaverada.
pray (to), rezar.
precious, precioso, -a.
predecessor, el predecesor.
prefer (to), preferir (174).
preparation, el preparativo.
prepare (to), preparar.
present, actual; **to be** —, asistir.
present (to), presentar.
preserve (to), preservar.
president, el presidente.
presumptuous (to be), tener (136)
 presunción.
pretty, bello, -a.
prevent (to), impedir (181).
price, el precio.
primary, primero, -a.
primary, el primario.
prime minister, el primer ministro.

prince, el príncipe.
principal, principal.
prisoner, el preso.
privilege, el privilegio.
prize, el premio.
probable, probable.
problem, el problema.
proceeds, el producto.
procure (to), conseguir (143, 10, 181).
produce (to), producir (207).
produce exchange, la lonja de víveres.
professor, el profesor.
profitable, provechoso, -a.
progress (to), adelantar.
projectile, el proyectil.
promise (to), prometer.
promissory note, el pagaré.
promoter, el promotor.
pronoun, el pronombre.
pronounce (to), pronunciar.
properly, debidamente.
proportional, proporcional.
propose (marriage), determinarse.
proposed, propuesto, -a.
proposition, la proposición.
prosper (to), prosperar.
protest, la protesta.
proud, orgulloso, -a.
proverb, el refrán.
Providence, la Providencia.
prudence, la prudencia.
prudent, cuerdo, -a.
publish (to), publicar.
punish (to), castigar.
pupil, el discípulo.
purchase, la compra.
pure, puro, -a.
purpose, el propósito.
pursue (to), perseguir (143, 10, 181).
put (to), poner (201), meter; to put on, poner; to put (his), ponerse.
Pyrenees, los Pirineos.

Q

quadruped, el cuadrúpedo.
quadruple, cuádruple.
quail, la codorniz.
quality, la calidad.
quarter, el cuarto.
queen-regent, la reina regente.
question, la cuestión, *or (simply)* lo.
quiet, la quietud.
quiet, tranquilo, -a.

R

rabble, la gentuza.
radius-vector, el radio vector.
railroad, el ferrocarril.
rain, la lluvia.
rain (to), llover (158).
rainbow, el arco iris.
raise (= to lift), levantar; (*to collect*), juntar.
ransack (to), revolver (171).
rapidly, rápidamente, de prisa.
rarely, raras veces.
rather, de mejor gana.
ration, la ración.
rattlesnake, la culebra de cascabel.
ravenously, vorazmente.
reach (to), alcanzar, llegar á.
read (to), leer (206).
reading-room, la sala de lectura.
ready, servido, -a.
ready-made, hecho, -a.
rear guard, la retaguardia.
reassert (to), reafirmar.
rebel (to), rebelarse.
receive (to), recibir.
receiver, el comisario de quiebra.
reception, la recepción.
recourse, el recurso.
reëlection, la reelección.
reënforced, reforzado, -a.
reënforcements, los refuerzos.

- Reformation**, la Reforma.
refund (to), devolver (171).
refuse, rehusar, negarse á (143, 2, 164).
regiment, el regimiento.
registered, certificado, -a.
regret (to), sentir (174).
reject (to), rechazar.
rejoice (to), regocijarse.
rejoicing, el regocijo.
relative, el pariente.
relieve (to), aliviar.
religion, la religión.
religious, religioso, -a.
remain (to), quedar; (*to stay*), permanecer (143, a).
remedy, el remedio.
remember (to), recordar (167).
renewed, nuevo, -a.
repeat (to), repetir (181).
repent (to), arrepentirse (174).
repose, la quietud.
represent (to), representar.
reprove (to), reprender.
republic, la república.
republican, el republicano.
reputation, la reputación.
repute, la fama.
requirements, las necesidades.
reside (to), residir.
residence, la casa morada.
resignation, la resignación.
respect (to), respetar.
rest (to), descansar.
result, el resultado.
retire (to), retirarse.
retreat (to), retirarse.
return (to), volver (171, 227), regresar.
return mail (by), á vuelta de correo.
return ticket, el billete de ida y vuelta.
reveal (to), revelar.
- review**, la revista.
revolution, la revolución.
revolve (to), girar.
riches, las riquezas.
rift, el claro.
right, derecho, -a.
rise (to), levantarse.
river, el río.
road, el camino.
rob (to), robar.
robber, el ladrón.
Romanic, romance.
Rome, (la) Roma.
roof, el tejado, techo.
room, el cuarto.
rose, la rosa.
rout (to), derrotar.
royal, regio, -a.
rub (to), frotar, restregar.
rule, la regla.
run (to), correr; (*to flee*), huir (185); **run across**, dar con (189); **run out**, acabarse.
running noose, el lazo corredizo.
Russia, la Rusia.

S

- sad**, triste.
sailor, el marinero.
salt, la sal.
same, mismo, -a; **the same**, lo mismo.
satisfaction, el contento.
satisfactory, satisfactorio, -a.
satisfied, satisfecho, -a; **to be** —, estar (136) contento, -a.
Saturday, el sábado.
Saturn, Saturno.
save (to), salvar.
say (to), decir (195).
saying, el dicho.
school, la escuela.
schooner, la goleta.

- science**, la ciencia.
scissors, las tijeras.
scorn (to), desdenar.
sea, el, la mar.
season, la estación.
second, el segundo.
second, segundo, -a.
second-hand, el secundario.
secret, el secreto.
sect, la secta.
secure (to), conseguir (143, 10, 181).
see (to), ver (205).
seek (to), buscar; — **shelter**, refugiarse.
seem (to), parecer (143, a).
seen, visto, -a.
select (to), escoger.
self-defense, la defensa propia.
self-government, el gobierno propio.
sell (to), vender.
send (to), enviar; — **for**, mandar por.
sense, el sentido.
sentiment, el sentimiento.
servant, *m.* el criado; *f.* la criada.
serve (to), servir (181).
service, el servicio.
set (to), poner (201); **to set out**, partir.
settled (to be), arreglarse.
seven, siete.
seventh, séptimo, -a.
several, muchos, -as.
severe, severo, -a.
severely, severamente.
shade, la sombra.
shadow, la sombra.
shameful, bochornoso, -a.
share, la acción.
shareholder, el accionista.
she, ella.
sheep, la oveja.
sheepfold, el aprisco.
shop, la tienda.
shortly, dentro de poco; — **after**, poco después.
show (to), mostrar (167).
shrug (to) one's shoulders, enco-gerse de hombros.
sick (to be), estar (136) malo, -a.
side, el lado.
sight, la vista.
sign, la señal.
silence, el silencio.
silver, la plata.
sin, el pecado.
since (adv.), puesto que; (*prep.*), desde.
sing (to), cantar.
single, solo, -a.
sinking fund, el fondo de amortización.
sir, señor.
sister, la hermana; **sister-in-law**, la cuñada.
sit down (to), sentarse (164).
situation, la situación.
six, seis.
sixteen, dieciséis.
sixth, sexto, -a.
skate (to), patinar.
skillful, diestro, -a.
slander (to), calumniar.
slave, el esclavo.
slavery, la esclavitud.
small, pequeño, -a.
smell, el olfato.
smoking (no), no se fuma.
snood, el cordón.
snow (to), nevar (158).
so, tan; **so much**, tanto.
soap, el jabón.
society, la sociedad.
soldier, el soldado.

- solve (to)**, resolver (171).
some, alguno, -a (25).
something, algo.
son, el hijo.
soon, pronto; **as soon**, tan pronto.
soul, el alma (*f.*).
sound (to), sonar (167).
South, el sur.
South-American, sud-americano, -a.
Spain, la España.
Spaniard, el español.
Spanish (language), el español.
Spanish, español, -a, -es, -as.
speak (to), hablar.
special, especial.
species, la especie.
speculate (to) in stocks, jugar (168) á la bolsa.
speech (faculty), el habla, *f.* (11, b); (*oration*), el discurso.
spend (to), gastar.
spite (in —), á pesar.
spoon, la cuchara.
spring (water), el manantial; (*season*), la primavera.
spring up (to), originarse.
squadron, el escuadrón.
square, cuadrado, -a.
square, el cuadrado.
stairs, la escalera.
start (to), partir; — **up**, saltar.
State, el Estado.
statement, la declaración.
statesman, el estadista.
stay (to), permanecer (143, a).
steal (to), robar.
steamer, el vapor.
still, sin embargo.
stock-exchange, la bolsa.
stomach, el estómago.
stop (= to cease), cesar; (*to stop moving*), pararse.
store, la tienda.
story (of a house), el piso; (*narrative*), la historia, el cuento.
stranger, el desconocido.
strawberry, la fresa.
street, la calle.
stretch oneself (to), estirarse.
strewn, sembrado, -a.
strictly, estrictamente.
strike, la huelga.
striker, el huelguista.
strive (to), esforzarse.
strong, fuerte.
structure, la estructura.
student, el estudiante.
study (to), estudiar.
sty, la pocilga.
subject, el sujeto; (*subjects of a king*), los súbditos, vasallos.
submit (to), someterse.
subscription, la suscripción.
succeed (to), lograr.
success, el éxito.
successor, el sucesor.
succumb (to), sucumbir.
such, such a, tal, (*pl.*) tales.
suffer (to), padecer (143, a).
suffering, el sufrimiento.
suffice (to), bastar.
sufficient, bastante.
sugar, el azúcar.
suggest (to), sugerir (174).
suicide, el suicidarse, el suicidio.
suit (law), el pleito, la causa.
suitor, el pretendiente.
sulk (to), permanecer (143, a) terco.
sum, la cantidad.
sun, el sol.
Sunday, el domingo.
sunrise, la salida del sol.
supper, la cena.
supply, la provisión.

support, la ayuda.
support (= *to bear*), soportar; (*to maintain*), mantener (136).
supreme, supremo, -a.
sure, seguro, -a.
surely, de seguro.
surgeon, el médico.
surplus, el excedente, el sobrante.
surprise (to), sorprender.
surrender, la rendición.
surrender (to), rendirse (181).
suspect (to), sospechar.
suspended, suspendido, -a.
swallow (to), tragar; **swallowed**, tragado, -a.
sway (to), dominar.
sweet, dulce.
sword, la espada.
sworn, jurado, -a.

T

table, la mesa.
tablecloth, el mantel.
tactics, la táctica.
take (to), tomar; **to — out**, sacar;
to — a bath, bañarse, **to — a walk**, pasear *or* pasearse.
talk (to), hablar.
tariff, el arancel.
task, la tarea.
taste, el agrado, el gusto.
taxes, las contribuciones.
teacher, el maestro.
tear up (to), romper.
telegram, el telegrama.
tell (to), decir (195); **tell** (= *relate*), contar (167).
temptation, la tentación.
ten, diez.
tent, la tienda.
tenth, décimo, -a.
term, la condición.

than, que.
that, esc, esa; **those**, esos, esas.
that (*rel. and conj.*), que; **that which**, el, la que; **that** (*neuter*), eso.
the, el, la, los, las.
theater, el teatro.
thee, te.
their, su, sus.
then (*at that time*), entonces; **then** (*in the next place*), luego.
there, allá, allí.
thing, la cosa.
think (to), pensar (164).
third, tercero, -a (25).
thirty, treinta; **thirty-nine**, treinta y nueve.
this, este, esta; **this** (*neuter*), esto; **these**, estos, estas.
thorn, la espina.
thoroughly, á fondo.
three, tres.
throat, la garganta.
throne, el trono.
through, por.
throw (to), arrojar.
Thursday, el jueves.
thus, así.
tiger, el tigre.
time (*duration*), el tiempo; — (*as law*), el plazo; — (*occasion*), la vez (*pl.* las veces).
tired, cansado, -a; **fatigado**, -a.
to, á.
tobacco, el tabaco.
to-day, hoy.
to-morrow, mañana.
tongue, la lengua.
to-night, esta noche.
tooth, el diente.
top (*like a*), como una piedra (*stone*).
touch, el tacto.
towards, hacia.

towel, la toalla.
 townhall, el ayuntamiento.
 train, el tren.
 traitor, el traidor.
 transform (to), transformar.
 translation, la traducción.
 travel (to), viajar.
 traveler, el viajero.
 treat (to), tratar.
 tree, el árbol.
 trench, la trinchera.
 trial, la pena.
 tribulation, la tribulación.
 trim (to), cortar.
 trip, el viaje.
 triple, triple.
 troops, las tropas.
 true, verdadero, -a; **the true**, lo verdadero.
 trunk, el tronco.
 trust company, la liga mercantil.
 truth, la verdad.
 try (to), tratar.
 Tuesday, el martes.
 tulip, el tulipán.
 turkey, el pavo.
 turn out (to), resultar; **turn into cash**, convertir (174) en dinero.
 twelve, doce.
 twenty, veinte.
 twenty-five, veinticinco.
 twenty-seven, veintisiete.
 two, dos.

U

ultimo, del próximo pasado.
 uncle, el tío.
 under, bajo.
 undersigned, el infrascrito.
 understand (to), entender (166), comprender; **to give to** —, dar (189) á entender.
unforeseen, imprevisto, -a.

unfortunately, desdichadamente.
united, unido, -a.
United States, los Estados Unidos.
universal, universal.
university, la universidad.
unnatural, contranatural.
unravel (to), desenredar.
unusual, inusitado, -a.
upon, sobre.
upper, superior.
us, nos (*obj. of verb*), nosotros (*obj. of preposition*).
use (to), emplear, usar; **to be used**, usarse.
usually, generalmente.

V

vacillate (to), vacilar.
vain, vano, -a; **in** —, en vano.
valuable, de gran precio.
value (to), valuar.
value, el valor.
vanguard, la vanguardia.
vaporings, los disparates.
various, diverso, -a; **vario**, -a.
vegetable, la legumbre.
vein, la vena.
verdict, el veredicto.
very, muy (*before pos. degree*); mucho (*before comp. degree*); **very much**, muchísimo; **very bad**, pésimo, -a.
victory, la victoria.
victuals, las viandas.
village, el pueblo, la aldea.
violet, la violeta.
virtue, la virtud.
visit, la visita.
visit (to), visitar.
vitals, las entrañas.
voluptuous, voluptuoso, -a.
vulgarity, la vulgaridad.

W

wages, el salario.
wait, wait for (to), esperar.
waiting room, la sala de espera.
Wales, Gales.
walk (to), andar (188).
wall, la pared.
want (to), querer (209); **to be wanted**, descarse.
want, la falta; **for** — **of**, por falta de.
war, la guerra.
warm (very), mucho calor.
wash (oneself) (to), lavarse.
washstand, el lavabo.
waste (to), disipar, gastar.
watch, el reloj.
water, el agua (*f.*).
wear (to), traer (193).
weather, el tiempo.
Wednesday, el miércoles.
week, la semana.
welcome (to), dar (189) la bienvenida.
well (adv.), bien.
West, el oeste.
what ? ¿ qué ? what ! ¡ qué ! what
 (= *that which*), lo que.
wheat, el trigo.
when, cuando; **when ? ¿ cuándo ?**
where, donde; **where ? ¿ dónde ?**
whether (that), que; **whether (if)**,
 si.
which, que.
while, mientras (que).
who, que; **who ? ¿ quién ?**
whole, todo, -a; **the** —, todo el,
 toda la.
whom, quien.
why ? ¿ por qué ?
wicked (the), el impío.
wife, la mujer, esposa.
wild, silvestre.
will, la voluntad.

win (to), ganar.
wind itself up (to), darse (189)
 cuerda á sí mismo.
window, la ventana; **little** —, la
 ventanilla.
wine, el vino.
wing, el ala (*f.*).
winter, el invierno.
wipe (to), enjugar; **to** — **out**, agotar.
wire, el alambre.
wisdom, la sabiduría.
wise (the), los sabios.
wisely, sabiamente.
wish (to), querer (209).
with, con.
within, dentro de.
without, sin.
witness, el testigo.
witness (to), presenciar.
wolf, el lobo.
woman, la mujer.
woods, los bosques.
word, la palabra.
work, el trabajo, la obra.
work (to), trabajar.
world, el mundo.
worse, peor.
worst, peor.
worth (to be) more, valer (200) más.
wounded (the), los heridos.
write (to), escribir (222).

Y

year, el año.
yes, sí.
yesterday, ayer.
yet, todavía.
you, usted; **ye**, vosotros.
young, joven (*pl.* jóvenes).
young man, el joven (*pl.* jóvenes).
your, su, sus.
youth, la juventud.

SPANISH VOCABULARY

Ch, ll, and ñ, being separate letters, stand after **c, l, and n**.

Verbs should be looked for under their infinitives, which, when irregular, are referred to the sections where their model verbs are conjugated. All forms so irregular as not to be easily traceable to their infinitives are given. In looking for the infinitives of irregular forms observe that —

1. Forms in **ue** and **u** are to be sought for under **o**: **puedo, pude, from poder.**

2. Those in **ie** and **i** under **e**: **siento, sintió from sentir.**

The gender of nouns is indicated by the letters **m** and **f**.

All references are to sections.

A

á, to, with, of, at, after, on, in, for, upon, according to.

abalanzarse, to rush forward.

abandonar, to abandon.

abismo, *m.* abyss.

abnegación de sí mismo, self-abnegation.

abogado, *m.* lawyer.

abominarse, to revile.

abonar, to credit; — **en cuenta**, to credit to one's account.

abrasador, -a, suffocating, fiery.

abrazar, to embrace.

abrigar, to entertain.

abrigo, *m.* overcoat.

abril, April.

abrir (222), to open.

absolutamente, absolutely.

absurdo, -a, absurd.

abundar, to abound, be plentiful.

abur, good-by, "so long."

acá, here.

acabar, to finish; — **de**, to have just — (216).

acaparamiento, *m.* monopolizing.

acariciar, to caress.

acción, *f.* action.

acechar, to waylay, spy upon.

aceite (*m.*) **de oliva**, olive oil.

aceptar, to accept.

acerca de, about.

acercarse, to approach.

acero, *m.* steel, sword.

acerque (*pres. sub. of acercar*), to bring near or to (143, 1).

acertar (164), to happen.

aclamación, *f.* acclamation, shout.

acobardar, to daunt.

acometer, to attack, undertake.

acompañar, to send herewith, enclose, accompany; — **se**, to associate.

acontecer (143, a), to happen.

acorazado, -a, armored; armored ship.

acordes, *m.* strains.

acreditar, to prove.

acreedor, *m.* creditor.

actitud, *f.* attitude.

actividad, *f.* activity.

- acto**, *m.* act.
actriz, *f.* actress.
actual, instant, present (*month*).
actualmente, at present.
acudir, to come or run up.
acuñación, *f.* coinage.
acusar, to acknowledge.
Adán, Adam.
adelantado, -a, in advance of.
adelantar, to advance, get along;
 —se, to advance.
adelante (*en*), upward, onward, forward; **ya en** —, from now on.
adelantos, *m.* progress, most modern improvements.
además, moreover.
adiós, good-by, good day.
adivinar, to guess; —se to be guessed.
adjunto, herewith, accompanying.
admirable (*lo*), admirable part.
admiración, *f.* admiration.
admitir, to admit, accept.
adónde, where?
adoptar, to adopt.
adoración, *f.* adoration.
adorno, *m.* ornament, trimming.
aduana, *f.* custom-house.
advertir (174), to warn.
aerolito, *m.* aerolite.
afamado, -a, famous.
afección, *f.* affection.
afecto, *m.* regards, affection, love.
afecto, -a, obedient, affectionate, respectful.
afianzamiento, *m.* security.
aficionado, fond of, given to.
afirmar, to affirm.
aflojar, to relax.
afortunadamente, fortunately.
afuera, outside; **casa** —, outside the house.
agareno, *m.* Mahometan, Moor (*from Agar, Hagar*).
agarrar, to cling to.
agitado, -a, agitated.
agolpar, to drive, bring.
agosto, August.
agradable, pleasant.
agradar, to please.
agradecer (143, a), to thank.
agradecido, -a, grateful.
agradezco (*agradecer*, 143, a), I thank.
agregado, *m.* attaché.
agrupado, -a, grouped.
agua, *f.* water.
aguantar, to suffer.
aguardar, to wait for.
aguardiente, *m.* brandy.
águila, *f.* eagle; **pintar el** —, to spend money freely.
ah, ah.
ahí, there.
ahogado, -a, dull, smothered.
ahora, now.
ahuyentar, to frighten away.
airadamente, angrily.
aire, *m.* air; **aires**, airs.
ajedrez, *m.* chess.
ajustar, to transact.
al (= á el), at that.
al 4, al 5, at 4, at 5 per cent.
alambrado, *m.* wire trellis.
alambre, *m.* wire.
alarmar, to alarm.
alcanzar, to reach.
Alcazaba, *f.* stronghold, citadel.
alegrar, to delight.
alegría, *f.* joy, mirth.
alejar, to make retire.
alférez de navío, junior lieutenant.
alfombra, *f.* carpet.
algo, somewhat, something.

- algodón, m.** cotton; — **pólvara,** gun cotton.
alguien, some one.
algún, any, some.
alguno, -a, some, few, any.
aliento, m. breath.
alimentar, to feed.
alivio, m. relief.
alma, f. soul, heart; **sentir en el —,** to regret deeply.
almacén, m. store, warehouse.
almacenaje, m. storage.
alendra, f. almond.
almidón, m. starch.
almirantazgo, m. admiralty.
almirante, m. admiral.
almuerzo, m. breakfast.
alrededor de, around.
alteración, f. change, commotion.
alto, aloud.
alto, -a, high, latest.
alto, m. halt.
altura, f. height, distance up stream.
alumbrado, m. illumination.
alza, f. (el), rise.
alzarse, to rise.
allí, there.
ama, f. mistress.
amable, amiable, kind.
amar, to love, like.
amargura, f. bitterness.
amarillo, -a, yellow.
ambos, -as, both.
amenazar, to threaten.
América, f. America.
americano, -a, American.
amiga, f. friend.
amigo, m. friend.
amiguito, m. little friend.
amo, m. master.
amortizable, redeemable.
anciano, -a, old (*man, woman*).
anchísimo, -a, very broad.
ancho, -a, broad.
andante, walking.
andar (188), to go, walk.
andar, m. speed.
ángel, m. angel.
ángulo, m. angle.
animalucho, m. ugly brute.
animado, -a, animated.
aniquilarse, to annihilate each other.
aniversario, m. anniversary.
anoche, last evening, last night.
anterior, front, forward.
anteriormente, formerly.
antes, above, formerly.
antes de, before.
antes de que, before.
anticuado, -a, antiquated.
antiguo, -a, ancient, veteran.
anunciar, to announce.
anuncio, m. advertisement.
añadir, to add.
añicos (hacer —), to smash into bits.
año, m. year.
apagar, to silence, put out; — **se,** to go out.
aparato, m. apparatus.
aparecer (143, a), to appear.
aparición, apparition.
aparte, aside.
apearse, to get out.
apenas, scarcely.
aplanchadora, ironer (*woman*).
aplausos (un), hurrah!
aplicar, to apply.
aplomado, gray, leaden.
apoderarse, to take possession.
apoplejía, f. apoplexy.
apostar (167), to station.
apoyar, to support.
aprender, to learn.

- apresurarse, to hasten.
 propósito (más), most convenient, nearest.
 aprovechar, to take advantage.
 aproveche (que — á), may it do you good (*said to any one who eats*, etc.).
 aproximarse, to approach, be near.
 apuntar, to point.
 aquél, the former.
 aquélla, that, its.
 aquel, aquella, aquellos, -as, that, those.
 aquí, here.
 árabe, Arab.
 arancel, *m.* tariff.
 araña, *f.* chandelier.
 árbol, *m.* tree.
 ardiente, fiery.
 arengar, to harangue.
 argentino, -a, Argentine.
 aritmético, -a, arithmetical.
 arma, *f.* arm.
 armado, -a, armed, "converted."
 armonía, *f.* harmony.
 arrancar, to rush out.
 arrastrarse, to crawl.
 arrebatar, to transport.
 arreciar, to grow hotter.
 arreglar, to arrange, make.
 arreglo (con), conformably.
 arriar, to strike, lower.
 arrimarse, to stick to, approach.
 arrogante, haughty.
 arrojar, to knock down, throw.
 arrojó, *m.* dash, boldness.
 arroyo, *m.* brook.
 arroz, *m.* rice.
 arte, *m.* and *f.* art.
 arteria, *f.* artery.
 artículo, *m.* article; —s para cazar, hunters' goods.
 artificial, artificial.
- artillado, -a, fortified.
 artillero, *m.* gunner.
 artista, *m.* artiste (*player*).
 asambleísta, *m.* delegate.
 ascensor, *m.* elevator; — de municiones, ammunition hoist.
 asegurar, to insure, assure.
 asemejarse, to resemble.
 asfixiarse, to be stifled.
 así, so, thus.
 asir (190), to seize.
 asistentes, *m.* those present.
 asombroso, -a, marvelous.
 aspecto, *m.* aspect.
 aspirar, to aspire.
 asunto, *m.* matter, affair.
 asustar, to scare, frighten.
 atacar, to attack.
 atajar, to fight, intercept, put out.
 ataque, *m.* attack.
 atención, *f.* attention, consideration.
 atender (166), to attend to, care for.
 atenta, *f.* favor.
 atento, -a, obedient, respectful.
 aterrar, to appall, terrify.
 atmósfera, *f.* atmosphere.
 atolondrada, *f.* rattlepate.
 atormentar, to worry.
 atractivos, *m.* attractions.
 atraer (193), to attract.
 atravesar (164), to pass through.
 atrevido (10), the daring.
 atribuirse (185), to be attributed.
 atrincheramiento, *m.* entrenchment.
 agosto, august.
 aullar, to howl.
 aumentar, to increase.
 aún, even, yet, still.
 aunque, although.
 Aurora, *f.* Aurora (*the goddess of dawn*).
 ausencia, *f.* absence.

austral, south, southern.
 autor, *m.* author.
 autoridad, *f.* authority.
 auxiliar, to aid.
 auxiliar, auxiliary.
 avant (*en*), forward! (*French*).
 avanzar, to advance.
 ave, *f.* bird.
 aventurero, *m.* adventurer.
 avería, *f.* damage.
 averiguar, to find out.
 avestruz, *f.* ostrich.
 aviso, *m.* advice, notice.
 avistar, to descry.
 ayer, yesterday.
 ayuda, *f.* aid.
 ayudante, *m.* aide.
 ayudar, to help.
 azotar (*to whip*), to tramp.
 azúcar, *m.* sugar.
 azul, blue.
 azulejo, *m.* Dutch tile.

B

bachiller, *m.* bachelor.
 bailar, to dance.
 baile, *m.* ball.
 bajar, to descend, drop, stoop down.
 bajas, *f.* casualties.
 bajo, -a, low.
 bajo, under, below.
 bala, *f.* ball, bale.
 balsa, *f.* raft.
 bancario, -a, banking.
 banco, *m.* bank; — hipotecario, bank that lends on mortgages, stocks.
 bandera, *f.* flag, colors.
 banquero, *m.* banker.
 bañarse, to be bathed.
 baraja, *f.* pack (*of playing cards*).
 barba, *f.* chin.
 bárbaro, -a, barbarous.

barbero, *m.* barber.
 barbeta, *f.* barrette.
 barco, *m.* ship.
 barrer, to sweep.
 base, *f.* basis, base.
 bastante, enough.
 bastar, to suffice, be enough.
 batalla, *f.* battle.
 batallador, *m.* fighter.
 batallón, *m.* battalion.
 batería, *f.* battery, gun deck.
 batir, beat, attack.
 batirse, to fight.
 bautizar, to baptize.
 bayo, -a, russet.
 bayoneta, *f.* bayonet; á la —, charge bayonets.
 bebé, *m.* baby.
 beber, to drink.
 bebida, *f.* drink.
 becerro de oro, golden calf.
 Beethoven, famous German musician.
 beldad, *f.* beauty.
 belicoso, -a, warlike.
 bello, -a, pretty.
 bendición, *f.* benediction, blessing, grace.
 beneficio, *m.* benefit.
 besar, to kiss; — á uno la mano, to extend greetings to any one.
 bestia, *f.* beast, animal.
 bien, well, very; más —, rather.
 bienvenido, -a, welcome.
 bigote, *m.* mustache.
 bigotito, *m.* small mustache.
 billar, *m.* billiards.
 billete, *m.* bill, note, warrant.
 bípedo, *m.* biped.
 bisiesto, leap (*year*).
 bizarrísimo, -a, very gallant.
 bizarro, -a, gallant.
 blanco, -a, white.

boca, *f.* mouth; — **de fuego**, cannon; á — **de jarro**, point blank.
bocado, *m.* mouthful.
boda, *f.* wedding.
bodega, *f.* wine-vault.
bola, *f.* ball.
bolsa, *f.* stock-exchange.
bomba, *f.* bomb, pump, fire engine.
bombero, *m.* fireman.
bondad, *f.* goodness.
bonito, -a, pretty.
bordo (á), aboard.
bote, *m.* boat; — **de vapor**, steam launch.
botica, *f.* drug store.
botón, *m.* bud, button.
bracete (de), arm-in-arm.
bramar, to roar, scream out.
bravo, -a, brave.
bravura, *f.* bravery, gallantry.
brazo, *m.* arm.
breve, short, few.
bribonada, *f.* rascality.
bridón, *m.* charger.
brigada, *f.* brigade.
brigadier, *m.* brigadier.
brillante, *f.* shining.
brillantez, *f.* brightness.
brindar, to drink (*health*).
brío, *m.* dash and vigor.
bronce, *m.* bronze, cannon (*of bronze*).
brusco, -a, sudden.
bruto, *m.* brute.
bruto, -a, gross, brute.
bubónico, -a, bubonic.
buen (bueno), good.
bueno, -a, well, good.
buho, *m.* owl.
buitre, *m.* vulture.
buque, *m.* ship; — **hospital**, hospital ship; — **de insignia**, flag-ship.

burla, *f.* jesting, joke.
burlarse, to make fun of.
burlesco, -a, burlesque.
burlón, *m.* burlona, roguish.
burro, *m.* donkey.
bursátil, of the stock-exchange.
buscar, to look for, seek.
busques (*pres. subj. of buscar*), look for; **no le** —, don't look for him.

C

cabal, common; **cabal**! exactly, you are right.
caballería, *f.* cavalry.
caballero, *m.* gentleman.
caballo, *m.* horse; — **de silla**, riding horse; **de á** —, horsemen, cavalry.
cabe (si) (**caber**, 204), if possible; **no** — **más**, leaves nothing to be desired.
cabecera, *f.* head (*of the table*).
cabello, *m.* hair.
cabeza, *f.* head, lead.
cabida, *f.* room, space.
cabido (*p. part. of caber*), befallen.
cabo de mar, ship's corporal; á **cabo**, to a finish.
cabra, *f.* goat.
caciquismo, *m.* bossism.
cachemir, *m.* cashmere.
cachimba, *f.* (*familiar*), pipe.
cada, every, each, all.
cadáver, *m.* corpse.
caer (192), to fall.
café, *m.* coffee.
caja, *f.* case.
cajita, *f.* package.
calavera, *f.* madcap.
calcular, to calculate.
caldera, *f.* boiler.
calentura, *f.* fever.

- calidad**, *f.* quality.
calor, *m.* heat.
calzado, *m.* shoes.
calzas, *f.* breeches.
callar, to hold one's tongue, be silent (*about*).
calle, *f.* street.
callejero, *m.* loafer.
callejón, *m.* passage, gangway.
cama, *f.* bed; **hacer** —, to keep one's bed (*from sickness*).
camada, *f.* pack.
cámara, *f.* cabin, chamber.
cambiar, to change.
cambio, *m.* change, exchange; **en** —, on the other hand.
caminar, to march (*on*).
camino, *m.* road.
camisa, *f.* shirt.
campamento, *m.* camp, encampment.
campanilla, *f.* bell.
campaña, *f.* campaign.
campo, *m.* camp, field, dueling ground.
cáncer, *m.* cancer.
canción, *f.* song.
cangrejo, *m.* crab; — **de popa**, afterdeck.
canibalismo, *m.* cannibalism.
canon, *m.* rate, fee.
cansancio, *m.* lassitude.
cansar, to tire, be tired.
cansarse, to get tired.
cantar, to sing.
cántaro, *m.* pitcher.
cantidad, *f.* sum, quantity.
cañón, *m.* cannon, gun.
cañonazo, *m.* cannonade.
cañonear, to cannonade.
cañoneo, *m.* cannonading.
cañonera, mounted with cannon.
capaz, capable.
capital, *m.* capital (*wealth*).
- capital**, *f.* (*chief city*), capital.
capitalista, *m.* capitalist.
capitalizarse, to be capitalized.
capitán, *m.* captain, leader; — **de navío**, captain; — **de bandera**, flag captain; — **de infantería de marina**, captain of marines.
capricho, *m.* whim.
cara, *f.* face.
carabina, *f.* carbine, rifle.
carácter, *m.* character.
característico, -a, characteristic.
¡caramba! zounds! **¡— y caramboles!** thunderation!
carcajada, *f.* (*soltar*, 167), to burst out laughing.
cardinal, cardinal.
carecer, to be without, not to have received.
carga, *f.* loading, load.
cargar, to load, charge.
caricias, *f.* caresses; **hacer** —, to caress.
cariñosamente, lovingly, affectionately.
cariñoso, -a, affectionate.
Carmen, name of a street.
carne, *f.* meat; **poner** — **de gallina**, to make one's flesh creep, have goose flesh.
carnoso, -a, fleshy.
carrera, *f.* charge, run.
carta, *f.* letter.
cartero, *m.* letter-carrier.
casa, *f.* house; — **de banca**, banking house; **en** —, at home.
casar, to marry; — **se**, to get married.
casco, *m.* helmet.
caseta (*f.*) **del puente de popa**, chart house.
casi, almost.

- caso**, *m.* case, fact, matter; **hacer** — **de**, to pay heed to.
- castaño**, -a, chestnut (*color*).
- Castillejos**, The first skirmishes with the Moors took place in the Plain of Castillejos, in the latter part of December, 1859.
- castillo**, *m.* castle.
- catálogo**, *m.* catalogue.
- catástrofe**, *f.* catastrophe.
- caucho**, *m.* caoutchouc (*rubber*).
- caudillo**, *m.* commander.
- causa**, *f.* cause; **á** — **de**, because of.
- causar**, to cause.
- cautiverio**, *m.* captivity.
- cayó** (*caer*, 192), (*he*) fell; **cayeron**, (*they*) fell; **cayeran**, (*they*) would fall.
- cazador**, *m.* chasseur.
- cazatorpedero**, *m.* torpedo-boat destroyer.
- ceder**, to yield.
- cédula**, *f.* warrant.
- celebrar**, to hold, celebrate, be glad of.
- cena**, *f.* supper.
- censura**, *f.* censure.
- censurar**, to blame.
- centauro**, *m.* centaur.
- centímetro**, *m.* centimeter.
- centro**, *m.* center, middle, midships.
- ceñudo** (*ponerse*), to scowl.
- cepillo**, *m.* brush, plane.
- cerca**, *f.* fence.
- cerca de**, near.
- cero**, *m.* zero.
- cerrado**, stubborn.
- cerrar** (164), to close.
- certero**, -a, sure, certain.
- certidumbre**, *f.* certainty.
- cerveza**, *f.* beer.
- cesante**, *m.* (*ex-office holder*), out of office.
- cesar**, to cease.
- cielo**, *m.* heaven.
- ciencia**, *f.* science.
- científico**, -a, scientific.
- ciento** (*cien*), hundred; **por** —, per cent.
- cierto**, -a, certain.
- cigarillo**, *m.* cigarette.
- cigarro**, *m.* cigarette.
- cinco**, five.
- cincuenta**, fifty.
- circular**, to circulate.
- círculo**, *m.* circle, club.
- circunstancia**, *f.* circumstance.
- circunvecino**, -a, surrounding.
- citas** (*darse*, 189), to have meetings.
- ciudad**, *f.* city.
- claro**, clearly.
- claro**, *m.* interval, space between.
- clase**, *f.* category, class, kind.
- clavo**, *m.* nail.
- clima**, *m.* climate.
- club**, *m.* club.
- cobarde**, *m.* coward.
- cobertor**, *m.* coverlet, quilt.
- cobrar**, to collect.
- cocer** (143, 5 and *a*), to cook, boil.
- cociente**, *m.* quotient.
- cocina**, *f.* kitchen.
- coche**, *m.* carriage.
- codiciado**, -a, coveted.
- coger**, to catch, take.
- coja** (*coger*), I take.
- cola**, *f.* tail.
- colear**, to wag the tail.
- colega**, *m.* colleague, contemporary.
- colcha**, *f.* coverlet, counterpane.
- colocación**, *f.* investment.
- colocar**, to place; — **se**, to be placed.
- Colón**, Columbus.
- colonia**, *f.* colony.
- color**, *m.* color.

- columna, f.* column.
comadrero, -a, gossip.
comandante, m. captain, commander.
combate, m. fight.
combatiente, m. combatant.
combinación, f. combination, arrangement.
comedor, m. dining-room.
comenzar (143, 4, and 164), to begin.
comer, to eat; — *se,* to eat, swallow.
comercial, commercial.
comercio, m. commerce, business.
cometer, to commit.
cómico, -a, comic.
comida, f. dinner, meal.
cominos, m. cumin seed.
comisión, f. commission.
como, like, as, about, as if; — *que,* as; — *el, la que más,* as much as any one.
¿ cómo ? how ?
comodoro, commodore.
compañero, m. companion.
compañía, f. company.
comparación, f. comparison.
comparado, -a, comparative.
comparativo, -a, comparative.
completamente, completely.
completar, to complete.
completo, -a, complete.
componer (se) (composer, 201), is composed; *se compondrá,* will be composed.
composición, f. (de) composition.
compositor, m. composer.
compra, f. purchase.
comprar, to buy; — *se,* to be bought.
comprender, to understand.
comprimir, to compress.
comprometido, -a, precarious.
común, common.
comunicar, to communicate.
con, with.
concebir (181), to conceive.
conceder, to grant.
conciencia, f. conscience.
concierto, m. concert.
conciliador, -a, conciliatory.
conciudadano, m. fellow-citizen.
concluir (185), to finish.
concordar (167), to agree.
Conde de Lucena, Count of Lucena, a title acquired by General O'Donnell for his valor in defending this city against the Carlists, in the civil war of 1834–1839.
condenar, to condemn.
condesa, f. countess.
condición, f. condition, quality, state.
conducción, f. cartage.
conducir (207), to conduct; *conducirse, to* behave.
confección, f. manufacture, making up (*of goods*).
confesar (164), to confess.
confianza, f. confidence.
confiar, to trust.
confirmar, to confirm, refer to.
conflicto, m. conflict.
confundido, -a, mingled with.
confundirse, to get confused.
conmigo, with me (58).
conmover (170), to stir up.
conocedores (los), those acquainted with.
conocer (143, a), to know.
conocido, -a, known.
conocimiento, m. acquaintance, knowledge, bill.
conozco (*conocer*, 143, a), I know.
consecuencia (en), consequently.
conseguir (143, 10, 181), to bring it about; *conseguirse, to* be accomplished.

- consejo directivo**, *m.* board of directors.
- consentir** (174), to consent.
- conserva**, *f.* conserve.
- considerar**, to consider.
- consignación**, *f.* consignment.
- consiguiente** (*por*), consequently.
- consolarse**, to console oneself.
- conspiración**, *f.* conspiracy.
- constar**, to consist; **hacerse** —, to be set forth, stated.
- construcción**, *f.* construction.
- construir** (185), to construct; **se construyen**, are constructed.
- consular**, consular.
- consulta**, *f.* consultation.
- consultar**, to consult.
- contador**, *m.* paymaster.
- contar** (167), to relate, tell, count, count on; — **se**, to be counted (on); **se hace** —, it is stated.
- contener** (136), to contain; **contiene**, contains.
- contenido**, *m.* contents.
- contentarse**, to be satisfied.
- contento**, -a, happy, content, satisfied.
- contento**, *m.* delight.
- contestar**, to answer.
- contigo**, with thee (58).
- continuar**, to continue.
- continuo**, -a, continuous.
- contra**, against; **en** — **de**, against.
- contraalmirante**, rear admiral.
- contrario**, -a, enemy, hostile; *m.* opponent.
- contratación**, *f.* operation, contract.
- contrincante**, *m.* adversary.
- convenio**, *m.* agreement, contract.
- convenir** (202), to suit.
- conversación**, *f.* conversation.
- convertir** (174), to convert; — **se**, to convert oneself.
- convite**, *m.* banquet.
- copa**, *f.* glass.
- copia**, *f.* copy.
- coqueta**, *f.* coquette.
- corazón**, *m.* heart.
- corbata**, *f.* cravat, neckwear.
- cordita**, *f.* cordite.
- corneja**, *f.* crow.
- corneta**, *f.* bugle.
- corona**, *f.* crown.
- coronel**, *m.* colonel.
- corpulento**, -a, thick and large.
- corrección**, *f.* correctness.
- correcto**, -a, correct.
- corredor**, *m.* broker.
- correo**, *m.* mail.
- correr**, to run; **á todo** —, at full speed; **correrse**, to run, fall.
- correspondencia**, *f.* correspondence.
- correspondiente**, for (*corresponding to*).
- corresponsal**, *m.* correspondent.
- corretaje**, *m.* brokerage.
- corriente**, instant, present, current; ¡**corriente!** all right!
- corrigir**, to correct.
- corruptor**, corrupting.
- corsé**, *m.* corset.
- cortedad**, *f.* shortcomings.
- cortés**, polite.
- cortesía**, *f.* courtesy.
- cortina**, *f.* curtain, cloud.
- corto**, -a, short.
- cosa**, *f.* thing.
- costar** (167) **un ojo**, to cost very high.
- costumbre**, *f.* custom; **de** —, customary; **como de** —, as usual.
- cotidiano**, -a, daily.
- cotización**, *f.* quotations.
- crédito** *m.* credit, public credit.
- creer** (206), to think, believe.

crescendo, *crescendo* (*increase in volume*).

criada, *f.* (*maid*) servant.

criado, *m.* servant.

criatura, *f.* creature.

crisma, *f.* pate, head.

cristal, *m.* glass.

cristalería, *f.* glassware.

cristiano, *-a*, Christian.

Cristo, Christ (*image*).

crónico, *-a*, chronic.

crucero, *m.* cruiser.

cruz, *f.* cross.

cuadro, *m.* list.

cuadrúpedo, *m.* quadruped.

¿ **cuál** ? what, which?

cual, as.

cual (*el, los, la, las*), which, who, whom; *lo* —, which; *con lo* —, whereby.

cualidad, *f.* quality.

cuán, how.

cuando, when.

¿ **cuándo** ? when?

¿ **cuánto**, *-a* ? how much? how many?

cuanto, *-a*, how much, how many; as much, as many; *en cuanto á*, as to.

cuarenta, forty.

cuartel general, *m.* general quarters; *also*, the general staff composed of the staffs of all the commands.

cuarto, fourth, quarter.

cuarto, *m.* quarter, room.

cuatro, four; *de á* —, of four centimeters.

cuatrocientos, four hundred.

Cuba, *i.e.* Santiago de Cuba, as it is commonly known by the natives.

cubierta, *f.* deck.

cubrir (222), to cover.

cuchichearse, to whisper to each other.

cuello, *m.* collar, neck.

cuentà, *f.* account.

cuentecito, *m.* story.

cuento, *m.* story.

cuerda, *f.* cord, rope.

cuero, *m.* leather.

cuerpo, *m.* body, corps; *ese* —, that body, *i.e.* you; **cuerpo á cuerpo**, hand to hand.

cuervo, *m.* raven.

cuidado, *m.* care; ¡ **cuidado!** look out!

culebra, *f.* snake.

culminante, culminating.

cultivo, *m.* worship, cultivation.

culto, *m.* worship.

cumplido, performed.

cumplimiento, *m.* compliment, compliance.

cumplir con, to perform.

cuñado, *m.* brother-in-law.

cura, *f.* cure.

curar, to cure, give medical aid to.

curiosidad, *f.* curiosity.

curso, *m.* course.

curvado, *-a*, bent, curved.

custodiar, to have charge of, serve.

cutáneo, *-a*, cutaneous.

cuyo, *-a*, whose, which.

Ch

chal, *m.* shawl.

chaleco, *m.* vest.

chancear, to joke.

chanza, *f.* joke; *en* —, jokingly.

chapurrado, *m.* gibberish.

chaqueta, *f.* jacket, coat.

charlar, to chatter, gabble; *el* — talking, prattling.

charol, *m.* japan varnish.

chica, *f.* little girl.

chico, *m.* boy.

chiquilla, *f.* young lady.
chiquillo, *m.* (little boy), darling.
chiquitas (**andar en** —), to trifle.
chismear, to gossip, carry tales.
chiste, *m.* pleasantry, joke.
chistoso, -a, gay, witty.
chocar, to clink, touch.
chocolate, *m.* chocolate.
chucho, *m.* (*familiar for dog*), towser.
chupar, to suck, draw.

D

dale (**dar**) **con Juana**, still harping on my daughter.
dama, *f.* lady.
danza, *f.* dance.
daño, *m.* harm.
dar (189), to give, shake (*hands*), fall into, strike (*clock*); **dar en**, to be getting into; **darse**, to be given.
dato, *m.* datum, truth, fact.
de, of, from, with, by, to, on, in, under; than, as; **de á**, of; **de entre**, from (among); **de** — **á**, between.
debajo, below; — **de**, under.
debe, *m.* debit.
deber, *m.* duty.
deber (see § 213), to owe, ought, must.
debido, -a, due, proper.
debilidad, *f.* weakness.
decepción, *f.* deception.
decidido, -a, decided.
decidirse, to be decided.
décimoquinto, -a, fifteenth.
decir, *m.* statement.
decir (195), to say, tell; **para decirlo así**, so to speak; — **se**, to be said.
declaración, *f.* declaration.
declararse, to break out; — **en quiebra**, to go into bankruptcy.
dedicar, to devote; — **se**, to be engaged in.

dedo, *m.* finger; — **de en medio**, middle finger; — **anular**, ring-finger, — **meñique**, little finger; — **pulgar**, thumb.

defecto, *m.* defect.

defender (166), to defend; — **se**, to defend oneself.

definitiva (**en**), ultimately.

dejar, to leave, allow, lack; — **de**, to fail; (*as an auxil.*), to have.

delante de, before.

delgado, -a, fine, thin.

delicadeza, *f.* delicacy.

delicioso, -a, delightful.

delirio (**con**), rapturously.

demás (**el, los, lo**), the remaining, other.

demasiado, too much, too.

democrático, -a, democratic.

¡demonio! the deuce!

denodadamente, boldly.

denominación, *f.* denomination, name.

dentadura, *f.* set of teeth.

dentro (**de**), within.

depende, to depend.

depósito, *m.* deposit, depository; — **de las baterías**, ammunition room.

derecha, *f.* right (*hand*).

derecho, *m.* duty, right.

derecho, -a, right.

derramar, to spill, pour.

derribar, to knock over or down, blow down.

derrochar, to squander.

derrumbarse, to go to pieces.

desafiar, to challenge.

desagradable, disagreeable.

desagradar, to displease.

desarrollar, to develop; — **se**, to be developed.

desastre, *m.* disaster.

- desastroso, -a, disastrous.
 descargarse, to be discharged.
 descarrilado (*off the track*), impecunious.
 descender (166), to fall.
 descolgar (143, 2, and 167), to unhang, take down.
 descomunal, unusual.
 desconcertado, -a, disconcerted.
 desconfiar, to distrust.
 describir, to describe.
 descubierto, -a, bare.
 descubrir (222), to discover.
 descuento, *m.* discount.
 desde, since, from, for; — *que*, since.
 desdicha, *f.* misfortune.
 deseada, *f.* welcome letter.
 deseado, -a (desired), welcome.
 desear, to desire, like.
 desembarco, *m.* landing.
 desesperado, -a, desperate.
 desfavorable, unfavorable.
 desgarrador, -a, heart-rending.
 desgracia, *f.* misfortune.
 desgraciadamente, unfortunately.
 desgraciado, -a, unfortunate, unhappy.
 deshecho, -a, undone, destroyed.
 desheredado, -a, disinherited.
 desigual, unequal.
 desistir, to desist.
 deslumbrante, dazzling.
 desmontar, to dismount.
 desnudo, -a, naked, drawn.
 despacio, slowly.
 despacharse, to be sent.
 despacho, *m.* office.
 despedir (181), to dismiss.
 desplazar, to displace.
 despreciar, to despise.
 desprenderse, to give up, part with.
 después, afterward; — *de*, after;
 — *que*, after.
- destacamento, *m.* detachment.
 destacarse, to be detached.
 destino (con — *á*), bound for.
 destrozar, to mangle, tear.
 destrozo, *m.* destruction, havoc.
 destrucción, *f.* destruction.
 destructor, *m.* (destroyer) torpedo boat.
 desventaja, *f.* disadvantage.
 detall, *m.* detail, retail.
 detalladamente, in detail.
 detallista, *m.* retailer.
 deteriorar, to impair, injure.
 detrás de, behind, after.
 devolver (171), to restore.
 dí (dar, 189), I gave.
 di (decir, 195), tell (*imp. 2d sing.*).
 día, *m.* day; — *festivo*, holiday;
 buenos —, good morning, day (*greeting*).
 diablo, *m.* devil; *de todos los* —, as the very devil; — *mil veces*, by the eleven devils.
 diamante, *m.* diamond.
 diámetro, *m.* thickness, diameter.
 ¡diantre! the deuce!
 diario, -a, daily, a day.
 diciembre, December.
 dicha, *f.* good fortune.
 dicho, *m.* saying.
 dicho (*p. part. decir*, 195), said, told;
 dichos, the same.
 dichoso, -a, happy, fortunate.
 diente, *m.* tooth.
 diera (dar, 189), should give.
 diez, ten, ten o'clock.
 diez y seis, sixteen.
 diferencia, *f.* difference.
 diferenciarse, to differ.
 diferir (174), to differ.
 diga V. (decir, 195), say, tell you (*imp.*); no digas, do not (thou) tell.

- digestión**, *f.* digestion.
dignidad, *f.* dignity.
digno, -a, worthy.
digo (*decir*, 195), I say.
dije, *dijiste*, *dijo* (*pret. decir*, 195),
 I said, told, etc.; **dijera**, should say;
 dijéramos, we should say.
dilatado, -a, extended.
dime = **di me**, tell me.
dinamita, *f.* dynamite.
dinero, *m.* money.
dió (*dar*, 189), gave; **dióse** *por*
 (*darse*), was declared; **se dió**, was
 given.
Dios, *m.* God; **de** —, blessed.
dique, *m.* dike, dam.
diré (*decir*, 195), I will say, tell (of).
dirección, *f.* direction, guidance.
directo, -a, direct.
dirigir, to direct; —**se**, steer, take
 a course, direct oneself.
discreción, *f.* judgment.
discurso, *m.* speech.
discutir, to discuss.
disiparse, to be dissipated.
disparar, to fire; —**se**, to be fired.
disparo, *m.* fire, shot, discharge.
dispensar, to excuse.
disponer (201), to dispose, make use
 of; **disponga de**, consider at your
 disposal.
disposición, *f.* disposition.
dispuesto, -a, arranged.
distancia, *f.* distance.
distante, distant.
distinguir, to distinguish.
distinto, -a, different.
diversión, *f.* amusement.
diverso, -a, various.
divertido, -a, entertaining.
divertirse (174), to amuse, enjoy one-
 self.
- dividenço**, *m.* dividend.
dividir, to divide.
divino, -a, divine.
división, *f.* division.
divisor, *m.* divisor.
divulgar, to divulge.
diz, they say.
doce, twelve.
docena, *f.* dozen.
doler (170), to ache.
dolor, *m.* pain, ache.
doméstico, -a, domestic.
dominar, to control; —**se**, to be
 controlled.
domingo, *m.* Sunday.
dominó, *m.* dominoes.
don, *don* (*a title used before the bap-*
 tismal names of men); **Don Quijote**,
 the famous book of Cervantes.
¿dónde? (*en*) where, in what place?
donde, where, wherever, which.
doña, *f.* donna.
dos, two.
dotación, *f.* crew.
droga, *f.* drug.
duda, *f.* doubt.
dudar, to doubt.
dudoso, -a, doubtful.
duelo, *m.* duel.
dueño, *m.* master.
dulce, sweet.
dum sumus juvenes (*Latin*), while
 we are young.
duplicarse, to be doubled.
durante, during.
durar, to last.
duro, -a, hard, stiff.
duro, *m.* dollar.
- E**
- é**, and.
¡ea! come, say.
economía, *f.* economy, saving.

- echar, to throw, take, put forth ;
 —se, be put, thrown ; **echar de**
 ver, to notice ; **-á perder**, to spoil.
edad, *f.* age.
educado, -a, educated.
efectivo, -a, effective.
efecto, *m.* purpose, effect ; **al** —, with this intent ; **por** —, by reason of ; **efectos**, goods, effects.
egoísta, selfish.
ejecutar, to execute ; —se, to be executed.
ejemplo, *m.* example ; **por** —, for instance.
ejercer, to exercise.
ejercicio, *m.* exercise.
ejército, *m.* army.
el, the, that, the one ; **el que**, he who, el que, which ; **del**, than that.
él, he, him, it.
elección, *f.* election.
elector, *m.* voter.
eléctrico, -a, electric.
elegante, elegant.
elemento, *m.* element.
elevación (**por**), to get the range.
elevado, -a, high.
elevarse, to rise.
elocuentemente, eloquently.
ella, she, her, it.
ellas, they, them.
ello, it.
ellos, they, them ; **¡á ellos!** upon them !
Embajada, *f.* embassy.
embarcación, *f.* boat.
embarcar, to ship ; take aboard.
embarco, *m.* embarkation, rescue.
embargo (**sin**), however, notwithstanding.
embarque, *m.* shipment.
embarrancada, *f.* beaching.
embarrancar, to run aground, beach.
embestida, *f.* assault.
embotellado, -a, bottled.
embriagado, intoxicated.
embriaguez, *f.* intoxication.
empeñado, -a, hard pressed.
empeñar, to engage in.
empeño, *m.* diligence, energy.
empezar (143, 4, 164), to begin.
empleado, *m.* employee.
emplear, to employ, use ; —se, to be used.
empleo, *m.* use.
emprender, to undertake.
empresa, *f.* enterprise.
empujar, to push.
en, in, on, at, to ; as.
enamorado, -a, in love.
enano, *m.* dwarf.
enardecer (143, a), to inflame.
enardecido, -a, inflamed.
encaje, *m.* lace.
encantador, -a, charming.
encanto, *m.* charm.
encargado de negocios, *m.* chargé d'affaires.
encargo, *m.* care, charge.
encender (166), to light.
encendido, -a, burning, lighted ; incendiary (*as shells* ; i.e. *containing inflammable material*).
encendio, *m.* fire.
encerrar (164), to enclose.
encima (**por**), over.
encogerse de hombros, to shrug one's shoulders.
encomendar (164), to entrust.
encontrar (167), to meet, find ; —se, to be, find oneself.
encordaduras, *f.* strings for musical instruments.
encuentro, *m.* encounter.

endulzado, -a, sweetened.
enemigo, m. enemy.
enemigo, -a, hostile.
energía, f. energy.
enero, January.
enfadado, -a, angry.
enfermedad, f. disease, sickness, affection.
enfermizo, -a, sickly.
enfermo, -a, unwell, sick.
enfrente, opposite, in front.
engendrar, to engender.
enigma, m. riddle.
enojo, m. vexation.
enorme, enormous.
Enrique, Henry.
ensaladera, f. salad dish.
enseñar, to teach; —**se**, to learn, be taught.
ensordecer (143, a), to make a deafening sound in.
entender (166), to hear, understand; —**se**, to deal with.
entendido, -a, wise, intelligent.
enterarse, to inform oneself.
entero, -a, entire, whole.
entonar, to intone.
entonces, then; **por —**, for the time, then.
entrar, to enter.
entre, between, among, amidst; **de —**, from among.
entregar, to hand, give.
entretenido, -a, entertaining.
entusiasmarse, to become *or* be enthusiastic.
entusiasmo, m. enthusiasm.
entusiasta, enthusiastic.
envenenamiento, m. poisoning.
enviar, to send; —**se**, to be sent.
envío, m. sending.
envolver (171), to surround, involve.

envuelto, -a, surrounded.
epilepsia, f. epilepsy.
episodio, m. episode.
época, f. time, period; **en — que**, at a time when.
equivalente, m. equivalent.
equivaler, to be equivalent.
equivocado, -a, wrong.
era (ser, 136), was; **eran**, they were; **era de ver**, was worth seeing.
era, f. era.
eres (ser, 136), (thou) art.
erigir, to erect.
erizarse, to bristle up.
escalar, to scale.
escaldado, -a, scalded.
escalera, f. ladder, stairs.
escapar, to escape; —**se**, to slip.
escape (á todo), with all speed.
escaso, -a, chary, stingy.
escena, f. scene.
escoger, to choose.
escogido, -a, choice.
esconderse, to hide oneself.
escopeta, f. gun.
escotilla, f. hatchway; — **de la máquina**, engine hatchway.
escribir, to write.
escritorio, m. office, counting-house.
escuadra, f. fleet.
escuadrón, m. squadron.
escuchar, to listen.
escuela, f. school.
ese, esa, esos, esas, that, those.
esencial (en lo), essentially.
esforzarse (143, 4, and 167), to endeavor.
esfuerzo, m. effort.
eslora, f. length.
esmeralda, f. emerald.
esmerarse, to strive, endeavor.
eso, that, this; **á eso de**, about; **por**

- , for that reason; **eso sí**, of course; **eso sí que no**, not by any means.
- esos**, those.
- espacio**, *m.* space, air, atmosphere.
- espada**, *f.* sword; **á espada**, with swords.
- espantar**, to frighten.
- espanto**, *m.* fright.
- espantoso**, -a, frightful.
- España**, *f.* Spain.
- español**, -a, Spanish, Spaniard; **á la española**, in Spanish style.
- especial**, special.
- especialidad (con)**, especially.
- especialista**, *m.* specialist.
- especialmente**, especially.
- especie**, *f.* kind.
- espectáculo**, *m.* spectacle.
- espejo**, *m.* mirror.
- esperanza**, *f.* hope.
- esperar**, to hope, wait for.
- esperma**, *f.* sperm.
- espeso**, -a, thick.
- espingarda**, *f.* large musket or small piece of ordnance.
- espontanea (mente)**, spontaneously (234).
- esposa**, *f.* wife.
- esposo**, *m.* husband.
- estación**, *f.* season.
- estadística**, *f.* statistics.
- estado**, *m.* condition, state, government.
- Estados Unidos**, United States.
- estallar**, to burst out.
- estallido**, *m.* cracking, roar.
- estampido**, *m.* crack, crash, bursting.
- estancia**, *f.* stanza.
- estandarte**, *m.* standard.
- estar** (136), to be, stand; be at home; — **para**, to be about to, be enough; **á no estarlo ella**, if she were not.
- estatua**, *f.* statue.
- este, esta, estos, estas**, this, these; **en esta**, in this city.
- éste, ésta, éstos, éstas**, this, these, the latter.
- estilo**, *m.* style.
- estío**, *m.* summer.
- estirar**, to stretch.
- estirpe**, *f.* race, stock.
- esto**, this, this matter; **en —**, by this time,
- estómago**, *m.* stomach.
- estopa**, *f.* tow.
- estornino**, *m.* starling.
- estoy (estar, 136)**, I am.
- estragos**, *m.* havoc, ruin.
- estrambótico**, -a, strange, odd.
- estrechar**, to tighten, squeeze, close.
- estrecho**, -a, narrow.
- estrella**, *f.* star.
- estremecerse** (143, a), to be shaken, shudder.
- estrepitoso**, -a, loud.
- estruendo**, *m.* noise.
- estudiantino**, -a, students'.
- estudiar**, to study.
- estudioso**, -a, studious.
- estuvo (estar, 136)**, was; **estuviera. estuviese**, should or would be.
- eternidad**, *f.* eternity.
- Eterno**, *m.* Eternal.
- evidencia**, *f.* evidence, view.
- evitar**, to avoid, overcome.
- examen**, *m.* examination.
- excelente**, excellent.
- excelentemente**, excellently.
- excitadísimo**, -a, very excited.
- excitar**, to excite.
- exclamar**, to exclaim.
- exclusivo**, -a, exclusive.

excmo. (excelentísimo), most excellent.

excusar, to excuse.

exhibición, f. exhibition.

exigente, exacting.

exigir, to require.

existir, to exist.

éxito, m. result.

expansión, f. transport.

experiencia, f. experience.

expiar, to watch for.

explosión, f. explosion.

explosivo, -a, explosive.

exportación, f. exportation.

exposición, f. exposition.

expresar, to express.

expresión, f. expression.

expreso, m. express.

extenderse, to extend.

extensión, f. extension, distance.

exterior, foreign, exterior.

extirpación, f. extirpation.

extranjero, -a, foreign.

extranjero, m. foreign countries, abroad.

extrañar, to wonder, be surprised.

extraordinario, -a, extraordinary.

extremidad, f. extremity.

extremo, m. extremity.

extremo, -a, extreme.

F

fábrica, f. factory.

fabricación, f. make, manufacture.

fabricante, m. manufacturer.

fácil, easy.

factura, f. invoice, bill.

falta, f. lack, want, fault.

faltar, to fail, be wanting, missing.

familia, f. family.

famoso, -a, famous.

fantasía, f. fancy.

farsa, f. farce.

fatigar, to make tired.

favor, m. favor.

favorecer (143, a), to favor.

favorecida, f. favor.

favorecido, -a, favored, favorite.

febrero, February.

fecha, f. date.

fechado, -a, dated.

felicidad, f. happiness.

felicitaciones, f. congratulations.

feliz, felices, happy.

fenecer (143, a), to die.

feo, -a, ugly; lo feo, ugliness.

ferrocarril, m. railroad.

festivo, -a, festive, gay, jocular.

fiarse (de), to trust.

fidedigno, -a, reliable.

fiebre, f. fever.

fiel, faithful.

fieltro, m. felt.

fiesta, f. rejoicing, gayety.

fijar, to fix.

fijo, -a, fixed.

fila, f. file, rank.

Filipinas, f. Philippines (islands).

filosofía, f. philosophy.

filósofo, m. philosopher.

fin, m. end; **al —,** finally; **en —,**

in fine; **por —,** at last; **al —**

y al fallo, to sum up; **al — y**

al cabo, in the end.

finalizar, to end.

financiero, -a, financial.

fino, -a, fine.

firma, f. firm.

firmar, to sign.

firmeza, f. firmness, certainty.

físico, -a, physical.

fisionomía, f. aspect.

flanco, m. flank.

flaqueza, f. weakness.

flete, m. freight.
flor, f. flower.
flota, f. fleet.
fogoso, -a, impetuous.
fomentar, to encourage.
fonda, f. inn, hotel.
fondo, m. essential part, essence;
fondos, funds.
forma, f. form, way, procedure.
formar, to form, build.
formidable, formidable.
fortificación, f. fortification.
fortuna, f. fortune.
forzado, -a, forced.
fragor, m. noise.
fragrancia, f. perfume.
francés, -esa, French.
Francia, f. France.
franco-prusiano, -a, French-Prussian.
franqueza, f. frankness.
frazada, f. blanket.
frecuentar, to frequent, attend.
freír (183), to fry.
frenesí, m. frenzy.
frente, f. forehead, front, head; — *á,*
in front of; *de* —, to the front.
frío, m. cold.
frío, -a, cold.
fruta, f. fruit.
fruto, m. fruit.
fué (ser, 136), was.
fué (ir, 214), went; *se* — *á pique,*
foundered.
fuego, m. fire.
fuelle, f. fountain, well.
fuera, out of, without; — *de aquí!*
get out of here.
fuera (ser, 136), should be; *si no*
—, had it not been.
fueron (ser, 136), there were.
fuerte, strong.
fuerte, m. fort.

fuerza, f. force, strength, resource.
fuese (ser, 136), were.
fueses (ser, 136), thou shouldst be.
fuga, f. flight.
fugaz, fleeting.
fuí (ser), I was; *fuí (ir),* I went.
fuimos, fuisteis (ir, 214), we went,
you went.
fumar, to smoke.
función, f. entertainment, "function."
furiosamente, furiously.
furioso, -a, furious.
furor, m. anger, fury.
fusil, m. gun, musket.

G

gabinete, m. drawing-room.
galope, m. galop.
gallardear, to parade, make merry.
gallina, f. hen.
gallo, m. cock.
gama, f. scale.
ganancia, f. gain.
ganar, to earn, gain.
garantizar, to guarantee.
garganta, f. throat.
gas, m. gas.
gaseosa, f. soda water.
gastar, to spend, waste.
gasto, m. expense, charge, amount.
gatito, m. kitten.
gato, m. cat.
gaudeamus igitur (Latin), let us,
therefore, be jolly.
gelatinoso, -a, gelatinous.
general, m. general.
general (en), in general.
generalizarse, to become general.
género, m. kind, race; *géneros*
goods; — *de punto,* lace goods.
generoso, -a, generous.
gente, f. people, men.

- gesto**, *m.* gesture.
gigante, *m.* giant.
ginebra, *f.* gin.
girar, to revolve, turn.
globo, *m.* ball, sphere.
gloria, *f.* glory, dear.
glorieta, *f.* summer house.
glorioso, -a, glorious.
gobernador, *m.* president, governor.
gobernante, *m.* ruler.
gobernar, to govern, rule.
gobierno, *m.* government.
golondrina, *f.* swallow.
golpe, *m.* blow, rap.
golpear, to strike.
gorro, *m.* cap.
gota, *f.* gout, drop.
gozar, to enjoy; **gozarse**, to enjoy oneself.
gozo, *m.* joy.
gracias, *f.* thanks.
gracioso, -a, graceful; **lo gracioso**, the funny part.
grado, *m.* degree.
graduado, *m.* graduate.
gramática, *f.* grammar.
granada, *f.* shell.
grande (**gran**), great, high.
grandeza, *f.* grandeur.
grano, *m.* grain, lump.
grata, *f.* favor.
gratis, gratis.
gratitud, *f.* gratitude.
grato, -a, pleasant, agreeable.
grave, grave.
gravoso, -a, grievous, heavy.
Grecia, *f.* Greece.
gritar, to cry, shout.
grueso, *m.* thickness, main part.
grueso, -a, large, thick.
guante, *m.* glove.
guapo, -a, pretty.
guardar, to guard, keep, protect;
guardarse, to beware.
guarismo, *m.* figure.
guarnecer (143, *a*), to garrison.
guasa, *f.* joke.
guerra, *f.* war.
guerrero, *m.* warrior.
guerilla, *f.* skirmisher; **batirse en** —, to skirmish.
guía, *f.* line, rope.
guitarra, *f.* guitar.
gurrumino, *m.* henpecked husband.
gustar, to please, like; to partake (*said in inviting any one to eat*).
gusto, *m.* taste, pleasure.
- H**
- ha** (**haber**, 136) has; **há**, ago.
haba, *f.* bean.
haber (136), to have, be; **no había** que, it was impossible.
haber, *m.* credit.
habitación, *f.* room.
habitar, to inhabit.
hablador, *m.* chatterer, talker.
hablar, to talk, speak.
habrá (**haber**, 136), there will be.
hacer (197), to do, make; **hace**, ago; **no le hace**, no matter; **hacer gracia**, to amuse; **hacerse con**, to procure.
hacia, towards.
hacienda, *f.* exchequer.
hago (**hacer**, 197), I do, cause.
halagarse, to flatter oneself.
halagüeño, -a, flattering.
hallar, to find; **hallarse**, to find oneself, to be, be found.
hambre (**tener**, 136), to be hungry.
hambriento, -a, hungry.
han (**haber**, 136), have.
hará (**hacer**, 197), will make, do.
haremos (**hacer**, 197), we shall do.

- harías** (*hacer*, 197), thou wouldst do.
hasta, until, even, even to, as far as;
hasta que, until.
hay (*haber* 36), there is, are; **hay que**, it is necessary
haya (*haber* 136), has, may have, should have, should be.
hayamos (*haber*, 136), we have, may have.
haz (*hacer*, 197), do (*thou*).
hazaña, *f.* exploit.
hazmerreír, *m.* laughing-stock.
he (*haber*, 136), I have.
hé, behold; **hé aquí**, here are.
hecho, *m.* fact, deed.
hecho (*hacer*, 197), made, done, broken: **lo** —, what is done.
hemos haber, 136) we have.
hender (166), to split.
heno, *m.* hay.
herida, *f.* wound.
herido, -a, wounded.
hermana, *f.* sister.
hermano, *m.* brother.
hermoso, -a, beautiful, pretty.
hernia, *f.* hernia.
héroe, *m.* hero.
heroico, -a, heroic.
hice (*hacer*, 197), I made; **hicieron**, they made.
hidalguía, *f.* magnanimity.
hierro, *m.* iron.
hígado, *m.* liver.
hija, *f.* daughter.
hijo, *m.* son; **hijos**, children.
hipocrisía, *f.* hypocrisy.
historia, *f.* history, story.
hizo (*hacer* 197) made, did, opened; **se** —, was accomplished, made.
hoja de servicio, record.
hola, hello.
holgazán, -ana, lazy.
- hollar**, to tread.
hombre, *m.* man; — **de negocios**, business man.
hombro, *m.* shoulder.
hondamente, deeply, dully.
honor, *m.* honor.
honra, *f.* honor.
honrado, -a, honest, honored.
honrar, to honor.
hora, *f.* hour, o'clock.
Horacio, Horace, a Roman poet.
horizontal, horizontal (*line*).
horrible, horrible.
horroroso, -a, horrible.
hospedaje, *m.* board.
hoy, to-day; — **mismo**, this very day.
hubiera (*haber*, 136), might have, would have.
hubiese, -es (*haber*, 136), could, would have, had.
hubo (*haber*, 136), there was, were, had.
hueco, -a, hollow, soft.
huerto, *m.* orchard.
hueso, *m.* bone.
hueste, *f.* host, army.
huevo, *m.* egg.
humanidad, *f.* humanity.
humano, -a, human.
humeante, smoking.
humedad, *f.* dampness, wet.
húmedo, -a, wet, damp.
humilde, humble.
humo, *m.* smoke.
huye (*huir*, 185), flees.

I

- I.** = **ilustrísimo**, most illustrious.
iba, **iban** (*ir*, 214), was, were going.
ictericia, *f.* jaundice.
idea, *f.* idea, conception.

- ideal**, *m.* ideal.
idem, the same, ditto.
ido (ir, 214), gone.
iglesia, *f.* church.
ignorar, not to know.
igual, equal.
igualar, to equal.
ilmo., **ilustrísimo**, most illustrious.
ilustración, *f.* culture.
imagen, *f.* image.
imitar, to imitate.
impaciencia, *f.* impatience.
impaciente, impatient.
impagable, "rich," too funny for anything.
impermeable, *m.* waterproof, rain-coat.
impertinencia, *f.* impertinence.
ímpetu, *m.* impetus.
impetuoso, -a, impetuous.
imponente, imposing.
imponerse (201), to be imposed.
importador, *m.* importer.
importante, important, large.
importar, to import, matter, concern.
importe, *m.* amount.
imposibilidad, *f.* impossibility.
imposibilitar, to prevent.
imposible, impossible.
impotente, powerless.
imprensa, *f.* printing-office.
impresionarse, to be affected.
imprimir, to exert, give.
imprudente, imprudent.
impuesto, *m.* tax, duty.
impulsado, -a, impelled.
incendiar, to set fire to.
incendio, *m.* fire.
incesante, incessant.
incidente, *m.* incident.
incluso, -a, included.
incomparable, incomparable.
inconveniente, *m.* objection, obstacle.
- increíble**, incredible.
incremento, *m.* increase, proportions.
independencia, *f.* independence.
indicar, to indicate.
indígena, indigenous.
indio, *m.* Hindoo.
indirectamente, indirectly.
indiscreto, -a, indiscreet.
indispensable, indispensable.
indispuesto, -a, indisposed.
indole, *f.* nature, disposition.
indulgente, indulgent.
industrial, industrial.
industrial, *m.* tradesman.
infante, *m.* foot-soldier.
infantería, *f.* infantry.
inferior, inferior, lower.
infinito, infinite, very much.
inflamado, -a, inflamed.
inflamar, to inflame.
inflamarse, to burn, ignite.
influencia, *f.* influence.
influir (185), to influence, exert an influence.
informar, to inform.
informarse, to inform oneself.
infume, smokeless.
ingeniero, *m.* engineer.
Inglaterra, *f.* England.
inglés, -esa, English.
iniciado, -a, begun.
inicial, *f.* initial.
iniciarse, to begin.
inimitable, inimitable.
injuria, *f.* insult, injury.
inmediatamente, immediately.
inmenso, -a, immense, great.
immortal, immortal.
inmóvil, stationary.
inocencia (con), innocently, naively.
inquietar, to disturb.
insensato, *m.* fool.

inserto, -a, inserted.
insignia, flagship.
insistir, to insist, persist.
instalación, *f.* putting in, construction.
instantáneamente, instantly.
instante, *m.* instant, interval; **en el** —, at once.
instrucción, *f.* instruction.
instrumento, *m.* instrument.
insultar, to insult.
insurrecto, *m.* insurgent.
inteligencia (mala), misunderstanding.
inteligente, intelligent.
intención, *f.* intention; **con** —, significantly.
intentar, to try, attempt, undertake.
interés, *m.* interest.
interesante, interesting.
interesar, to interest, to be to one's interest.
interín (en el), in the meantime.
interior, domestic, internal.
internacional, international.
interponerse (201), to get between.
interpuesto, -a, interposed.
interrumpir, to interrupt; —**se**, to be interrupted.
íntimo, -a, thorough.
introducir (207), to introduce; —**se**, to be introduced.
inundación, *f.* inundation.
inundar, to flood, overwhelm; —**se**, to be flooded.
inútil, useless.
invadir, to invade.
invariable, invariable.
invierno, *m.* winter.
invitación, *f.* invitation.
invitar, to invite.
ironía (con), ironically.
irresistible, irresistible.

irse (214), to go away.
islamita, Islamite.
italiano, -a, Italian.
izquierda, left hand.
izquierdo, -a, left.

J

ja, ja, ja (laughter).
jabón, *m.* soap.
jamás, never, ever.
jardín, *m.* garden.
jefe, *m.* chief, commander.
Jesús, Jesus; ¡**Jesús!** gracious me.
Jesucristo, Jesus Christ.
jícara, *f.* chocolate cup.
jinete, *m.* horse-soldier.
Jorge, George.
jornada, *f.* day.
joven, *m.* or *f.* young man or woman; (*as an adj.*), young.
joya, *f.* jewel.
júbilo, *m.* joy.
jubiloso, -a, joyous.
juego, *m.* play, game, set; — **de palabra**, pun, play on words.
jueves, *m.* Thursday.
juez, *m.* judge; justice (of the peace).
jugar (168), to stake, play.
juguete, *m.* plaything.
juicio, *m.* sense, judgment.
julio, *m.* July.
junio, June.
juntos, together.
justicia, *f.* justice.
justificado, -a, justifiable.
justificar, to justify.
juvenes dum sumus (Latin), while we are young.

K

kilométrico, -a, long-winded.
kilómetro, *m.* kilometer (3280.8 ft.).

L

la, her, you, it, that, the; — **que**, which.

labio, *m.* lip.

labor, *f.* work.

lado, *m.* side, line, score; — **allá**, farther side.

ladrar, to bark.

ladrillo, *m.* brick.

ladrón, *m.* robber, thief.

lágrima, *f.* tear.

lamentar, to lament for.

lámpara, *f.* lamp.

lana, *f.* wool.

lance, *m.* incident.

lancero, *m.* lancer.

lancha, *f.* launch; **lanchas cañoneras**, gun launches (i.e. *mounted with cannon*).

lanchita, *f.* small launch.

lanzar, to launch; — **se**, to rush to meet.

largo, -**a**, long, prolonged; **á la larga**, in the long run.

las, the, you, those; **las** (= *calzas*), the breeches.

lástima, *f.* pity.

laudable, laudable.

lavado, *m.* wash.

lavandera, *f.* washwoman.

lavarse, to wash oneself, be washed.

lazo, *m.* bond.

le, you, to you, him, it, her, to him, her.

lección, *f.* lesson.

leche, *f.* milk.

leer (206), to read.

legación, *f.* legation.

legítimo, -**a**, legitimate.

legua, *f.* league.

legumbres, *f.* vegetables.

lejos, far.

lengua, *f.* language, tongue; **poner la** — **en**, to backbite.

león, -**es**, *m.* lion.

les, them, to them, on them; you, to you.

letra, *f.* bill (of exchange), handwriting.

levantar, to raise, clear off; — **se**, to rise.

leve, light.

levemente, lightly.

ley, *f.* law.

libertad, *f.* liberty.

libra, *f.* pound.

libranza, *f.* check, draft.

libre, free; **libre-cambista**, free-trader.

libro, *m.* book.

licencia, *f.* liberty.

lid, -**es**, *f.* fight, contest.

ligeramente, lightly.

limonada, *f.* lemonade.

limpiar, to clean.

línea, *f.* line.

lino, *m.* linen.

líquido, -**a**, net.

lírico, -**a**, lyric.

lirismo, *m.* grandiloquence (*language characteristic of high-flown lyrical poetry*).

lisonjearse, to flatter oneself.

lista, *f.* list (*of prizes*); wash list.

listo, -**a**, ready.

literato, *m.* savant.

lo, the, that, it, so, him; **lo que**, which, what; **por lo que**, wherefore; **lo** — **que**, how; **lo** — **todo**, every-thing.

lobo, *m.* wolf.

loco, *m.* fool; — **de atar**, hot-headed fellow.

locomotora, *f.* locomotive.

locura, *f.* folly, madness, frenzy.

lombriz solitaria, *f.* tapeworm.
 Londres, London.
 los, the, them, those; los que, those who, whom.
 lotería, *f.* lottery.
 loza, *f.* crockery, fine earthenware.
 Lucena, a city of Southern Spain, in the province of Andalucía.
 lucir (143, *a*), to wear (*display*).
 lucrativo, -a, lucrative.
 lucha, *f.* struggle, fight.
 luego, then, soon; desde luego, from then on.
 lugar, *m.* place; dar —, to make it possible.
 lúgubre, lugubrious, mournful.
 luna, *f.* moon; — de miel, honey-moon.
 lunes, *m.* Monday.
 luz, *f.* light.
 lyddita, *f.* lyddite.

Ll

llama, *f.* flame.
 llamado, -a, so-called.
 llamar, to call, knock, ring; —se, to be called.
 llanto, *m.* weeping, tears.
 llanura, *f.* plane.
 llegada, *f.* arrival.
 llegar, to arrive, succeed, get there; —á ser, to become.
 llegue (*p. subj. of llegar*), arrives.
 lleno, -a, full.
 llevadero, -a, bearable.
 llevar, to carry, wear; (*as auxil.*), to have; —se, to carry away or off.
 lluvia, *f.* rain, shower.

M

macizo, -a, missive.
 madera, *f.* wood.
 madre, *f.* mother.

Madrid Cómico, a comic paper published in Madrid.
 mágico, -a, magic.
 magnífico, -a, magnificent, splendid.
 mahometano, *m.* Mahometan.
 majestuoso, -a, majestic.
 mal, badly.
 mal, *m.* evil, infirmity, soreness.
 malhadado, -a, unfortunate.
 malo, -a (*mal*), evil, bad, wicked, sick, unwell.
 mamá, *f.* mother, mamma; — política, mother-in-law.
 mandadero, *m.* messenger.
 mandar, to send, command, order; —se, to give orders, be ordered.
 mandíbula (*á* — *batiente*), uproariously.
 mando, *m.* command.
 manera, *f.* manner; de —, so that.
 manga, *f.* sleeve, beam.
 manifestar, to inform, make known.
 maniobra, *f.* maneuver.
 mano, *f.* hand; á —, by hand.
 mansalva (*á*), with ease.
 manta, *f.* blanket, mantilla.
 mantel, *m.* tablecloth.
 mantener (136), to maintain; —se, to keep (*oneself*).
 mantengo (*mantener*, 136), I maintain.
 mantequilla, *f.* butter.
 mantón, *m.* large mantle or shawl.
 manufacturar, to manufacture.
 manzana, *f.* apple.
 mañana, *f.* morning.
 mañana, to-morrow.
 máquina, *f.* engine, engine-room.
 maquinaria, *f.* machinery.
 maquinista mayor de primera clase, chief engineer; — de segunda, assistant engineer.

mar, *m.* or *f.* sea, ocean.
maravedí, *m.* penny, "red."
marcar, to mark.
marcial, martial.
marcha, *f.* march.
marchar, to march, walk; —**se**, to go away, along.
marido, *m.* husband.
mariscal de campo, *m.* field marshal.
marroquí, Moroccan.
martes, *m.* Tuesday.
Martín, name of a river.
marzo, March.
mas, but.
más, more, most; **por** — **que**, although; **más bien**, rather.
masa, *f.* mass, rank, force.
matanza, *f.* slaughter.
matar, to kill.
materialmente (*materially*), ir-
 sistibly.
Matilde, Matilda.
matrimonio, *m.* marriage.
mayo, May.
mayor, greater, larger, greatest, high-
 est.
mayoría, *f.* majority.
me, me, myself, to me.
mediado, *m.* middle.
medianamente, pretty well.
mediano, -**a**, moderate.
mediante, by means of.
médico, *m.* doctor, surgeon; **segundo**
 —, assistant surgeon.
medio, *m.* middle, means.
medio, -**a**, half, middle.
mediodía, *m.* midday, South.
medir (181), to measure.
meditabundo, -**a**, meditative.
mejilla, *f.* cheek.
mejor, better, best.
mejora, *f.* improvement.

mejorar, to get or be better; — **de**
salud, to have better health.
melinita, *f.* melinite.
melocotón, *m.* peach.
memoria, *f.* memory.
mención, *f.* mention.
Méndelssohn, famous German musi-
 cian.
menear, to shake, wag.
menester, necessary.
menor, less, least.
menos, less, lesser, least, except; **á lo**
 —, **por lo** —, at least.
mensualmente, by the month.
mente, *f.* mind.
mentir (174), to lie (*tell falsehoods*).
mentira, *f.* (*lie*), incredible.
menudos, *m.* petties (*various small*
sums).
mercader de vinos, wine merchant.
mercadería, *f.* merchandise.
mercado, *m.* market.
mercantil, mercantile.
merecer (143, *a*), to merit.
merendar (164), to lunch.
merienda, *f.* lunch.
meritorio, -**a**, meritorious.
mero, -**a**, mere.
mes, *m.* month.
mesa, *f.* table.
metal, *m.* metal.
meter, to put; —**se**, to meddle.
metro, *m.* meter (39.37 inches).
mezcla, *f.* mixture, compound.
mezclar, to mix; —**se**, to meddle.
mí, me.
mi, mis, my.
microbio, *m.* microbe.
miedo, *m.* fear.
miembro, *m.* member.
mientras (*que*), while.
miércoles, *m.* Wednesday.

- mil**, one thousand.
militar, military.
millón, *m.* million.
mínimum, minimum.
minino, *m.* pussy (*cat*).
ministra, *f.* minister's wife.
ministro, *m.* minister, chancellor; **los** —, the minister and his wife.
minuto, *m.* minute.
mío, -a, my, mine, of mine.
mirar, to look at, look; — **se**, to look at each other.
miserable, *m.* wretch.
miserable, stingy.
mismito (lo), the same.
mismo, -a, same, self, this very; **una misma cosa**, one and the same thing.
mitad, *f.* half; **cara** —, "better half."
mitología, *f.* mythology.
moda, *f.* fashion.
modelo, *m.* model.
modificarse, to be modified.
modo, *m.* manner; **de** — **que**, so that; **de todos modos**, in any case, absolutely.
mofo, *f.* scoff, ridicule.
mojado, -a, wet.
momento, *m.* moment.
mona, *f.* monkey.
moneda, *f.* coin.
monís, -es, *f.* (*fam.* for *dinero*), "spondulics."
mono, *m.* monkey.
monstruo, *m.* monster.
montado, -a, mounted.
montaña, *f.* mountain.
monte, *m.* mountain.
monumento, *m.* monument.
moral, moral.
morder (170), to bite.
morir (178), to die.
- moro**, Moor.
mortal, mortal.
mortífero, -a, deadly.
mostrar (167), to show; — **los dientes**, to growl at, show the teeth.
motivo, *m.* motive, intent; **con tal** —, with this intent, therefore.
movimiento, *m.* movement.
Mozart, famous Austrian musician.
mozo, *m.* waiter.
muchachito, *m.* little boy.
muchacho, *m.* boy.
muchísimo, -a, very much, many.
mucho, -a, much, many.
mueblecito, *m.* pretty chamber suit.
muela (*f.*) **del juicio**, wisdom tooth.
muerte, *f.* death.
muerto, -a (*p. part.* of *morir*, 178), died, dead, killed.
muestra, *f.* sample.
mujer, *f.* woman, wife.
mujercita, *m.* little wife.
mujeril, feminine, woman's.
mula, *f.* mule.
multiplicador, *m.* multiplier.
multiplicando, *m.* multiplicand.
multiplicar, to multiply.
mundo, *m.* world, society; **todo el** —, everybody.
municiones, *f.* ammunition.
muralla, *f.* wall.
muro, *m.* wall.
muscular, muscular.
músculo, *m.* muscle.
música, *f.* music, band.
musulmán, Mussulman.
muy, very, much, very much, well.

N

- nacimiento**, *m.* birth.
nación, *f.* nation.
nacional, national.

- nada**, nothing, anything, at all; —
de eso, nothing of the kind; **nada y nada**, not by any means.
nadador, *m.* swimmer.
nadar, to swim.
nadie, nobody, no one, anybody.
nado (Á), swimming.
naípe, *m.* playing card.
naranja, *f.* orange; **media** —, “better half.”
narigón, *m.* long nose.
nariz, *f.* nose.
naturalmente, of course.
navidad, *f.* Christmas.
necesario, -a, necessary.
necesidad, *f.* necessity.
necesitado, -as, in need.
necesitar, to need; —**se**, to be needed.
negar (143, 2, and 164), to deny.
negocio, *m.* business.
negro, -a, black, vile.
nervioso, -a, nervous.
neto, -a, net.
ni, nor, not even; **ni . . . ni**, neither . . . nor.
niebla, *f.* mist.
ningún, none, any.
niña, *f.* girl.
niñita, *f.* little girl.
niño, *m.* child.
nirvana, *m.* nirvana (*i.e.* complete relief from the ills of worldly existence in the future life).
nitro-glicerina, nitro-glycerine.
nivelación, *f.* evening up, leveling.
no, not, no; **no** — **sino**, only, but.
noble, noble.
noche, *f.* night; **de** —, at night; **esta** —, to-night.
nombre, *m.* name.
normalidad, *f.* equilibrium.
- norte**, *m.* north.
nos, us, to us, at us.
nosotros, we, us.
nota, *f.* circular, memorandum.
noticia, *f.* notice, report, news, account.
novcientos, -as, nine hundred.
novedad, *f.* novelty.
novia, *f.* sweetheart, bride.
noviembre, November.
novios, *m.* sweethearts.
nube, *f.* cloud.
nublar, to becloud.
nudo, *m.* knot, nautical mile (2028.9 yards).
nueces (nuez), *f.* nuts.
nuestro, -a, our; **el nuestro**, ours.
nueve, nine.
nuevo, -a, new.
numerario, *m.* cash (*money*).
número, *m.* number.
numeroso, -a, numerous.
nunca, never; — **jamás**, never.
nutrido, -a, constant, well sustained.

O

- O.** = oeste, west.
ó, or; **ó . . . ó**, either . . . or.
objeto, *m.* object, article.
obligaciones, *f.* preferred bonds; —
de aduanas, preferred claims against the custom-house receipts.
obligado, -a, obliged.
obra, *f.* work.
obrar, to act.
obrero, *m.* workman.
observarse, to be observed.
obstinarse, to be obstinate.
ocasión, *f.* occasion, opportunity.
ociosidad, *f.* ease, idleness.
octubre, October.
ocupar, to occupy.

ocurrido (lo), what has happened.
 ocurrir, —se, to occur.
 ocho, eight.
 odioso, -a, odious.
 oeste, *m.* west.
 ofender, to offend.
 oferta, *f.* offer.
 oficial, *m.* officer; — **comandante**,
 captain, commanding officer.
 ofrecer (143, *a*), to offer; —se, to
 be offered; —sele, to wish.
 oído, *m.* hearing, ear.
 oír (194), to hear.
 ojalá, would that.
 ojo, *m.* eye; ojos de bitoque, goggle
 eyes; á — cerrados, with eyes
 closed.
 olfatear, to smell.
 olfato, *m.* smell (*sense*).
 olor, *m.* smell, odor.
 olvidar, to forget.
 ópera, *f.* opera.
 operación, *f.* operation, transaction.
 opinar, to believe.
 opinión, *f.* opinion.
 opongo (no me —), I do not object
 (oponer, 201).
 oportuno, -a, opportune.
 optar, to choose.
 orador, *m.* orator.
 oratoria, *f.* oratory.
 orden, *f.* order.
 ordenado, -a, well ordered.
 ordenador, *m.* planner, orderer.
 ordinal, ordinal.
 ordinario, ordinary; que de —, than
 usual.
 oreja, *f.* ear.
 orgánico, -a, organic.
 organizar, to organize, arrange.
 órgano, *m.* organ.
 originar, to originate, cause.

orilla, *f.* shore.
 oro, *m.* gold.
 os, you.
 osadía, *f.* boldness, "cheek."
 osar, to dare.
 ostra, *f.* oyster.
 otoño, *m.* autumn, fall.
 otro, -a, other, another; otro día, an-
 other, hence a better, day.
 oye (oír, 194), hears; se oye, is heard;
 se oyó, was heard.

P

padre, *m.* father; — político,
 father-in-law.
 padrino, *m.* second.
 pagar, to pay; —se, to be paid.
 pagaré, *m.* promissory note.
 pago, *m.* pay, payment.
 país, *m.* country.
 pájaro, *m.* bird.
 palacio, *m.* palace.
 paladar, *m.* palate.
 palidez, *f.* pallor.
 palmadas, *f.* clapping of the hands;
 dar —, to applaud.
 pan, *m.* bread.
 pantano, *m.* pond, reservoir.
 paño, *m.* cloth.
 pañol, *m.* magazine, storeroom; —
 de popa, after-magazine.
 pañuelo, *m.* handkerchief.
 Papa, Pope.
 papá, *m.* father.
 papagayo, *m.* parrot.
 papel, *m.* paper, commercial paper.
 papelería, *f.* stationery.
 para, for, to, for to, in order to; —
 con, towards; — que, in order
 that.
 paraguas, *m.* umbrella.
 paralización, *f.* paralyzation.

- parar**, to stop; parry; —**se**, to stop.
pararrayo, *m.* lightning rod.
parcial, partial.
pardo, -*a*, gray.
parecer, *m.* opinion.
parecer (143, *a*), to appear; —**se**, to resemble.
parecido, -*a*, like.
pared, *f.* wall.
parentesco, *m.* relationship.
pariente, *m.* relative.
París, Paris.
parlanchín, *m.* jabberer.
parlero, -*a*, talkative; *f.* chatterbox.
parque, *m.* park.
parte, *m.* report.
parte, *f.* part; **de** —, on the part; **otra** —, elsewhere; **en todas partes**, everywhere.
participar, to inform.
particular, particular, private.
partido, *m.* profit, result, game, party.
pasado, -*a*, last, passed.
pasar, to pass, come in; ¿**cómo lo pasa V.?** How are you? ; **Que V. lo pase bien!** I wish you good day! **tú no te pasas de cortés**, you are not very polite.
pasatiempo, *m.* pastime.
pasear (**pasearse**), to walk, promenade.
paseo, *m.* promenade.
pasivo, *m.* liabilities.
pasivo, -*a*, liable, hypothecated.
pasmoso, -*a*, marvelous.
paso á paso, step by step.
patas arriba, topsy-turvy.
patio, *m.* (back) yard.
patria, *f.* country, fatherland.
patrio, -*a*, of one's country, patriotic.
pavo real, *m.* peacock.
pavón, *m.* peacock.
- paz**, *f.* peace.
pecado, *m.* sin.
pecador, *m.* sinner.
pechera, *f.* bosom (*of a shirt*).
pecho, *m.* breast, chest, courage.
pedacito, *m.* little piece.
pedazo, *m.* piece.
pedido, *m.* order.
pedido (10), the order.
pedir (181), to beg, to ask.
pegar un tiro, to shoot.
peligro, *m.* danger.
peligroso, -*a*, dangerous.
pelo, *m.* hair.
pena, *f.* pain, trouble.
penetrante, deep, penetrating.
penetrar, to penetrate.
penoso, -*a*, painful, trying.
pensamiento, *m.* thought.
pensar (164), to think, intend.
pequeñez, -*ces*, *f.* trifles.
pequeño, -*a*, small.
perder (166), to lose; **echar á** —, to spoil.
pérdida, *f.* loss.
perdón, *m.* pardon.
perfección, *f.* perfection.
perfectamente, perfectly.
perfecto, -*a*, perfect.
perfumado, -*a*, perfumed.
perfumería, *f.* perfumery.
periódico, *m.* newspaper.
período, *m.* period.
permanecer (143, *a*), to remain.
permanencia, *f.* stay.
permitir, to permit, take the liberty; —**se**, to beg leave.
pero, but; **pero si**, why.
perorar, to declaim, "orate."
perra, *f.* female dog; **perra chica**, penny.
perrito, *m.* little dog.

- perro**, *m.* dog.
perseguir (143, 10, and 181), to pursue.
persona, *f.* person.
personal, personal.
personal, *m.* personnel.
perspectiva, *f.* view, prospect.
pertenecer (143, *a*), to belong.
perteneciente, belonging.
perturbación, *f.* perturbation.
pesadez, *f.* dullness.
pesar, *m.* weighing.
pesar, to weigh; **á** — **de**, in spite of.
pescar, to fish.
pescuezo, *m.* neck.
peseta, *f.* peseta (*about 20 cents*).
peso, *m.* dollar.
peste, *f.* plague.
piano, *m.* piano.
pie, *m.* foot; **de á pie**, infantry; **á los pies de V.**, your humble servant.
piedra, *f.* stone.
piel, *f.* skin.
pierde (**perder**, 166), loses.
pierna, *f.* leg.
pieza, *f.* room, piece (*gun*).
pimienta, *f.* pepper.
pintar la mona (to paint the monkey), to spend money lavishly.
pintura, *f.* painting.
pipa, *f.* pipe.
pique (**se fué á**), foundered.
pisar, to tread, walk upon.
pisaverde, *m.* popinjay, dude.
pistola, *f.* pistol.
placer, *m.* pleasure.
plan, *m.* plan.
plancha, *f.* plate (*armor*).
planeta, *m.* planet.
planta, *f.* sole, foot; — **baja**, lower floor, basement.
plata, *f.* silver.
platería, *f.* silverware.
plática, *f.* chat, conversation; **echar la —**, to turn the conversation.
playa, *f.* shore, beach.
playita, *f.* small beach.
plaza, *f.* the *Place* (fortress), square, market.
plazca (**á Dios no —**), God forbid.
plomo, *m.* lead.
pluguiera (**placer**, 208), would to.
pluma, *f.* pen.
población, *f.* town.
pobre, poor.
pobrecita, *f.* the poor girl.
poco, -**a**, little, short, few.
poco, *m.* little, short time.
poder (209), to be able, can, may; **en mi poder**, at hand; (no) **poder me- nos de**, can (not) help; **podrá**, will be able; **podría**, I could.
poesía, *f.* poetry.
poeta, *m.* poet.
poético, -**a**, poetic.
politicastro, *m.* wire-pulling politi- cian.
político, *m.* politician.
político, -**a**, political.
polvo, *m.* dust.
pólvora, *f.* powder.
pollito, *m.* little dude.
pollo, *m.* dude, dandy.
Pompadour (**á lo —**), in the height of fashion.
pon (**poner**, 201), put (thou) on.
ponderoso, -**a**, ponderous.
poner (201), to put, set, send, lay; **po- nerse**, to put on, become; **se pone**, sets.
póngame (**poner**, 201) **á los pies de**, present my regards to; **que lo ponga**, let him put him.

- popa**, *f.* poop; á **popa**, abaft, aft; á — **de**, aft of; **de** —, after, rear.
por, by, for, on, in, along, through, per, in order to, out of, on account of; — **debajo (de)**, under; — **si**, in case.
porcelana, *f.* porcelain.
porción, *f.* part, number.
porfía (á), emulously.
porque, for, because.
portarse, to behave.
pórtico, *m.* portico.
porvenir, *m.* future.
pos (en), behind.
poseer (206), to possess, have.
posibilidad, *f.* possibility.
posible, possible.
posición, *f.* position.
postizo, -a, artificial.
postor, *m.* bidder.
potencia, *f.* power, potency.
pozo, *m.* well.
práctico, -a, practicable.
precio, *m.* price.
precioso, -a, precious, valuable.
precisamente, precisely, just.
precisión, *f.* precision.
predilecto, -a, favorite.
preferir (174), to prefer.
preñamente, precisely, *i.e.* without grace.
pregunta, *f.* question.
preguntar, to ask.
premiado, -a, successful (in drawing a prize).
premio, *m.* prize.
prender, to take, catch.
prepararse, to be prepared.
presa, *f.* prey, spoils.
prescindir, to cut off, lay aside, do without.
presencia, *f.* presence.
presenciar, to witness.
presentar, to present; — **se**, to present oneself.
presente, present; **al** —, at present; **tener (136) presente**, to consider.
presente (1a), these presents.
presidencial, presidential.
presión, *f.* pressure; **con** —, with steam up.
preso, *m.* prisoner.
prestado (pedir, 181), to borrow.
prestar, to lend, pay.
presupuesto, *m.* budget.
pretender, to pretend.
pretendiente, *m.* suitor.
prevención, *f.* (á) by way of precaution.
prevenir (202), to anticipate.
prever (205), to foresee.
previamente, previously.
previo, -a, previous; **previa la consulta**, after consulting.
prima, *f.* cousin.
primavera, *f.* spring.
primero, -a (**primer**), first.
principal, principal.
príncipe, *m.* prince.
principiar, to begin.
principio, *m.* beginning; á **principios**, at, near the beginning.
pro (en — de), in behalf, for the advantage of.
proa, *f.* (de), forward.
probar (167), to prove, try.
prócer, *m.* person of high estate, noble.
procurar, to try.
producción, *f.* production.
producido, *m.* proceeds.
producir (207), to produce.
producto, *m.* product.
productor, *m.* producer.
proferir (174), to utter.

prólogo, *m.* prologue, beginning.
prolongado, -a, prolonged.
promesa, *f.* promise.
prometer, to promise.
prominencia, *f.* prominence.
pronto, -a, rapid, quick.
pronto, quickly, soon; **de** —, suddenly; **por de** —, in the first place, right away.
pronunciar, to deliver.
propiedad, *f.* property.
propina, *f.* tip, gratuity.
propio, -a, self, own.
propongo (proponer, 201), I propose.
propósito, *m.* intention, purpose; **á** —, by the way.
propuso (proponer, 201), proposed.
proteccionista, protectionist.
proteger, to protect.
protegido, -a, protected.
proveer (206), to provide.
proximidad, *f.* nearness.
próximo, -a, near, next, near at hand.
proyector, *m.* projectile.
prudencia, *f.* prudence.
prueba, *f.* proof.
publicación, *f.* publication.
público, -a, public.
puchero, *m.* dinner pot; **hacer** — s, to snivel.
pudiera (poder), would be able.
puede (no se —), it is impossible.
punte, *m.* deck; — **de proa**, forward deck.
puerta (*f.*) **corrediza**, sliding door.
Puerta del Sol, a street of Madrid.
puerto, *m.* port, harbor.
pues, well, since, therefore.
puesta, *f.* setting.
puesto (poner, 201), put, dressed up; — **que**, since, as.
puesto, *m.* position.

pulgada, *f.* inch.
pulgas (tener malas —), to have bad fleas, *i.e.* to be irritable.
pulido, -a, polished.
pulmón, *m.* lung.
puntal, *f.* depth of hold.
punto, *m.* point.
puñal, *m.* dagger.
puñalada, *f.* stab, thrust.
puño, *m.* fist, cuff; **mi** — **y letra**, my hand (*and writing*).
puro, *m.* cigar.
puse (poner, 201), I sent.
puso (se) (poner, 201), advanced.

Q

q. e. g. e., **que** en gloria esté.
que, who, which, that, how, than, for, because; **que sí**, of course; **que no**, not, of course not; **á que**, I'll bet; **en que**, **de que**, that; **el**, **la**, **los**, **las que**, who, whom, which.
¿qué? what? **¡qué!** what! what a!
¿qué tal? how, what kind? **¿qué mucho si?** what wonder when? **de qué**, a reason for it; **¿por qué?** why?
¿qué tal (sigue V.)? how are you?
quebrantar, to break, dominate.
quebrarse (164), to get broken.
quedar, to remain, be, be put, place oneself; — **impuesto**, to have noted; **queden VV. con dios**, remain with God (*said to persons who remain*); — **se**, to remain.
quehaceres, *m.* duties.
quejarse, to complain.
quemar, to burn.
quemarropa (so as to burn the clothes), *i.e.* at very close quarters.
querer (209), wish, love, mean.
querido, -a, dear; **querida**, my dear.

quiebra, *f.* failure, bankruptcy.
quien, who, whom, he who, him who.
quién, who, some; ¿quién? who?
quilate, *m.* carat.
quince, fifteen.
quinientos, -as, five hundred.
quinto, -a, fifth.
quisiera (*querer*, 209), would be willing.
quizá, *quizás*, perhaps.

R

rabo de gallo de ginebra, *m.* gin cocktail (*a jocular translation of the English, used in the West Indies*).
raíces (*raíz*), *f.* roots.
rápidamente, rapidly.
rapidez, *f.* rapidity.
rápido, -a, rapid; **lo más — y seguro**, the quickest and surest way.
rasgo, *m.* feature, outline.
rata, *f.* rat.
rato, *m.* short time, while; **al poco —**, after a short time.
ratón, *m.* mouse.
rayado, rifled.
rayo, *m.* ray, thunderbolt.
razón, *f.* reason, right; **tener** (136) —, to be right.
real, royal.
real, *m.* real (*about five cents in Spain, and ten cents in the West Indies*).
realizar, to accomplish.
reanudar, to renew.
rebaja, *f.* diminution, rebate.
rebajarse, to be curtailed or rebated.
rebasar, to pass by.
reciamente, strongly.
recibir, to receive.
recibo, *m.* receipt, reception.
recien, recently.
recio (*lo más*), thickest.

reclamar, to reclaim.
recluta, *m.* recruit.
recodo, *m.* jutting angle.
recoger, to pick up.
reconocimiento, *m.* gratitude.
reconózcame (*reconocer*, 143, a), consider me.
recordar (167), to remember.
rectificar, to rectify, correct; —**se**, to be rectified.
recubierto, -a, covered, jacketed.
recuerdo, *m.* remembrance.
rechazar, to hurl back.
redituar, to yield.
redondo, -a, round.
reducir (207), to reduce.
reducto, *m.* redoubt.
reembarco, *m.* reëmbarkation.
reembolsarse, to reimburse oneself.
referencia, *f.* reference.
referir (174), to relate, tell.
referirse (174), to refer.
refinado, -a, refined.
reflejar, to reflect.
reformular, to make over.
refrán, *m.* proverb.
refrenar, to curb.
regalar, to regale, tickle.
regalo, *m.* present.
regatear, to chaffer, haggle.
regeneración, *f.* regeneration.
regenerar, to regenerate.
regimiento, *m.* regiment.
región, *f.* region, country.
regocijado, -a, rejoiced.
regocijar, to rejoice.
regocijo, *m.* rejoicing.
regresar, to return.
regreso, *m.* return.
rehabilitar, to rehabilitate.
rehacerse (197), to reform.
rehusar, to refuse.

- Reina**, queen.
reinecito, *m.* little kingdom.
reino, *m.* sway, kingdom.
reír (182, *a*), to laugh; **al reír**, when (they) laugh; **reírse**, to laugh;
 — **en su capote**, to laugh in one's sleeve.
reiterar, to repeat.
relación, *f.* relation.
relatar, to relate.
religión, *f.* religion.
reloj, *m.* watch.
remedio, *m.* remedy.
remesa, *f.* remittance.
remitir, to remit, send.
rendirse (181), to surrender.
renombre, *m.* repute.
renunciar, to renounce.
reñir (143, *c*, and 181), to scold, quarrel.
reparar en, to perceive.
repartido, *-a*, distributed, scattered.
repetir, **repetirse** (181), to repeat.
reprender, to scold.
representarse, to be represented.
república, *f.* republic.
repuesto (**reponerse**, 201), recovered.
repuesto, *m.* supply, magazine; **repuestos**, extra stores.
repugnante, disgusting.
requiriendo (**requerir**, 174), holding in readiness, being on guard with.
resbalar, to slip.
reserva, *f.* reserve.
resfriado, *m.* cold.
residente, residing.
resistencia, *f.* resistance.
resolver (171), to settle.
resonar (167), to resound.
resoplido, *m.* gasp.
resorte, *m.* spring.
respecto, *m.* respect.
respecto á, in regard to.
respetar, to respect.
respiración, *f.* respiration, breathing.
respirar, to breathe.
resplandeciente, beaming.
responder, reply, answer.
respuesta, *f.* answer.
restablecerse (143, *a*), to be re-established.
restante, remaining.
restar, to remain.
restaurant, *m.* restaurant.
resto, *m.* rest, remainder.
resultado, *m.* result.
resultando, the result being.
resultar, to turn out.
resumen (*en*), to sum up.
retaguardia, *f.* rear guard.
retirarse, to retire.
retórico, *-a*, rhetorical.
reumatismo, *m.* rheumatism.
reunión, *f.* gathering.
reunir, to get together; — **se**, to meet, assemble, number.
reventar (164), to burst.
revestir (181), to take on.
revólver, *m.* revolver.
rey, *m.* king.
rezar, to pray.
rico, *-a*, rich; **un** —, a rich man.
ridículo (**lo más**), most ridiculous kind.
ríen (**reír**, 182, *a*) **á carcajadas**, laugh uproariously.
riesgo, *m.* risk.
rifle, *m.* rifle.
rigor, *m.* rigor.
río, *m.* river.
rió (**reír**, 182, *a*), laughed.
riqueza, *f.* richness, riches.
risas, *f.* laughter.
robar, to deprive, steal.

rociar, to sprinkle.
rodear, to surround.
rollo, *m.* roll.
romería, *f.* picnic, pilgrimage.
romper, to break, open.
ropa, *f.* clothes; — **hecha**, ready-made clothing.
rosal, *m.* rosebush.
rostro, *m.* face.
Rousseau (J. J.), French philosopher.
rubí, *m.* ruby.
ruborizarse, to blush.
ruego, *m.* importunity.
ruido, *m.* noise.
ruidoso, -a, noisy.
ruin, vile.
ruina, *f.* ruin.
ruiseñor, *m.* nightingale.
rumbo, *m.* course.
rumor, *m.* rumor.
ruso, -a, Russian.

S

sábado, *m.* Saturday.
saber (209), to know, know how; **á** —, namely; — **se**, to be known.
sabido, -a, well known; **por** —, of course.
sabiduría, *f.* wisdom.
sabio, -a, wise.
sabio, *m.* wise man.
sacar, to get, take out.
saco, *m.* sack.
sacrificar, to sacrifice.
Safo, Sappho, a Greek poetess.
sala, *f.* hall, parlor.
salario, *m.* salary.
saldo, *m.* balance.
salgas (salir, 199), thou wilt turn out.
salida, *f.* going out, sortie, exit, rising, result.
salir (199), to go, come, start out, to resemble, turn out; — **con la suya**, to have one's own way.
saltar, to jump over, spring.
salud, *f.* health.
saludable, healthy.
saludar, to salute, give regards; — **se**, to salute each other.
salvaje, *m.* savage.
salvaje, wild.
salvamente, *m.* saving, rescue.
salvar, to save; — **se**, to be saved.
salvatoje, *m.* rescue, salvage.
sangre, *f.* blood.
sano, -a, healthy.
santo, *m.* saint.
santo, -a, holy, saintly, sacred; **que santa gloria haya**, may he, she, be in glory.
santidad, *f.* sacredness.
sarampión, *m.* measles.
sardina, *f.* sardine.
satírico, -a, satirical.
satírico, *m.* satirist.
satisfacción, *f.* satisfaction.
satisfecho, -a, satisfied.
sé (saber, 209), I know.
se, to him, her, you, himself, herself, itself, yourself, themselves.
sea (ser, 136), be you (*imp.*); *pres. subj.* be, may be, will be; **sea lo que fuere**, be it whatever it may be.
secar, to dry.
sección, *f.* department.
seco (á), stranded ("dead broke").
secreto, *m.* secret.
secundario, -a, secondary.
seda, *f.* silk.
sedientas, *f.* thirst, desires.
seguida (en), immediately, shortly after.
seguir (143, 10, and 181), to follow, continue, go on; to be (of health).

- según**, *as*, according as, to.
segundo, -a, second.
segundo, *m.* executive officer, second.
seguramente, surely.
seguridad, *f.* assurance.
seguro (*m.*) de incendio, fire insurance;
 — marítimo, marine insurance.
seguro, -a, faithful, sure; **de** —, cer-
 tainly; **sobre seguro**, on safe ground.
seis, six.
seiscientos, -as, six hundred.
sellar, to seal.
sello, *m.* seal.
semana, *f.* week.
semblante, *m.* face, look.
sembrar, to sow, strew.
semejante, such.
senador, *m.* senator.
sencillo, -a, simple.
seno, *m.* bosom, midst.
sentarse, to sit down, take a seat.
sentido, *m.* sense, feeling.
sentimiento, *m.* sorrow, sentiment.
sentir (174), to feel, regret, be sorry
 for.
señal, *f.* signal, sign.
señalar, to indicate.
señor, *m.* sir, Mr., gentleman, lord.
señora, *f.* Mrs., ma'am, lady, wife.
señorita, *f.* Miss, young lady.
señorito, *m.* (young) gentleman.
sepa (saber, 209), I, he, may know,
 knows (*pres. subj.*).
separar, to separate.
se(p)tiembre, September.
sepultarse, to bury oneself.
ser, *m.* being.
ser (136), to be; **¿a no** —, were it
 not.
serenidad, *f.* serenity.
serio, -a, serious.
servicio, *m.* service.
servido, -a, on the table.
servidor, *m.* servant.
servir (181), to serve, thank; — **se**,
 to be pleased, please, be served.
sesenta, sixty.
setecientos, -as, seven hundred.
setenta, seventy.
si, if, whether; — **bien**, although;
 de —, whether; **pero** —, why.
sí, yes, that's so; — **que**, of course;
 eso —, yes, of course; **pero sí**,
 but it does.
sí (**sí mismo**, -a, or **sí propio**, -a),
 himself, herself, itself, oneself, your-
 self, themselves.
sido (ser, 136), been.
siempre, ever, always; **de** —, usual;
 — **que**, whenever, provided that.
siendo (ser, 136), being.
sienta (se) (sentarse, 164), takes
 his, her seat; **siéntense** **VV.**, be
 (you) seated.
siete, seven.
siglo, *m.* century.
significar, to mean.
siguiente, following.
silencio, *m.* silence.
silla, *f.* chair.
símbolo, *m.* symbol.
simpático, -a, generous, sympathetic.
sin, without.
sinfonía, *f.* symphony.
singular, *m.* singular number.
sinnúmero, *m.* great number.
sino, but; **sino que**, but that; **no . . .**
 sino, but, only.
síntoma, *m.* symptom.
siquiera (**ni** —), not even.
situación, *f.* situation, condition, cir-
 cumstance; **en tal** —, at this
 critical juncture.
situado, -a, situated.

- situar**, to place.
SO. = Sudoeste, Southwest.
soberano, -a, sovereign, supreme.
soberbia, *f.* pride.
soberbio, -a, superb.
sobre, upon, on, above, over, in, about,
 towards, under.
sobre, *m.* envelope.
sobrehumano, -a, superhuman.
sobretudo, *m.* overcoat.
sobretudo, especially.
sobrina, *f.* niece.
sobrino, *m.* nephew.
social, social.
sociedad, *f.* society, company.
Sócrates, a noted Greek philosopher.
sol, *m.* sun.
solamente, only.
solas (á —), alone.
soldado, *m.* soldier.
soledad, *f.* solitude.
solemnizar, to solemnize.
sólido, -a, solid.
sólo, solely, only; — **que**, only.
solo, -a, only, alone, one.
soltar (167), to let loose; — **la**
 perra, to waste one's fortune; —
 la carcajada, to burst out laughing.
solterona, *f.* old maid.
solución, *f.* solution.
sollado de proa, *m.* forward hold.
sombrero, *m.* hat.
sombrilla, *f.* parasol.
somos (ser, 136), we are.
sonar (167), to sound, ring.
sonreír (182), to smile.
soplar, to blow.
sordo, -a, deaf.
sorprender, to surprise.
sorteo, *m.* drawing.
sortija, *f.* (finger) ring.
sostener (136), to sustain.
soy (ser, 136), I am.
su, *sus*, his, her, its, their, your.
suavizar, to lighten.
subido, -a, high.
subir, to rise, ascend; to bring, get
 up; to amount.
subirse, *m.* the rising.
súbito, -a, sudden.
sublime, sublime.
subordinado, -a, subordinate.
subordinado, *m.* subordinate.
subyugar, to subjugate, dominate.
suceder, to happen; — **se**, to follow
 each other.
sucesivamente, successively.
suceso, *m.* event, incident.
sucio, -a, dirty.
sucursal, *m.* branch office.
sud-americano, -a, South American.
suelo, *m.* ground, soil, floor.
suerte, *f.* luck, lot, fate.
suficiente, sufficient.
sufrir, to suffer, bear.
sugerir (174), to suggest.
sujeto, *m.* subject.
sumamente, highly.
superficie, *f.* surface.
superior, *m.* superior.
superior, upper, superior, greater.
superviviente, survivor.
suplicar, to beg.
supremo, -a, supreme.
supreso, -a, suppressed.
suprimir, to suppress.
supuesto (por), of course.
Sur, *m.* South.
surgir, to arise.
surtido, *m.* assortment.
surtido, -a, assorted.
sustancioso, -a, substantial.
suyo, -a, his, hers, its, theirs, yours; **el**,
 la, **los**, **las** —, his, hers, its, etc.

T

- tabaco**, *m.* tobacco, cigar.
taburete, *m.* stool.
tacita, *f.* cup.
taco, *m.* cue.
tal, such a, such; — **cual**, so so;
 — **para cual**, tit for tat, even; —
 vez, perhaps.
talla, *f.* form, figure.
taller, *m.* (work) shop.
también, also.
tambor, *m.* drum.
tampoco, neither, either; **ni** —, nor
 — either.
tan, so, as, such a.
tantito, *m.* little bit.
tanto, such, so much; **algún** —,
 somewhat; **en** — **que**, in so far
 as; **entre** —, in the meantime;
 por —, therefore.
tanto, -a, so much, so many; —
 más . . . cuanto más, the more . . .
 the more.
tapicería, *f.* tapestry.
tapón, *m.* stopper.
tardar, to be long, tarry; **á más** —,
 at latest.
tarde, late.
tarde, *f.* afternoon; **buenas tardes**,
 good afternoon (*greeting*).
tarjeta, *f.* card.
taza, *f.* cup.
te, thee, to thee.
te, *m.* tea.
teatro, *m.* theater.
tecla, *f.* key (*of piano*).
techo, *m.* roof.
tela, *f.* cloth, fabric.
telefonar, to telephone.
teléfono, *m.* telephone.
telegrafía policiaca, *f.* burglar alarm.
telégrafo, *m.* telegraph.
- telegrama**, *m.* telegram.
telón, *m.* curtain.
temer, to fear.
temeroso, -a, fearing.
temperatura, *f.* temperature.
tempestad, *f.* tempest.
templado, tempered, stout.
temprano, early.
tendencia, *f.* tendency.
tendrá que (**tener**, 136), will have to.
tendría (**tener**, 136), would have.
tenedor, *m.* fork, holder.
tener (136), to have; **tenerse**, to be
 had, held.
tenga (**tener**, 136), have you (*imp.*);
 pres. subj., may have, has.
tengo (**tener**, 136), I have.
teniente, **teniente de navío**, *m.* lieu-
 tenant.
tentar (164), tempt.
tercero, -a (**tercer**), third; **el tercero**,
 third officer.
terminante, conclusive.
terminar, to end, terminate.
término, *m.* end.
ternura, *f.* tenderness.
Terpsícore, Terpsichore (*the muse of*
 choral song and dance).
terremoto, *m.* earthquake.
terreno, *m.* ground, headway, field,
 sphere.
terrible, terrible.
tertulia, *f.* party, entertainment.
Tesoro, *m.* treasury, exchequer.
tí, thee.
tía, *f.* aunt.
tiempo, *m.* time.
tienda, *f.* tent, shop.
tierra, *f.* land, earth; **á** —, ashore.
tieso, -a, stiff.
tijerear, to gossip.
timbre, *m.* bell.

- tío, m.** uncle.
tipo, m. fellow.
tirar, to throw, shoot, fire, hurl, draw, incline to; — **se**, to jump.
tiro, m. fire, shot, draft.
toalla, f. towel.
tocar, to play (*music*), fall to one's lot (*as a prize in the lottery*).
todavía, yet.
todo, -a, all, every, only, whole; del —, at all; **con** —, and yet; — **el mundo**, everybody.
Todopoderoso, Almighty.
toldilla, f. roundhouse, poop.
tomar, to take, capture, put on; — **se**, to be taken.
tonelada, f. ton.
tono, m. tone.
tontería, f. nonsense.
tonto, m. fool.
tonto, -a, foolish.
toque, m. signal, call.
tormenta, f. storm, tempest.
torno (en), around; en — **suyo**, around him, them.
toro, m. bull.
torpedero, m. torpedo boat.
torpedo, m. torpedo.
torre, f. tower, turret.
torrente, m. torrent.
tos, f. cough.
Toto, dog's name.
trabajador, m. laborer.
trabajar, to act, work.
trabajo, m. work, labor.
traer (193), to bring, bring back, carry.
tragar, to swallow.
tragedia, f. tragedy.
trago (de un —), at one draught.
traiga (traer, 193), bring you (imp); *pres. subj.*, may bring back.
traje, m. costume.
trancazo, m. gripe.
tranquilidad, f. tranquillity, quiet.
tranquilo, tranquil, at ease, clear.
transcurrido, -a, passed.
transmitir, to transmit.
transparente, m. cathedral (*stained*) glass.
tranvía, m. tramway.
trapo, m. rag, "thing."
trasatlántico, -a, transatlantic.
trasbordar, to transfer.
tratamiento, m. treatment.
tratar, to try, treat; **tratarse, to** make an effort.
trece, thirteen.
treinta, thirty.
tren, m. train.
tres, three.
tributo, m. tribute, tax.
trinchar, to carve.
trinchera, f. trench, intrenchment.
tripulación, f. crew.
triscar, to frisk.
triste, sad.
triumfal, triumphant.
triunfar, to triumph.
triunfo, m. triumph, success.
tronar (158), to thunder.
tronco, m. trunk.
tropa, f. troop.
tropical, tropical.
trueno, m. thunder, roar, thunder-bolt.
tú, thou.
tu, tus, thy.
tubo (m.) de vapor, steam pipe; — **lanza-torpedos, torpedo tube; —** **de la red de contra incendios, fire main (along the nettings).**
tumor, m. tumor.
turbar, to disturb.

turno (por tu —), in thy turn.
 tuve, tuvo (tener, 136), I had, he had.
 tuviera (tener, 136), had, should have, might have had.
 • tuviere (tener, 136), I shall have.

U

últimamente, finally.
 último, -a, last, latest; por —, finally.
 ultraje, *m.* outrage.
 un, one, a, an; un . . . que otro, some . . . or other.
 único, -a, only, unique.
 unir, to join.
 universal, universal.
 universidad, *f.* university.
 uno, -a, one, a; el uno, the one; los unos, the ones; unos, -as, unos cuantos, a few, some; los unos los otros, each other.
 uña, *f.* nail.
 usar de, to use.
 uso, *m.* use.
 usted, -es, you.
 útil, useful, fit for service.
 utilidad, *f.* usefulness.
 utilizar, to utilize.

V

va (ir, 214), he, she goes, you go; se va, goes away; que se va teniendo, which people continue to have; vas, thou art going; vais, you will (go).
 vaciar, to empty.
 vacilar, to hesitate.
 vacío, -a, empty.
 valer (200), to be worth; ¡válgame Dios! laws-a-mercy!
 valiente, *m.* brave fellow.

valiente, valiant.
 valientemente, valiantly.
 valor, *m.* value, due value; valores, stocks and bonds; — del estado, government bonds.
 vamos (ir, 214), let us go; ¡vamos! come now!
 van (ir, 214), (they) are going.
 vanguardia, *f.* vanguard.
 vanidad, *f.* vanity.
 vapor, *m.* steam, steamer.
 varar, to run aground.
 vario, -a, various.
 vaselina, *f.* vaseline.
 vaya (ir, 214), go you (*imp.*); vaya V. con Dios, go with God, joy go with you (*to persons taking leave*); *pres. subj.*, vaya, may go; que le — bien, may you be well.
 veces (vez), *f.* times; á —, at times.
 vecindario, *m.* neighborhood.
 vecino, *m.* neighbor.
 vecino, -a, next, neighboring.
 V. E. (vuestra Excelencia), your Excellency.
 vehemente, vehement.
 veinte, twenty.
 veintena, *f.* some twenty.
 veinticinco, twenty-five.
 veintinueve, twenty-nine.
 veintiocho, twenty-eight.
 veintitrés, twenty-three.
 vela, *f.* candle.
 velocidad, *f.* speed.
 ven (venir, 202), come (*imp. second sing.*).
 vena, *f.* vein.
 vencedor, *m.* conqueror.
 vencer, to fall due.
 vencimiento, *m.* maturity.
 vender, to sell; venderse, to be sold.
 vendrá (venir, 202), will come.

- veneno**, *m.* poison, bane.
venerarse, to be venerated.
venga (**venir**, 202), come you (*imp.*);
pres. subj., may come along; **venga**
lo que viniere, come what may
 come.
venir (202), to come, fit, (*with a de-*
pendent gerund), to have been.
venta, *f.* sale; **estar de —**, to be
 for sale.
veranear, to summer.
verano, *m.* summer.
verdad, *f.* truth, true; ¿**verdad?** is it
 not so?
verdaderamente, truly.
verdadero, -a, true, real.
vergonzoso, -a, shameful.
vergüenza, *f.* shame.
verificar, to verify.
verificarse, to take place.
ventana, *f.* opening, window.
ventura, *f.* fortune, luck.
ver (205), to see; —**se**, to be seen.
vertical, vertical (*line*).
vértigo, *m.* giddiness.
vestido, -a, clothed.
vestido, *m.* dress.
vestir (181), to clothe, dress; —**se**,
 to dress oneself, be dressed.
vez, *f.* time; **tal —**, perhaps; **en**
—, instead; **una — que**, when
 once; **á la — que**, while; **de una**
—, right away; **de — en cu-**
ando, from time to time.
viaje, *m.* trip, voyage.
viajar, to travel.
viandas, *f.* food, viands.
vicio, *m.* vice.
victoria, *f.* victory.
vida, *f.* life.
viejo, -a, old.
viendo (**ver**, 205), seeing.
- viene** (**venir**, 202), comes, fits.
viento, *m.* wind.
viernes, *m.* Friday.
viniere (**venir**, 202), may come.
vino (**se**), some one came (**venir**,
 202).
vino, *m.* **de pasto**, table wine.
vió (**ver**, 205), saw.
violar, to violate.
violencia, *f.* violence.
violento, -a, violent.
violín, *m.* violin.
Virgen, *f.* Virgin (*image*).
virtud, *f.* virtue.
visible, visible.
visión, *f.* vision, sight.
visita, *f.* visit, visitor.
vislumbrarse, to appear, promise.
vista, *f.* view, sight; **hasta la —**,
 good-by until I see you again.
visto, -a, considering; **por lo visto**,
 from what we have seen; **visto que**,
 seeing that.
vistosamente, beautifully.
viva (**vivir**), long live.
vivas, *m.* hurrahs.
víveres, *m.* provisions, victuals.
vivísimo, -a, very lively.
vivo, -a, lively, very lively.
voces (**voz**), *f.* voices.
volar (167), to fly, blow up.
volcar (143, 1, and 167), to upset,
 hurl.
voluntarioso, -a, stubborn.
voluptuosidad, *f.* voluptuousness.
volver (171), to return; — **á** (*see*
 227); —**se**, to turn.
vomitarse, to belch forth.
voracidad, *f.* voracity.
voy (**ir**, 214), I go; **me —**, I am
 going; **ya —**, I am coming right
 away.

voz, *f.* voice.

vuelta (**estar de —**), to return.

vuelto á (**volver**, 171), *see* 227.

vulgar, common.

Y

y, and.

ya, already, now; ¡**ya**! now!

yate, *m.* yacht.

yéndose (**irse**, 214), going away.

yerba (**mala**), *f.* weed.

yo, I, me.

Z

zapatón, *m.* large shoe.

zumbar, to buzz, whiz.

INDEX

The references are to the sections.

- Á**, prep. 243.
 abbreviations, 333.
 accentuation, 6-9, *b*.
 accusative, personal, 283-*f*; simple, 284-285.
 adjectives, agreement, 24; positive, 24, *a*, *b*, *c*; qualifying suffixes, 26; comparison, 27-31; irreg. comparisons, 32; position, 34-37; syntax, 286-293; complements of, 293.
 adjectives, indefinite, 116-134.
 adverbial phrases, 235, *a*.
 adverbs, 230; formation of, 231-235; of place, 236, *a*; of time, 236, *b*; of quantity and degree, 236, *c*; of manner, 236, *d*; of affirmation and negation, 236, *e*; comparison, 238.
 ajeno, 117.
 algo, 109.
 alguien, 108.
 alguno, 118.
 alguno que otro, 126, *a*.
 alphabet, vowels, 1; consonants, 2.
 ambos, 119.
 andar, as auxiliary, 148; meaning, 188, Note.
 ante, antes de, 248.
 apocopation, 25.
 article, definite, 11; syntax, 275-277; omission of, 276-*f*.
 article, indefinite, 12; syntax, 278-*f*.
 atrás de, 264.
 augmentatives, 22.
 Bajo, debajo de, 249.
 become, how to translate, 226.
 Caballero, 332, *e*.
 caber, idioms with, 204.
 cada, 120; cada uno, cada cual, 110.
 caer, idioms with, 192.
 capitals, 10, *a*.
 cierto, 121.
 collectives, 42.
 como, 28, 242, *a*.
 con, 251.
 conditional sentences, 319.
 conditional, 309; cond. perfect, 310.
 conjunctions, 267-269.
 conjunctive phrases, 268-269.
 conmigo, contigo, consigo, 58.
 conocer, uses of, 211, *b*.
 contra, 252.
 cosa, 109.
 cuál, 92 Note, 103.
 cualquiera, 122.
 cuán, 105, 242.
 cuanto, 28, *a*, 96, 123, 242.
 cuánto, 105.
 cuyo, 95.
 Dar, idioms with, 189.
 dative, 282.
 de, its uses, 27, Note, 239, 245; *de á*, 250.
 deber, uses of, 213.
 delante de, 248.
 demás, 25, *e*, 127, *a*, and Note.
 demonstratives, 78-89.
 desde, 253.
 después de, 264.
 detrás de, 264.
 dialectic peculiarities, 3-4.
 dimension, 292.

diminutives, 23.

don, *doña*, 332, *f*.

donde, 98.

durante, 254.

É, when used for *y*, 267, *g*.

echar, idioms with, 228.

el, la, as demonstratives, 88.

ello, 55.

el que, el cual, 94.

empero, 267, *a*.

en, its uses, 244.

encima de, 263.

en pos de, 264.

entre, 255.

epistolary formalities, 334-337.

estar, conjugation, 136; uses, 139-140.

excepto, 256.

exclamatory sentences, 320.

Family names, 332, *f*.

forms of address, 332.

fractions, 41.

fulano, 112.

Gender, 18-19, *d*.

genitive, 281.

gerund, 329.

Haber, conjugation, 136; uses, 137.

hacer, idioms with, 197.

hacia, 257.

hasta, 258.

Imperative, 311.

indicative, present, 301; imperfect, 302-*i*;

preterit, 303; perfect, 304; pluperfect,

305; past anterior, 306; future, 307;

future perfect, 308.

infinitive, 321-327; preceded by a prepo-

sition, 322; in questions, 323, *a*, *b*; to

form temporal clauses, 323, *c*; with

de and *d*, to form conditional clauses,

323, *d*; as imperative, 323, *e*; depend-

ent, preceded by *de*, 324-325, by *d*,

324, *b*, and 326; depend. without prep-

osition, 324, *c*, 327.

interjections, 270-274.

ir, as auxiliary, 148; meaning, 188, Note;

idioms with, 215.

Juntamente con, 251.

Letters, how to begin, 335; how to close,

336; how to address, 337.

lo (neuter), uses of, 55, 89, and 277.

lord, *milord*, 15, *c*.

los, las, lo demás, 127, *a*.

Mas, 267, *a*.

mediante, 259.

mengano, 112.

menos (prep.), 256.

mismo, 124.

mucho, 125.

multiplicatives, 43.

muy, uses, 236, *c*, Note.

Nada, 111-*b*.

nadie, 113.

negatives, position of, 237.

ninguno, 126.

no obstante, 260.

nominative, 280.

nos, 46.

nouns, declension, 13; number, 14-15, *e*;

compound, 16; gender, 18-19, *d*; for-

mation of feminine, 20; syntax, 279-

285.

numerals, 38; cardinals, uses of, 39;

ordinals, uses of, 40.

Ó, 267, *c*, 297, *a*.

order of words, 294.

otro, 127; otro tanto, 127, *b*.

own, how translated, 66.

Para, its uses, 247; before dependent

infinitive, 247, *a* and *b*; para con, 257.

participle, present, 328; past, 330-331, *c*.

participles, past, irregular, 222-225.

passive voice, 146-147.

pero, 267, *a*.

- poco**, 128.
poder, conjugation, 209; uses, 210.
poner, idioms with, 201.
por, its uses, 246; before dependent infinitive, 246, *e*.
 possession, how expressed, 71-72.
 possessive adjectives, 63-72.
 prepositional phrases, 266.
 pronouns, personal, 44-58; position of, 59-62; possessive, 73-77; demonstrative, 78-89; relative, 90-98; interrogative, 99-106; indefinite, 56, 107-115; syntax, 282, 283, *c*, *d*.
 pronunciation, 1-9.
 proper names, plural of, 15, *b*, and Note.
propio, 53, 66.
 punctuation, 10.

Qué, 101; **qué tal**, 104; **qué tanto**, 106.
que, relative, 91; conjunctions, **que**, **á que**, **de que**, 267, *d-f*; **que** with subjunctive to express an alternative, 314; in comparisons, 27-Note.
quedar, as auxiliary, 148.
querer, conjugation, 209; uses, 212.
quien, uses of, 92-93.
quién, 92, 4th, 100, 102.
quienquiera, 114.

Saber, conjugation, 209; uses, 211.
salir, idioms with, 199.
salvo, 256.
según, 261.
sendos, 129.
señor, 332, *c-h*.
señora, 332, *g-i* and *m*.
señorita, 332, *c*, *d*, and *h*.
señorito, 332, *h*.
ser, conjugation, 136; uses, 139.
si, 267, *h*.
sí, 236, *e*.
sin, 262.
sino, 267, *b*.

solo, 249.
sobre, 263.
solo, único, 134.
 subjunctive, present, 312-316; after a relative, 315; after conjunctions, 316; future and future perfect, 317; other tenses, 318.
 syllabication, 5.
 syntax, 275-331.

Tal, 130-*c*; **tal . . . cual**, 96.
tamaño, 131.
tan, 27, *d*, 242.
tanto, 28, 96, 242.
tener, conjugation, 136; uses, 138; idioms with, 203.
todo, 132-*a*; **todo cuanto**, 123.
tras (de), 264.
tú, 47.

Ú, when used for *ó*, 267, *c*.
uno, 115; **uno y otro**, 133.
usted, 50.

Valer, idioms with, 200.
venir, idioms with, 140, *a*, and 202.
ver, idioms with, 206.
 verbs, auxiliary, 136; regular, 141; orthographic changes, 143; formation of tenses, 144-145; reflexive, 149-151 and 153-157; reciprocal, 152; impersonal, 158-160; irregular, 162-229; defective, 217; syntax, 204-331; agreement, 295-300.
volver á, 227; other idioms with, 227.
vos, 48.
vosotros, 49.

Y, 267 and *g*.
yo, 45.

Z final becomes *c*, 15, *a*, 31, *b*.
zutano, 112.



- poco**, 128.
poder, conjugation, 209; uses, 210.
poner, idioms with, 201.
por, its uses, 246; before dependent infinitive, 246, *c*.
 possession, how expressed, 71-72.
 possessive adjectives, 63-72.
 prepositional phrases, 266.
 pronouns, personal, 44-58; position of, 59-62; possessive, 73-77; demonstrative, 78-89; relative, 90-98; interrogative, 99-106; indefinite, 56, 107-115; syntax, 282, 283, *c*, *d*.
 pronunciation, 1-9.
 proper names, plural of, 15, *b*, and Note.
propio, 53, 66.
 punctuation, 10.

Qué, 101; **qué tal**, 104; **qué tanto**, 106.
que, relative, 91; conjunctions, **que**, **á que**, **de que**, 267, *d-f*; **que** with subjunctive to express an alternative, 314; in comparisons, 27-Note.
quedar, as auxiliary, 148.
querer, conjugation, 209; uses, 212.
quien, uses of, 92-93.
quién, 92, 4th, 100, 102.
quienquiera, 114.

Saber, conjugation, 209; uses, 211.
salir, idioms with, 199.
salvo, 256.
según, 261.
sendos, 129.
señor, 332, *c-h*.
señora, 332, *g-i* and *m*.
señorita, 332, *c*, *d*, and *h*.
señorito, 332, *h*.
ser, conjugation, 136; uses, 139.
si, 267, *h*.
sí, 236, *c*.
sin, 262.
aino, 267, *b*.

so, 249.
sobre, 263.
solo, **único**, 134.
 subjunctive, present, 312-316; after a relative, 315; after conjunctions, 316; future and future perfect, 317; other tenses, 318.
 syllabication, 5.
 syntax, 275-331.

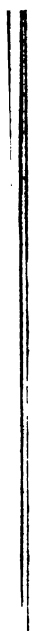
Tal, 130-*c*; **tal . . . cual**, 96.
tamaño, 131.
tan, 27, *d*, 242.
tanto, 28, 96, 242.
tener, conjugation, 136; uses, 138; idioms with, 203.
todo, 132-*a*; **todo cuanto**, 123.
tras (de), 264.
tú, 47.

Ú, when used for **ó**, 267, *c*.
uno, 115; **uno y otro**, 133.
usted, 50.

Valer, idioms with, 200.
venir, idioms with, 140, *a*, and 202.
ver, idioms with, 206.
 verbs, auxiliary, 136; regular, 141; orthographic changes, 143; formation of tenses, 144-145; reflexive, 149-151 and 153-157; reciprocal, 152; impersonal, 158-160; irregular, 162-229; defective, 217; syntax, 294-331; agreement, 295-300.
volver á, 227; other idioms with, 227.
vos, 48.
vosotros, 49.

Y, 267 and *g*.
yo, 45.

Z final becomes *c*, 15, *a*, 31, *b*.
zutano, 112.





To avoid fine, this book should be returned on
or before the date last stamped below.

SON-9-40

--	--	--

11

100

LIBRARY SCHOOL OF EDUCATION, STANFORD

